

www.AllNovelworld.com

Thando:How I Fell Inlove With Lathi

INTRODUCTION♥

I'm Milisuthando Natasha Zulu😊. I'm 26 years and I'm a Doctor in Dr Christiano Barnard's Hospital residing in Johannesburg. My place of Origin is in Kwa-Zulu Natal. I'm single and I don't have friends since I've just started living & working in Johannesburg. I was transferred to work here.

About Family🌍👑

My father is Nkosenye Zulu 52 years, he's a lawyer at Zulu Attorneys and My Mother is Ndoniyamanzi Zulu 48 years - she's an Accountant . I have 4 siblings. 3 brothers

that are Lizwilezulu ,CEO of Zulu
Construction and Lizwilenkosi COO of Zulu
Constructions they are twins and 33 years
then another one Lomso
30years-Veterinarian. Then there's me And
my younger sister Uthandiwe Tinashe Zulu
22years,still in University doing Fashion.

My Description🐱

Bit chubby

Bit short🐱

Light complexion😊

Small waist and flat tummy♥

Big hips and butt👮

Kindhearted and bubbly😊

Daily new African novels download here

www.Allnovelworld.com

I N S E R T

O N E ♥

When I arrived here in Jo'burg, I booked my self in a hotel since I didn't have time to look for an apartment. So I woke up and stretched my self and made the bed after that I went to the bathroom to brush my teeth and shower. After I've done showing, I wore a tight fit plain dusty pink skirt that is above my knee, I matched it with a black silky blouse then took my puffy heels and wore them then ordered my self a fruit salad with apple juice. I ate then took my Mercedes A45 AMG keys then drove to the nearest salon to do nails and an 16inch weave.

I arrived, waited and did my nails and hairstyle then went to Panarottis Pizza to eat lunch. I arrived went to order then waited for my order. While waiting for it , I started looking around then my eyes met a group of guys in suits😊 they were flames😊. One of them looked in my direction and I quickly took my cellphone and looked at it, while at it, the waiter arrived with my order then ate and started searching for an apartment to stay at. I found it, went to check it, it was good and it was a 5room house - Lounge, Kitchen, Bathroom, a big guestroom and a huge main bedroom with a in-suite bathroom and closet. After I checked it , I drove back to the hotel, took my luggage, checked out and went at my apartment. Arrived and started packing my

clothes and went to order a meal to eat since I didn't buy grocery. So my order arrived ate, went to shower and slept.

Next morning I woke up feeling nervous and happy. So I did my hygiene process and wore a black pant with white blouse and matched it with a cheque black and white blazer and black block heel. Took my car keys and went to work. I arrived, parked my car and went straight to the receptionist.

Me: Sorry, I'm Miss Zulu, the new doctor from KZN Hospital. I was transferred here.

Receptionist: Oh Good morning I'm Nandi Dlamini the receptionist. Let me check Mr Mabutho the Hospitals manager and get back to you. (She made the call) okay come let me show you his office.

We took the lift and arrived at his office.
We knocked and a bold voice said" Come in".
I went in.

Me: Good morning Mr , I'm Miss Zulu.

Manager: Morning, I'm Mr Mabutho the
manager, you must be the new doctor.

Me : Yes I am Mr Mabutho.

Mr Mabutho: Pleased to meet you, okay let
me take you down the process.

He told me everything I needed to know and
called a staff meeting so that the staff must
know me.

I N S E R T

T W O ♥

After the staff meeting, Mr Mabutho said I should ask Nandi to show me my office so I went to her and said: Nandi Mr Mabutho says you'll show me my office.

Nandi: Oh okay, come let me show it to you, so how's Jo'burg since you're from KZN?

Me: No it's not bad, I don't know well because I've just arrived and I haven't got used to this place so...

Nandi: Give me your numbers and I'll show you Jo'burg.

Me: Oh okay here.

I gave her my numbers.

Nandi: Thank you darling! Here is your key, it's for the office.

I went inside and it was spacious and simple.

After viewing my office, I went at the cafeteria, ate then went to start doing my rounds. When I was done working, it was already 17:00 ,that's my knocking off time ,my working time is 08:00. I went to take off my work jacket and took my car keys and locked my office. I went to say goodbye to Nandi since she's friendly.

Me: Goodbye Nandi.

Nandi: Goodbye Natasha, oh where are you going now?

Me: Well I'm going to shop, uhm groceries.

Nandi: Okay, please give me a lift, I'm staying at Hillbrow so yeah.

Me: Oh okay come.

We went at the parking lot and drove out

while chatting and getting to know each other.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CONTINUATION 🐱

INSERT TWO ♥

Nandi: Do you have a boyfriend then, since you're so serious and intimidating not forgetting your quietness?

Me: (Giggling) Uhm nope, never got time to date , well my brothers made sure that I don't because they are soo overprotective and they didn't want me to leave home except going to town.

Nandi: Yho! So you're telling me that you've never dated? So practically you're a Virgin(Laughing) whoah! Hamba Mary

Me: So? What's wrong with that? (I say feeling proud)

Nandi: It's just that you're 26years
Natasha , 2-6 and you stil have your V-card!
You know I lost mine when I was 15 years!

Me: You're just forward and you love things
Nandi.(Rolling my eyes)

Nandi: Hey I should corrupt you ! No way! Do you want me to help you with the shopping?

Me: Yes I'd love to.

We went at Checkers, laughing and talking. I really enjoy her company, she's a happy soul.

Nandi: Oh my God😁 Look there🐱 Some

mother's though 😊they know how to make
Living God 😊! Oh my heaven!

I looked and I saw the guys that were in
suits yesterday at Panarottis Pizza.

Me: Oh these guys 😊I saw them yesterday.

Nandi: And? (She pulls a curious face)

Me: And nothing.

Nandi: You're so boring you know

Natasha 😊Angisazi nokuthi loluphi oluthando
lumiliswayo nje lana kuwe 😊

Me: 😊😊Oh my God Nana, you're so crazy!

Nandi: No! It's not funny Tasha , you should
just get laid nje! 😊

Me: Yho hey Nana, you're so extra!

Nandi: Hey let's go check these out we're

done with the grocery now.

NARRATED ✨

Nandi and Natasha went to another till to check out their groceries. While they were standing at the till, one of the guys in suits poked Natasha on her shoulder. She looked at the back and saw a God 😊

Guy: Sorry Lady, I'm Bulelani, may you please take these and check them out, I'm in hurry.

He was carrying a pack of Energize.

Natasha: Okay.

She took them, checked them out and gave him.

Guy: Thank you, I didn't catch your name, sorry 😊

Natasha: I don't remember my self throwing

it. 😊

Nandi helped Natasha carry the groceries and went to load it but since Bulelani was taken by Natasha, he followed her to her car and said-

Bulelani: Beauty, may I have your number please and your name 😊 (he said politely)

Natasha: Angifuni webhuti 😊

Bulelani: (Oh shit 😊 You sound so sexy when speaking IsiZulu) He checked her out and drooled. He cleared his voice and said-

Please Beauty 😊.

Natasha just left him there and drove off.

IN THE CAR ✨

Nandi: Wee Natasha! Uyahlanya yhini? Did you see that guy huh!? Oh God I would have

given him my number without hesitations. 🐱

Natasha: Well you're yourself and I am me 😊.

Natasha ended up dropping of Nandi in her house because it was late now. She drove home, started unpacking food and she took her Samsung Zero and called her father.

Natasha: Daddy! 😊

Nkosenye: Hello baby, you have abounded me now, I no longer have a daughter that loves me. 😞

Natasha: No Daddy 😊 I was just busy settling and it kinda slipped my mind to call you.

Sorry Daddy but I love you okay 😊.

Nkosenye: No don't worry baby don't worry, I'm just glad that you called me because

your brothers were going crazy here. They thought you were lost and your cellphone was stolen. (he chuckled)

Natasha:I'm sure that it's Bhut'Zulu who was worried, he treats Me like a fragile baby or an egg Daddy 😊

Nkosenye: Well baby(Zulu at the background)

Zulu: You're practically my daughter Tasha , you're my princess so I'll treat you like a baby and I'll punish you for not calling me. I'm telling you.(He said serious).

Natasha: Daddy Bhut'Zulu wants to punish me 😊(almost crying because she knows that Zulu isn't joking)

Nkosenye:Hey Wena Zulu, yekela ingane yam. I'm sorry baby ,don't cry okay , he'll do

nothing to you princess okay. I have to go, I love you 😊

Natasha: Pass my love to Mommy 😊 and tell her that I miss her 😊 Bye!

I N S E R T

T H R E E ♥

I woke up, made my bed, did my hygiene process then wore my lacy undergarments. I took out a white blouse, gold plitted skirt and my black block heel. Brushed my weave and did a little makeup, just the brows and puff then lip gloss. After the makeup, I descended the stairs and went to the kitchen to make breakfast. I ate cornflakes with berries and drank milk. Took my car keys then drove to work. It's been a week since

I've started working here and it's quite good. I've met this beautiful soul, Zenande. She's kindhearted and loving. We've been chatting a lot lately and I can say we are friends because when we're talking we always address each other by Sis and Friend. I arrived and went straight to my office because I'm a bit late because of traffic. The time is 08:23, I hope I wasn't noticed yet. I put my bag and take my working stuff. I make my way out and I bump into Nandi. I so hope she won't chat.

Nandi:" Hey Tasha, Mr Mabutho called you into his office " she says and pass. I haven't even signed in yet I'm going to the Manager's office.I make my way to his office, I knock. "Come in" his bold voice says. Mr Mabutho isn't old. He looks like he's 35years,

good looking and he has a good body with his biceps popping off his blazer. I make my way in and he's not alone.

NARRATED ❁

Natasha: Mr Mabutho, you've called me.

Mr Mabutho shifts his focus to Natasha and the gentleman he was talking to also looked at Natasha. He was amazed by the soft voice that called Mr Mabutho, he just stared her, amazed by her beauty and simplicity.

Mr Mabutho: " Miss Zulu, you've arrived late today. I've been monitoring you and since you've been here, you did an amazing job but I'm bit disappointed today because you're late. I should be giving you a written warning about that because one of your clients complained about not being given care. I'm

waiting for your reason"

Natasha was so scared and nervous, you could tell by her expression that she hopes to not be fired.

Natasha: "I'm sorry about my behavior. I was caught up in the traffic, that's why I'm late. I know that is not a valid reason because I should have woken up early. I'll apologize to my client sorry." she said nervous and scared of Mr Mabutho's reply but she managed to stay a bit calm.

Mr Mabutho:"You're speaking the truth Miss Zulu and that is not a valid reason. Apologize to the client and don't repeat your mistake. You can go, you didn't earn yourself a written warning. "He said dismissive.

Natasha beamed with joy knowing that she

doesn't have a written warning. And the gentleman with Mr Mabutho just still stared her, complimenting her beautiful smile with white teeth, his heart started beating fast as he continued staring at her. Natasha stood up and left. Mr Mabutho turned to look at his friend that was still looking at the door after Natasha left.

Mr Mabutho: " Hey stop staring at the door bro, she left. 😁 I can say you like her, by the look you've just given her 😊, Hey Nkosi! "

Nkosi: " Huh? What now Lwazi" He says confused by Lwazi's sudden smile.

Lwazi: " You're smitten Nkosi. It's been a while seeing you looking at a lady that way?"

Nkosi: " What way?" He says still confused.

Lwazi: " Oh cut the act Nkosi , you know you

like Natasha "

Nkosi:" You know what, I should go, I've got a meeting in the next 30minutes." He says standing up and avoiding Lwazi's statement. He grabs his BMW Coupe Car keys and iPhone 8 then leaves Lwazi laughing. He leaves Lwazi's office and goes down the exit door, while exiting he bumps into someone causing her to almost fall but luckily he caught her just in time.

INSERT

THREE

CONTINUATION 🐱 😊 ❤️

NATASHA 🐱 ❤️ 👑

After I went out of Mr Mabutho's office, I

went to sign in at the reception. I then started doing my rounds but I first apologized to my client and she understood. While doing my rounds, on my way to the reception to fetch another patient's file , I bumped into a hard chest that I almost fell because I was looking at the file that was in my hands. Luckily he caught me just in time. It was a dark chocolate man with broad shoulders and chest, almost huge biceps. He was tall with a nice faded cut, almost bushy eyebrows, black eyelashes with dark brown medium eyes. He had dark plum lips and...

Him:"Sorry that you almost fell" he says with the deepest voice I've ever heard and looking straight in my eyes with one of his hand on my waist and another on my back.

Me:"Thank you for catching me in time" I say pulling my self out of his hold."I'm sorry for bumping into you, I was just busy checking these files."

Him:"It's fine, I'm Nkosiyomuzi" he says sticking out his hand and still looking straight in my eyes. I look down and stick mine out too.

Me:"Mil.. I'm Natasha. "I saw Nandi coming towards our direction.

Nandi:" Here is the file you've asked for."she says giving me it. I try to take it but Nkosi's hold tightens on my hand and I quickly look at him and he's looking back at me. It's like he hasn't moved his eyes from me ever since we bumped into each other. He takes the file with his other hand that has

car keys and cellphone and says-"Thank You" with the most intimidating look and voice when he looks in the direction of Nandi. She quickly goes back to her work station

Nkosi:" Come here, let me fix this"he says letting go of my hand and hands me the file and his things then fixes my blouse. Oh my god- the buttons of my blouse were unclipped. My face flashes with an embarrassment. He clips them then takes his things and kisses my forehead then he leaves. I'm left with things running through my stomach and a heart that suddenly beats fast. Oh my god, what just happened here? I'm left dumbstruck and shy. I decide to continue doing my work.

It's now knocking off time and I unlock my

office. Sit down on my chair ,shut my eyes and breathe in and I inhale a strong manly Cologne. I quickly open my eyes thinking that there's a man in the room but I don't see one. I quickly take my things and lock the door then rush into my car and drove out to my apartment. I arrive, park my car in the garage then lock it and step into the kitchen and go straight in my bedroom. I take off my shoes, skirt and the blouse. While I take it off, it suddenly smells that manly strong cologne. It smells very good-amazing and my head thinks that it's Nkosi's Cologne! I inwardly smile and strip naked. I take a long bath ,lotion my body and take my gown and wear it. Odrder food, eat ,brush my teeth then go to sleep with my blouse under the pillow😊❤️

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT

FIVE❤️🔥

NARRATED🐱👑

Nkosi waited for Natasha to come back from the bathroom but she was taking time. He decided to settle the bill and go look for her. He took his car keys and cellphone then went to the ladies room. She found her looking like she has seen a ghost. He went to her and held her hand.

Nkosi: "Hey, you're okay? You look like you've just saw a ghost." Nkosi asked

worried. Natasha just hugged him shaking with fear and Nkosi was then alerted that something happened to her.

Nkosi: " Thando! You're okay?" He asks trying to break the hug but she held him tight, not wanting to let go of him. Nkosi picked her up in a bridal style and went to his car. He opened the backseat door and sat with her while holding her. He made a call.

Nkosi: " Come here fast... Don't come with your car use a uber. I'll send you the location.. Just hurry up!" He hung up and sent his call receiver the location. He tightly held Natasha and she broke down. She cried while shaking. Nkosi just held her and told her that it's okay while kissing her forehead. He took one of the red bulls he keeps in his car

and gave her but she refused to let go of Nkosi. She buried her face on Nkosi's chest causing his t-shirt to be wet with her tears.

NKOSIYOMUZI🔥👑

I don't know why Thando is crying, and what's worse is that she won't stop crying. I'm bad at comforting people and being affectionate. I just don't know what to do anymore. Lwazi also takes his time to arrive, I'm just fucked up. I see an uber driving to my direction, he steps out and rushes to open my door.

Lwazi:"Hey man what's up? Whoah whose crying? "

Me:" Just shut up and drive Lwazi. Here are the keys." I throw them and he catches them and drives off to my house.

Me:"Thando. Thando hey look at me." She raises her head and she has red puffy eyes with red cheeks and nose." Don't cry okay, you'll be fine." She tries to speak but I put my index finger on top of her wet lips."Don't talk okay, just try to sleep. You'll be fine." I put her head on chest and I sigh. This is not how I planned this evening. I hear her breathing slowly, I guess asleep. I kiss her forehead and wipe her tears.

Lazwi:"Champ what did you do now?" He asks looking me at the review mirror.

Me:" Hey don't look at me, you'll cause an accident. I didn't do anything man. I don't know why she's crying, I found her at the ladies room looking like she had saw a ghost. I held her and she broke down. " I sigh.

Lwazi:" Congratulations man. You've just found yourself a crybaby. I don't know how you'll manage because 😊😊😊you're bad at comforting champ." He's right, I don't know how I'll manage.

Me:"Heyi Lwazi, musukhukuma njalo ngesithandwa Sam Hawu!"

Lwazi: " Umqomile or you claimed her?" He says holding his laugh.

Me:"Lwazi! Hawu bafo! Ungibheka kanjani kanti? But anyways, I claimed her. She was already mine the day I saw her at your office."
"

Lazwi: " I knew it! You never ask for someone to date you. You just claim as if it's an insurance. "He bursts out laughing. I decide to keep quiet. We arrive at my house. He

parks near the garage." Phuma bafo, ngihamba nayo lemoto. Angithi thina singabanye siyatshelwa ukuthi kumele senzeni, asicengwa. Phuma kendoda." I open the door ,take my women out with her handbag. I open the frontdoor and go straight to my bedroom. I put her ontop the bed and take off her shoes and clothes until she's only left with her undergarments, and damn😏 I have a women here❤️. I take my oversized t-shirt and make her wear it. I go to the bathroom and wet a towel with warm water then go and wipe her face and lotion it. I tuck her in bed and I take off my clothes until I'm left with only an underwear. I hop into bed then pull her close to me. I kiss her forehead and whisper " I love You❤️" then dose off to sleep.

I wake up early in the morning and look besides me and I see my Queen. She looks so beautiful and raw in her sleep, she looks innocent, fragile and peaceful. I perk her pouty lips then slowly remove her soft legs from mine. I slide off the bed and go to the bathroom to take a shower. I finish and walk out naked. I walk to my closet. The things I love to do is to walk out of the shower naked and sleeping naked. I take out my black Adidas sweatpants with a Reebok t-shirt. I take my slides and Check time , it's 07:16. I walk into the bedroom and she's still sleeping. I decide to go and make breakfast, I walk out and step into the kitchen. I make English breakfast and by 07:29 it's ready. I put it in the tray and head upstairs. My lady is still asleep😊. I decide to run a hot bath for her

while waiting her to wake up. I head to the bedroom and she's still asleep, I decide to wake her up even though I hate it.

Me: "Thando, Thandolwam." I softly shake her. She moves a bit and turn's to the other side. I crawl into bed and face her, perk her soft lips and she slowly opens her eyes with lashes battling. She finally open her eyes and smiles faintly.

Thando: " Hi" she says with a raspy voice, it must be the crying. I open my headboard drawer and take Screpsils and give her. She smiles and takes it.

Me: ". How are you?" I ask worried.

Thando: " I'm fine, besides the painful headache." She says trying to sit up.

Me: "Here is the breakfast, eat then go and

take a bath. I'll give you the pills later."

Thando: " Thankyou." She says with a small smile then starts eating.

Me:"You'll take something to wear in the closet okay, I'm going to the kitchen. " I kiss her forehead then go.

N A T A S H A 🐱👑

After Bulelani left yesterday, I shaked with fear, I didn't know what to do and when Nkosi came then held my hand, I so wanted to brokedown right there but we were in public. He picked me up and went to the car and held me tightly. I just broke down right there and held him very tight, I felt safe and secured. I don't know when we arrived at his house but he woke me up with a kiss 😊. I swear butterflies were fighting in my

stomach. Huu😊 let me stop day dreaming.

I eat my breakfast and uhm😊it's mouthwatering. I slide off the bed and oh god- I'm wearing Nkosi t-shirt. Meaning he saw my body😞huu let me cool and I sort the bed then went to open the curtains. This room has a mainly touch. I take a bath, a long one, and it's so soothing. I close my eyes and sink into the bath. "Thando!Thando!"oh god, uNkosi. He opens the door.

Nkosi:" Sorry I didn't know you were still bathing. I thought you were lost around the house. I've put the pills next to the headboard. I'm going out for a hour. I'll be back." He goes out and closes the door. I guess I'm left all alone. I step out of the bath, drain water and took the hanging rope

and wear it. I walk into his closet. There are many sweatpants and pants. I guess he attends gym. I took his Navy boxer' pant and navy t-shirt. I take his bodylotion and lotion the wore his boxers and t-shirts. His t-shirt is so huge, luckily it held my hips. I go to his bedroom and take the pills and drink them. I take my plate and go downstairs and it's not easy to find my way to the kitchen. I seat down next to his study and check for my cellphone then I remember that I left it in his room. I lie down and sleep because the pills are working.

NKOSIYOMUZI❤️👑

I leave the house and go to the gym. I finished and bumped into Lwazi.

Lwazi:"Hey champ,"

Me: "Sure man"

Lwazi: " Crybaby ukuphi?"

Me: " Ngiyoku khahlela njalo Lwazi. I left her home."

Lwazi: " Okay, so do you know the reason why she cried yesterday? "

Me: "No man I don't, any way let me go, I left her alone." I turn and walk away. I then remember something important. " Hey Lwazi, hire a bodyguard for her. Make sure that She must not even notice that She's guarded. "I rush into the car and put the gym bag at the back then drove off. I arrive and it was quiet around the house." Thando!" I call out and rush upstairs. I barge into my bedroom and she's not here. "Thando" I step into the bathroom and she's not here. I also go to my

closet and she's not here. I ran downstairs and rush into the kitchen and she's not here. Okay now I'm starting to panick. I call her and it's on voicemail. I call out the security.

Security: " Yes Sir. "

Me:"Do you know where Thando is?"

Security: "No Sir" now I'm really panicking, where could she be?

Me:"Search around the house!" He goes and disappears into the room. Now I rush upstairs and search around the passage, I find her laying next to my office. "Thando!" I call her and she doesn't answer. I kneel down and softly shake her. "Thando wake up" She moans, I quickly pick her up and tell the security to leave. I go to my bedroom and put her on top of the bed.

Thando:"Mh? What?" Oh she's alive. I tightly hug her and kiss her forehead.

Me:" Ungalinge uphinde ungothuse kanjena uyezwa?" I kiss her forehead for a long time then squeeze her and kiss the top of her head. She smells my lotion. I lay her down next to me and sleep with her while she's still in my arms. I thought something bad happened to her. I'm glad she's okay. I close my eyes and sleep sneaks up on me. I dose off.

I N S E R T 🐱🔥👑

S I X 😊❤️🔥

N A T A S H A 🐱❤️🌟

I woke up tightly held. I slowly open my eyes

and I see this handsome face lying next to me. I slowly raise my hand to touch his flawless face. My hands go down to his neck then to his chest. I touch his chest and trace his visible abs. He has a six pack 🐱😊. I go up to his broad shoulders and slowly massage them then go down to his biceps. I trace the tattoo that he has on his left bicep and go down to touch his hand. He has beautiful hands for a guy. I slowly remove myself from his grip and I successfully move away without waking him up. I check the time and it's 13:04 I get up and wear his slides , they are big. Lathi has a long feet. I want to go downstairs to cook lunch but I'm scared to get lost again so I decide to take my clothes and put them in his closet so that I won't have to look for them and I go to take a very

quick shower. I hope I won't wake Lathi up. I strip naked and take a shower, in less than 5 minutes I'm out, I dry my body and use his body lotion to lotion my body. I wear again the same boxer-pant and t-shirt. I walk to the bed and crawl into it and softly shake Lathi to wake up.

Me: "Lathi, wake up." I pat his chest gently. He opens his eyes and smiles when they land to me. He gently pulls me into a hug and kisses my forehead, I love those forehead kisses he gives me." May you please show me around the house again so that I won't get lost again?"

Nkosi: "Okay, let me go and take a quick shower first because I didn't shower when I came back from the gym. I'm sure I stink."

Me: "No you don't, let me also go and wash my mouth." We get up from the bed and he pulls me into him. "You're so tall Lathi, bheka ukuthi ngimakuphi uma ecaleni nami." He releases a carefree laugh and replies-

Nkosi: "I'm not tall, it's just that you're too short."

Me: "No Lathi! I'm tad short, musuqamba amanga uma umdala ungaka😊."

Nkosi: "Ngiyaxolisa Sithandwa sami uyezwa?" He says with a smile showing his teeth and kisses my forehead.

Me: "Yes I do." I take the mouthwash and cleanse my mouth while Nkosi is taking off his clothes.

Nkosi: "Uyazi ukuthi ukhuluma kahle kanjani uma ukhuluma isiZulu😊 hee MaZulu?" I

terribly blush! Now my cheeks are red." Now you're blushing, you see your complexion is selling you off?"

Me: "Thank you for the compliment, I'll wait for you in the bedroom."

Nkosi: "Oh okay then." I step out of the bathroom then I hear the shower running. I lie on the bed with my stomach. I take my cellphone and chat with Zenande and Nandi. I also text mother a message altogether with my siblings. By the time I'm done I see Nkosi walking out of the bathroom with water dripping on his flawless skin to his abs and a towel wrapped around his waist ." Take a picture because it lasts longer Sithandwa Sam." I immediately turn to my cellphone and I hear him chuckling. I honestly enjoy

Nkosi's company, the small talks I have with him are important to me. He comes out of the closet wearing only his grey bottom sweater with Reebok slides." Come let's go downstairs. "

Me:"Won't you wear something on top? "

Nkosi: "No, I love walking around the house half naked. I'm sorry to make you uncomfortable. I'll just wear something then."

He goes back to his closet and I quickly jump off the bed to stop him but I twist my ankle and scream. Oh god it hurts soo much. Nkosi rushes to me before I fall and catches me. I muffle my cries because I don't want to cry out loud.

Nkosi:"Milisuthando ubusiya kuphi! Uyabona

manje ukuthi ulimele!" He scolds me looking like his upset by my action.

Me:"I was trying to stop you from going back to the closet and for wearing something at the top because this is your house and it's supposed to be you that is uncomfortable not me. I'm sorry. "

Nkosi:"Just keep quiet okay, you sound like you'll cry and I hate it when you do. Does it hurt?" He asks pressing his thumb on top of my now swollen ankle. I scream a little because it's painful and I quickly nod yes. He rushes to the closet and comes out wearing a black t-shirt with a black bottom sweater in his hand. He carefully dresses me in his sweater then scoops me up.

Me:"Nkosi where are you taking me?"

Nkosi: " To the hospital, you might have broken your ankle while being clumsy." He says dismissively.

Me:" But Nkosi I said I'm sorry." Nkosi just stares me with a blank expression. We get into his car , he makes me lie down with a cushion under my feet and pillow under my head. I sigh frustrated. So Nkosi is going to be silent. He closes the backseat door and jogs to his side. He hops in and drives off to the hospital. 15 minutes later we get to the hospital and he steps out of the car and comes to my side and opens the door. He picks me up then closes the door and locks the car. He rushes inside and calls out a nurse to come with a stretcher. She comes with it and Nkosi lays me down and the nurses take me to a ward and calls out a

doctor. The doctor comes and checks me up and presses my swollen ankle with his hand. I scream painfully.

Nkosi:" Hey don't hurt her okay, is she broken? "

Doc:" No I doubt Mr Mkhize. We'll take her to the x-ray room to check whether she's broken or not. Nurse take her." The nurses try to make me stand up but Nkosi picks me up and puts me in the wheelchair. We get to the x-ray room and the doctor scans me then says-

Doc:" No she's not broke Mr Mkhize, she might have pulled a muscle or something, you know the works." He writes something down."You'll pass by the dis-chem and get these,they will help her for the pain. Make

sure you wash her foot every night with warm water and massage it before she sleeps for fast healing. "

Nkosi: "Thank you." He walks me out. "You'll be staying with me for the rest of the week."

Me:"But Nkosi I ca..."

Nkosi: " I'm not asking you, I'm telling you. I've already sorted your 2weeks leave. You'll stay with me till you heal. It's not up for discussion." And he dismisses me like that. We get to the dis-chem and collect the medicine. He picks me up and we go to the car and drive off home. I'm now sulking and I won't talk to him. We arrive and he picks me up and we go to the lounge and he lays me down. "You'll be okay?" He asks and I don't answer "Thando with pouty lips, I ask you a

question, will you be okay?" I still don't answer. He sighs then disappear to where god knows. He comes back with a sandwich and a juice. "Here eat and take your medication." I turn my back on him and close my eyes. I feel weight on the couch.

Nkosi: "Thando, you sulking won't make me change my mind okay Sithandwa Sam?"

Me: "Angiso Sithandwa sakho Mina."

Nkosi: "You're my love. You were mine the minute I first saw you into Mabutho's office and you're forever mine."

Me: "When did you ask me to be yours?"

Nkosi: "You're mine, I'm telling you. Now eat."

Me: "I AM NOT YOURS LATHELETHU." Isay

emphasizing on each and every word.

Nkosi: "Thando, I won't beat around the bushes knowing exactly what I want and what I need. You're what I want and you're what I need." He takes my hands into his and deeply looks in my eyes. " I love you Milisuthando, I won't hide my love for you,I won't hide the feelings I feel for you .I'm old enough now and I know what I need, and it's YOU. I want to love and protect you effortlessly and unconditionally. I need you in my life And I need your love, no one else's because my heart♥,my love♥, my body and soul loved you the minute, the nanosecond you stepped into Mabutho's office. I'll be straight forward and honest with you concerning what I need and for the feelings and love I have for you. I'm not going to pressurise you to be in a

relationship with me because you're already MINE 🍷. I'll wait for you while we're in a relationship. You may think that I control you but I'm not, it's the Love I have for you that controls me Milisuthando. I LOVE YOU with every heartbeat my heart makes and for everything in me."

He comes close to my face, touches my lips and brushes them with his thumb the kisses me. I don't know what to do now, he sucks my bottom lip and whispers."Follow my lead and your love for me." And I follow 🐱😊❤️

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT ✨

S E V E N 🌍👑

N K O S I Y O M U Z I ❤️🐱

I confessed my love for Thando. I know that firstly I claimed her but I had to confess my love for her because she's different. I kissed her soft plump lips. She didn't respond and I guess she doesn't know how to so I tell her to follow my lead her love for me. She kissed me back and I sucked her lips so hard that she gasped and I took that as a chance to slip my tongue in. Her tongue is so smooth against mine, I touch her waist and slowly pull up the t-shirt to feel her soft smooth flawless skin, I touch her waist and I feel uMkhize waking up. God! The things I'll do to your angel. She pulls out and my eyes involuntary half close, I'm so displeased by

her action now. I peck her lips,"The things I'll do to your body😊!" I shake my head sideways and get up to go and cook early supper.

Thando:" Uyakuphi manje Lathi?" I turn to face her.

Me:" I'm going to cook supper. "

Thando: " No don't, I'll eat the sandwich, we can share it. Let's watch movies."

Me:"But my love I'm no fan of romantic movies. "

Thando: "Please Baby, I've always wanted to watch movies with my boyfriend." She says making puppet eyes and I chuckle.

Me:" No need to give me those eyes my Love. Come , we will watch it in our bedroom. I'll

rent some movies and you'll chose. "

Thando : "I want us to watch Titanic 😊."

Me: " Okay my love. "I pick her up and head to our bedroom.

Thando: "Why do you always pick ms up like I don't have weight? Oh no don't bother answering, I'm sure you've dated chubby women." I stop walking and look at her displeased by her statement.

Me: " Don't you dare compare yourself with the other women Thando, you should have let me answer your question but no ,you've let your insecurities get the best of you and no, you're the first chubby women I've loved and shared a bond with and the last. I don't want you to compare yourself with other women uyangizwa Natasha? " I say with a

commanding voice full of authority. She nods vigorously. "I don't want to compare other women with you okay nor talk about them with you, I know you're different and you know it too. You're the first and last type I'll date with."

Thando:" Ngiyi type enjani mina?" She says pouting and having a curious expression. I walk up the stairs holding her and avoiding her question. I put her on top of the bed and take my laptop then search for this Titanic movie. "Nkosi I've asked you a question." She says irritated and impatient..

Me:" Angisiwona umngane wakho Natasha, awuzukhuluma nami kanjalo and with that expression uyangizwa?" She looks down and fiddles with her hands then nods.

Thando: "Ngiyaxolisa."

Me: "Thando, you're fragile, innocent, kindhearted not forgetting your feistiness to all those things." I download the movie while renting it." Now come and let's watch your movie." I pull her close to me, I lye back let her rest her head on my chest, we watch the movie in silence with her eating the sandwich-alone. By the time the movie ends, she's crying - Hayi cha, I've never dated a women like this one. "Why are you crying?" I ask her while brushing her arms.

Thando: "It's just that this movie is painful."

Me: "But you knew that it is right?"

Thando: "No I didn't. Lathi I love you too."

Huh? Did I hear her correct? She lifts her head up to look into my eyes. "Yes Lathi, I

said , I love you too 😊." I have this huge grin plastered on my face. I quickly remove this laptop, close it then put it on top of the headboard. I make her straddle me forgetting her ankle and kiss her soft plump lips while holding her waist. I kiss her with a kiss so passionately and full of love, then I deepen the kiss grabbing her big ass and she moans, I swear uMkhize jumped high ,causing Thando to also jump and pull out. I'm so horny now 😊 but I'll control my self.

Me:" Hawu Thandolwam? "

Thando:"UKhabazela." She says pointing uMkhize with her head looking so innocent and frightened, not forgetting how uncomfortable she is.

Me: " Nguwe phela Hawu 😊." I say with a

huge smirk." Phela nguwe owenze uKhabazela aphaphame." She looked me so innocently. My poor Love😊. She gets off the bed but I hold her hand."Uyakuphi? "

Thando: " To the bathroom, I feel like I'm wet?" She says confused and I smirk.

Me:"I made you wet right?" She looks me with a confused expression.

Thando:" No I didn't wet myself! It's like my panty is wet."

Me: "My baby is turned on." I grin and smirk.

Thando: "What!? How am I turned on? How did you switch me on?" But my love is so innocent. I break into a loud laugh. " Mncm" she limps to the bathroom.

N A T A S H A ❀

I limped to the bathroom and pulled down my pants then sat on the toilet seat. I looked down to my feet and something caught my attention. I had blood on my panty, I'm on my periods. I walked to the shower and turned the water on then balanced it's temperatures and stripped naked, stepped on the shower and let the water hit me. I sat down. I'm kind of shy and embarrassed-nervous, I don't know how I'll tell Nkosi that I'm on my periods. After what seemed like 30 minutes I heard a knock on the door.

Nkosi: "Baby, are you okay?" He asks worried well his voice sounds like his worried. I keep quiet for a short period of time.

Me: " Yeah, I am." I switched off the water and wrapped a towel around my body and took

the rope and wore it. I stepped out of the bathroom and went straight to the closet looking down. Nkosi pulled me to him and held my hands.

Nkosi: "Baby, you're not okay. You're sure that you're well?" He is really worried, his voice masks his emotions.

Me: "Mh, Mh, I am. Let me go and get dressed." I pull out of his hold and walk to the closet and lock it. I lotion and I hear the doorhandle making noise.

Nkosi: " My love, since when do you lock the door? My love please open it." I keep quiet and dress in the clothes I wore on our date. It's good that the coat is long, it will cover me. I take the heels and go out with his slides on my feet. I unlock the door and find

him sitting on the floor, he quickly stands up. "Thandolwam where are you going? Why are you dressed up? Did I say something wrong? Did I do something wrong? Whatever it is my love I'm sorry but please don't leave me and you're not capable of taking care of yourself." I look down and fiddle with the tips of the heels. "Milisuthando please talk to me, what did I do that is wrong? Huh? "I couldn't tell him, I'm embarrassed, what if he'll be disgusted and..." NATASHA TELL ME WHAT IS WRONG!?" He shouted panicking and a bit upset. I hate being shouted, tears fall down my cheeks and I quickly wipe them and move away to take my handbag and cellphone. I drop the shoes and take my cellphone and request a uber. I take my handbag and bend down to take my shoes."

Wait... Milisuthando you're bleeding! You have blood on your skirt!" I quickly take my shoes and limp to the door with tears blinding my vision. I wipe them but they continue falling. Nkosi rushes to embrace me." Baby. Thandolwam, did I hurt you? Did you hurt yourself? Why are you bleeding? "

Me:" Sorry, I have to go. Uber is waiting for me outside." I get off his hold and limp to the door.

Nkosi: "You're not leaving this house in this condition! You're freaking me out now Natasha! What the hell is wrong with you?!" He shouted more like roared because of his deep voice.

Me:"Don't shout me, please. Nothing is wrong with me. I .. I'm.. I am... I'm on ... On my pe...

On my periods.. It.. It's t.. That time o.. Of the mo .. Month." I stutter with a low calm panicking voice, looking down fiddling with my hands and tears falling like a river." I'm.. I'm sorry to freak you out.. I'll.. I'll leave bye." I move to the door to exit but I'm stopped by Nkosi with a hug, a tight heartfelt hug full of emotions. I hug him back and he kisses my forehead and lifts my chin with his two fingers so that I can face him. My eyes falls down and I look his chest.

Nkosi: "Hey look at me. Thando look at me." He commands with an authoritative voice. I submit and look him straight in the eyes.

Nkosi: " I love you Thando, you have to learn to tell me everything okay. I'm upset at you for thinking that I'd kick you out because of

you being on your periods. Don't feel shy nor embarrassed, I'll never be disguised by your blood because I know you think I'll be disguised by it. I love you for who you are. I love your innocent self, kindhearted, stubborn, feisty, submissive and not forgetting your shy and bubbly, fragile self. I know you inside and outside. I know that you're kindhearted, stubborn, feisty, bubbly on the outside but you forget that I also know your innocent, shy, submissive, fragile self. I love you because you complete me, you're the missing part of my life and heart. You're my heart in human form. When you're hurt, shattered or sad, I feel your pain. Just let me love you and don't hold back because I'll never hurt you." He seals his words with a passionate slow kiss, full of love and emotions. I just cried

while kissing him and pulled out. He embraced me. I fear losing my self to him only to hurt my self."Talk to me Thandolwam." He kisses my forehead and squeezes myself.

Me:"I'm scared Nkosi. I'm scared of losing myself in the process of loving you without holding back. I fear that you'll get tired of me and hurt me.I'm scared and I fear that you'll see better and matured women who are in your league and realize that I'm only a child. I've never been in love Nkosi. You're my first and..." tears fall and Nkosi wipes them and kisses my forehead for assurance. "I've never experienced ant of these things you make me feel when you're around. I know that what I'll tell you will possibly upset your or make you hurt but, sometimes I feel like you're too good to be true and you're with

me only because.. You.. You want.. You want to de- deflower me and leave me all hurt and alone or maybe.. You.. You made a bet .. With Mr Mabutho and.. That's why you're with me." I pull out of the hug ,wipe my tears and sit on the coach that is besides the door. Nkosi kneels down to my feet and holds my hands ,and looks me straight in the eye.

Nkosi:" Thank you for being brutally honest with me Milisuthando. I hope that by the time you'll believe that I love you without any useless intentions and expectations. I'll tell you my intentions regarding you, me and our relationship. My intentions are for us to be faithful, loyalty ,brutally truthful and honest to each other. My intentions are to grow old with you,marry you, have a family with you, have children with you that will

carry our legacy. I will love you until you believe that I'm too to be true till infinity and beyond. I'll never leave you for another woman because I see my self in you, I see my future in you, I see my life in you. You don't know how much I love you Milisuthando Zulu. You don't know the feelings I get when I'm with you, when I see you, when I look into your eyes and hold you in my arms. You can doubt anything in this world but never doubt my love,loyalty and honesty towards you." He kisses my knuckles, fingers and pecks my forehead, nose,cheeks and lips."Now come and get you changed and showered. Strip naked for the moment. I'll be back." He goes for 4minutes and comes back." Hawu! Awukhumulanga yhini indaba? Woza la." He takes off my clothes until I'm left with my

undergarments. "You have a beautiful body and you're beautiful Thando lwami😊more especially when you're natural." I blush and he takes off my bra. He makes me stand up and when he wants to take off my underwear, I tense and stop him.

Me: "Nkosi you don't have to..."

Nkosi: "I want to and I'll do it, now move your small pretty hands from mine." He takes off my underwear and there's blood in it together with blood clots. I flush into shyness, not with embarrassment and I close my eyes with my hands.

Nkosi: "Remove your pretty hands from your face." He commands with a voice full of authority. I slowly remove them and look down to my yellow legs that have blood. I

squeeze my legs together. "Don't be shy nor be embarrassed okay. You're a human too." He picks me up in a bridal style.

Me: "Nkosi you'll be dirty and smelly because of my blood. Please put me down.

Nkosi: "And your blood has the love you have for me. I'll be showered by your love Thandolwam." He steps into the bathroom and places me on the bathtub. He goes to the bedroom and comes back with salts and oils in his hands. He pours the salts into the bath and turns on the water. He baths me with a sponge. The way he touches me, he touches me like I'm fragile, like I'm a baby. He finishes bathing me, he scoops me up and wraps a robe around my body then takes my underwear that has my blood and washes it

on the water I've just bathed with.

This guy isn't disguised a bit. It's like he enjoys what he's doing and I'm standing here in awe. He drains the water and he puts it aside and cleanse his hands. He lotions my body with soothing oils and I involuntary shut my eyes. He finishes with the lotion and he picks me up. We go to the bedroom and he carefully lays me on top of the bed like a baby. He takes a plastic bag that's on top of the bed and takes out new undergarments with sanitary pads. He takes out a short pant underwear and plasters the pad on it. He comes to me and makes me wear it then he disappears into his closet and comes out with a maroon t-shirt and a tight boxer pants and clothes me. He tucks me into bed and he massages my ankle and bandages it. He kisses

my forehead. "I'm coming" he whispers and I'm left in awe with what this man I call MY MAN! Has done. I'm pulled back from my thoughts by him.

Nkosi: "My love, sit up, you'll have to eat." I sit up and try to take the bowl with the soup." No my love, open your mouth." I open my mouth and he feeds me. After I'm done eating, he tucks me in and kisses my forehead. "Sleep, I'll clean around."

Me:" What time is it?"

Nkosi:He checks his cellphone. " Half past eight. "I nod and he leaves. I close my eyes and hear things shifting. After a while I hear a shower running, I guess he's showering. I'm about to sleep when I hear the shower stops running and the door opening and some

shifting around the room occurs. After a while Nkosi hops into bed and pulls my self to him and makes me lye on top of his warm chest and he wrappes his strong arms that are like a steel around me but they are warm. He kisses the top of my head and whispers. " I LOVE YOU❤️". After some moment I dose off.

I N S E R T

E I G H T 🌍💧

N A T A S H A ❤️🌸

I woke up early in the morning wrapped up in Nkosi's arms. I think about what he did for me yesterday. I've always wished for a guy like him. I have to do something to thank him, I'll make a big breakfast for him. I slowly

get off his grip and bed. I check the time and it's 05:44, I should bath first. I slide on his slides and go to the bathroom. I dispose my wasted pad and bath. I finish bathing, lotion and wear my undergarments with a rope, not forgetting to put on a pad. I sneak out of the bedroom and go to the kitchen to make breakfast. I make 6 russians, 4 fried eggs, baked beans, a bacon, toast 8 slices of white bread, slice 2 tomatoes and make onion rings. I take out the lettuce from the refrigerator and put all the already made foods in bowls. I make a mango juice, it's his favourite and make a black strong coffee. By 06:39 I'm done. He comes down the stairs wearing a grey 3 piece suit and a laptop bag in his hand, and he's talking to someone, I guess it's a call. "Kulungile Baba... yebo

ngiyakuzwa. Bye"

Nkosi: "Morning Sithandwa sami." He says as he leans for a kiss, I meet him halfway and we kiss with him holding my small waist and me holding on his biceps. He grabs my butt and I moan, I pull out and give him his coffee.

Me: "Good morning baby." I say sitting down. "You're going to work?"

Nkosi: "Kodwa Sithandwa sami angiyithandi indlela ongibiza ngayo. I'm not a baby. And yes I'm off to work. It's been almost a week without attending work... Wow! You made a feast here, I'm sure I'm going to gain weight after eating here." I giggle.

Me: "Where is your work situated? And I made this breakfast to thank you for last

night." He kisses my forehead and sits down.

Nkosi: "No need to thank me my love.it's in 20 Anvil Road at Isando." I dish up for him." Thank you my love."

Me:"Pleasure. So do you enjoy your work?"

Nkosi: "A lot." He tells me more about his job and the smile on his face is priceless. "My love, thank you for the breakfast. I have to go now." He pecks my lips and stands up.

Me:"Have a good and a great day at work Mkhize. " I say with a warm smile.

Nkosi: "Thank you Sithandwa sami." He leaves and I clean up and wear his Navy sweatpants with my bra. I wash his laundry and mine then clean around the house. By 11:54 I'm done, I take my phone and request a uber. I take my things and lock then go. I

arrive at my place and go to the kitchen to check whether the dumplings are still good and they are. I decide to take 5 slices of them together with the 4 chicken pieces and make a lunch box for him. I go upstairs and take a shower, I lotion and get dressed in a black block heel, cheque black and white pant with it's blazer and a black sleeveless top. I comb my weave and do a little make-up, just a red lipstick. I take my black shades and wear them and take a black medium sized handbag then descend the stairs and go to the kitchen to take the lunch box and put it on the bag, take my car keys and cellphone then go out and lock. I step into the garage and drive out not forgetting to lock the garage and gate. I drive to the Mall of Africa and buy a Mango Krush and go to his workplace. I

arrive and park in the parking lot. I go straight to the reception and the time is 13:04.

Me:"Afternoon. I'm here for Mr Mkhize.

"She looks up and rolls her pretty eyes.

Receptionist:" Do you have an appointment?

"She says with an attitude.

Me:" I don't have to make an appointment Miss. Tell Mr Mkhize that, Miss Zulu is here to see him."

Receptionist: "I won't do that Shit, sit down and wait for Mr Mkhize, just like other people." I decide to go and sit on the plastic chairs that are at the reception. I don't like fighting with people, that's why I decided to sit down.

"It was good doing business with you Mr

Mkhize."

"It's a pleasure Mr Washington. Pearl, give me that file I requested." I look up and see his back on me. He has a great physique, especially when you view him on the back.

"Here it is sir." He takes it and turns and faces me.

Nkosi: "Pearl, why is she sitting there not in my office?" He says with an intimidating, powerful voice with a scary serious expression.

Pearl:Uhm, Sir she didn't make an appointment. "

Nkosi : " Didn't she tell you that she doesn't have to make one. Consider yourself fired. Pack your things now and leave this building. Immediately." He says with a voice full of

authority and power, not leaving his intimidating look. My man has an aura! His presence demands attention, respect. It has that says "Look at Me". All his workers are now looking him.

Pearl:" Sir please, I'm begging you, please don't fire me, I need this job, I have a grandmother to support. Sir please. " she begs with tears gushing out of her pretty eyes.

Nkosi: "You should have thought about that the minute and before you made her wait." He comes to my direction and I stand up, he hugs me ."MaZulu, kunjani?" He kisses my forehead and holds my small waist leading me to some elevator.

Me:"Ngiyaphila Mkhize. How are you?"

Nkosi: "Now that I'm with you, I'm excellent. Ubekwa yhini lana?" He opens an office and it's very spacious with a great view of Jo'burg behind that glass wall. I look around and I see a shiny black door, his office is decorated with navy, dark brown and silver grey. It has great interior designs.

Me: "I've brought you your favourite meal." I say with a sweet smile. He grins and spins me around and I giggle. "Put me down Mkhize, you're making me dizzy." He sits down in a Navy long couch and puts me on top of his lap.

Nkosi: "Ngiyabonga MaZulu. It's like you know exactly the way I'm starving. Now serve your man." He says with a smile showing his white straight teeth. I take out

the lunch box and juice. "Hawu Sithandwa sami, ufuna ngibe mkhulu yhini?" I laugh.

Me: "Yes. You just have muscles, you don't have fats in your body." He shakes his head sideways and takes a bite on his dumplings and moans "Hawu! My dumplings make you moan."

Nkosi: "MaZulu, you make them just the way I like them, soft and fluffy with their gravy on them. I'm gonna sure wife you for these." I laugh. "Oh speaking of which, I received a call from my father this morning. I want you to meet my family." I choke on my own saliva and I cough so hard. Nkosi gives me water and brushes my back. "My love, you're okay?" I stare Nkosi with a blank expression.

Me: "What!? Nkosi uyazizwa ukuthi uthini?!" I

shout him.

Nkosi: "MaZulu, izolo ngikukhuzile ngendlela okhuluma ngayo nami."

Me:"Cha Nkosi! It's early for me to meet your family. Angiyi lapho nje mina. Hawu!" I shout shocked and surprised well unplanned.

Nkosi: "MaZulu musa ukhuluma nami ngaleyo ndlela awuzwa? Angisiwona umngani wakho mina. Bheka indlela ukhuluma ngayo nami.

Angisiyona ingane Mina, angithethiswa ngaleyondlela. Khuluma nami kahle nange ntlonipho, hayi Ibe ukhuluma nami ngongathi wehlika esihlahleni hawu! Ngadelelwa yhini!

Khulumela phantsi uma ukhuluma nami uyangizwa? Khuluma kahle, ungitshela ukuthi kungani ungafuni uhamba nami siye Drakensberg. Hayi lento yakho yomane

ukhulumela phezulu nami! Khuluma." I've noticed one thing about Nkosi that whenever he's angry, serious, upset or means something he talks isiZulu. I look down a bit embarrassed and fiddle with my hands. Thank god that he didn't shout or I'll be crying right now.

Me:"Ngiyaxolisa, angiqondile ukhuluma nawe ngalendlela engekhulume ngayo. Mkhize it's still early for us to meet each others parents, it's been weeks since we've been together and you want me too already meet your parents. We should take things slowly maybe after 3months or 5months we'll see each others parents but not now." I lift my head to look at him and he's staring me with eyebrows narrowed and his thick full lips pouted. He just stared me for 3 torturing

minutes. Nkosi is so unpredictable, you never know what he'll do next and right now I don't know what to do because I'm so uneasy under his gaze. I don't know what he'll say.

Nkosi: "Fine." He removes me from his lap and walks to stand near the glass wall that views Jo'burg.

Me: "Nkosi please say something else." I don't cope well with a one word answer. Just like him.

Nkosi: "Something else." Oh my! This guy has time for playing around. I stand up and walk towards him and stand besides him then try to hold him but he walks away and disappears into that black shiny door. I'm hurt now. Did I say something wrong? Maybe I should have agreed? But I'm not ready to meet his family.

What if they don't like me? I'm scared to meet his parents and he's moving too fast. I'm scared of commitment only to be hurt. I feel tears falling on my cheeks. I sniff and wipe them off and sit on top of the desk and watch cars moving up and down by the view. "I'm going to visit my parents today. There's an Umemulo ceremony for my little sister. I'll be back after a week." I'm startled by his deep horse voice. I quickly turn and I see him packing up my things. "Thanks for the lunch, I have to go, I have a meeting to attend in the next few minutes. You may leave. You'll use the private elevator, it's on your right when you leave the office." With that said, he takes his things and go. I'm so heartbroken right now. I don't know whether he should have understood or I should have

putted my fears aside and go with him. I take my bag, wipe my tears and go. I use the private elevator and it stops in his private parking lot. I go to my car and drive home heartbroken. I drive out of his workplace with tears blinding my vision. I keep wiping them but they keep on gushing out. I sob and I let go of the steering wheel, I close my eyes and wipe my tears with both hands. When I open them, I hear crushing sounds and I'm left unconscious. I try to open my eyes but they fail me.

NARRATED  

In Jo'burg N4 way, there's an accident. It's a Mercedes A45 AMG with a Range Rover. These cars crashed and the Mercedes driver is unconscious together with the Range Rover

driver. Paramedics are called and the drivers are rushed to the CB Hospital. The paramedics arrive and the Mercedes Benz driver is rushed into theatre because, the driver has a broken leg, arm, bleeding head and cut open stomach due to the glasses. The Range Rover's driver is rushed into theatre, the driver has a broken leg. The other doctor rushes to the receptionist.

Zenande: "Nandi, can you please call Tasha's guardians, she's involved in the fatal accident that happened in the N4." She says holding her tears. She rushes to the theatre room and helps. Nandi is left shocked, tears gush out of her eyes and she calls Mr Zulu.

Mr Zulu: "Mr Zulu speaking."

Nandi: "Mr Zulu, hello, you're speaking to the

receptionist of Christiano Barnard's Hospital. I'm calling you to inform you about Natasha Zulu. She was involved in a fatal accident. Please come. Thank you." She drops the call and cries. She doesn't know what to do. She's shocked, scared that her friend won't make it because it's a fatal accident and it's possible that she dies because of the condition she was in.

NKOSENYE ZULU♥

I feel like a sharp spear was shoved straight in my heart. I feel pain, I feel dizzy, I try to balance my self with the kitchen drawers.

Ndoni: "Mageba kwenzenjani?" She helps me walk to the kitchen chairs.

"Lizwi!Lizwilezulu!"

Zulu:"Ma!"

Ndoni: "Come here!" He comes and finds me struggling to breathe. Ndoni goes to the refrigerator to get me water. "Baba kwenzenjani! Baba phefumula! Breath in, out... in and out." I gain my breathing and drink water. I feel tears threatening to come out when I think about my first princess. I look up to stop them from falling. "Baba! Khuluma!" My wife is just staring me with tears threatening to fall.

Me: "Natasha is involved in a fatal accident in Jo'burg." My wife painfully sobs and I stand up and leave the kitchen. I make a call to our family's pilot.

Vusi: "Mr Zulu? "

Me: "Get the jet ready, we're going in Johannesburg right now. " I step into my

black Jeep and roar the engine and hoot.
"Zulu! Sheshisani lapho! Asambeni!" I hoot
several times."Zulu Man! Sheshisani!" My
wife comes out struggling to walk, she's weak
and still sobbing. I hate seeing her crying.
She steps in the back of the car with Zulu. I
drive off to the station.

Zulu:"I'm calling my siblings to meet us at
the station." The station is where our jet is
kept." I nod." Wele, sheshisa uye estation,
siya eGoli, uNatasha ubandakelwe yingozi.
Utshele uLomso no Utha."

NARRATED  

IN THE HOSPITAL 

INSIDE THE THEATRE ROOM 

AFTER SIX HOURS OF OPERATING

TIME:19:08

Doctor 1:"Miss Bhengu, please go and call Mr Mabutho. We need him." Zenande rushed into Mr Mabutho's office. She barged in startling Lwazi. He stood up.

Lwazi: "Miss Bhengu, why are you crying?"
Zenande wiped her tears.

Zenande: "Sorry Mr Mabutho, you're needed in the theatre room. Our doctor, the new one, Miss Natasha Zulu was involved in a fatal accident, she has a right broken leg and arm, bleeding head and a cutted stomach, the lower stomach. One of her intestines was a little out, we operated her to check whether there are pieces of glass in her uterus and there was a little glass. We managed to remove it but we're waiting for the results

whether she'll ever be able to bear children or not. She bled a lot leading to the loss of blood and we're waiting for her family so that they may donate blood. We managed to stop the bleeding on the head but we're waiting for the hospital's neurologist, that's why we're calling you, to check her head since we have no experience. We are also repairing her broken leg and we're waiting for the results of the spinal cord. We want to check whether it's broken or not and if it is, will she ever walk again or it will be temporary." She then let her tears fall and she left leaving Lwazi scared and worried about Natasha and his friend, Nkosi.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT 🌸

NINE ❤️

NARRATED ✨

IN KWA-ZULU-NATAL 🌍

Lomso, Utha and Lizwi rushed to the station. They arrived and waited for their parents to arrive. Utha was sobbing painfully, crying for her older sister.

Utha: [Sobbing] "Bhut' Lizwi kwenzakaleni? (Lizwi what happened?)"

Lizwi: "[Holding his tears.]" Angazi Thandi, angazi. (I don't know Thandi, I don't know.)

Lomso check the news on social media."

Lomso:"Abasheshe phela nabo oZulu.(They must also hurry up.)" His father's car stops near the jet and Zulu rushes to Utha and she meets him halfway. They hug and she sobs in his brother's embrace.

Utha:"Bhut'Zulu kwenzakaleni ngoNat?(Zulu what happened to Nat?"

Zulu:"She's involved in a car accident , we don't know the cause or what happened. "She kisses her forehead. The family is already in the jet.

Nkosenye:" Zulu sheshisani man!(Zulu hurry up man!)" They run to the jet and they wait impatiently for it to arrive in Johannesburg. Utha is lying on her father's chest and Ndoniyamanzi is with Zulu. The is now 15:44 and the jet departures. It arrives in the

hospital at night, the time is 19:58 when they arrive. Media is in hospital waiting for a report about the patients that were involved in the accident, they are surprised when they see the successful Zulu family. The Zulu family are known because of Nkosenye's firm. He never loses a case and he's always on the news. The media follows them inside.

When the Zulu family arrives at the reception, Zulu rushes to the receptionist.

Zulu: "Where's Natasha's ward?!" He shouts making the media hear what he's saying.

"Where is Natasha Zulu's ward damnit!" He roars.

Nandi: "At the emergency ward, in the theatre room. The fourth floor, take the elevator. "The family rushes to the elevator.

The Media and the journalist have gathered their information and they release the news , headlines state:

THE DAUGHTER OF ADVOCATE ZULU LANDS IN CHRISTIANO BARNARD'S HOSPITAL IN JOHANNESBURG.

Natasha Zulu is involved in the N4 way accident that happened earlier on. She is in theatre and we believe that she is the daughter of Advocate Nkosenye Zulu and Ndoni Zulu, the sibling of the famous twin brother's, Lizwilezulu and Lizwilenkosi Zulu, the world's famous veteranian, Khwezilomso Zulu and their sister, Tinashe Zulu. They have just arrived at the hospital. This is Jo'burg News in Johannesburg.

The Zulu Family rushes to the theatre floor,

they wait impatiently , it's quiet and nobody passes. Zenande leaves the theatre room to call the hospital's neurologist but she is stopped by Nkosenye.

Nkosenye:" Sorry doctor, we are Natasha Zulu's family. "Zenande's tears fall she tries to hold them but she's heartbroken and they keep on falling, she excuses herself and runs to her office but Lizwilezulu runs after her.

Lizwilezulu:" Hey, are you okay? "Zenande removes her gloves and throws them in the bin. She looks at the door and sees Lizwilezulu.

Zenande:" Yes I am. Come in." She sniffs and Lizwilezulu becomes soft as a sponge.

Lizwilezulu: "No you are not, I am Lizwilezulu, Natasha's brother." He extends his hand for

a shake.

Zenande: "Zenande Bhengu, Natasha's friend and colleague." Tears fall again, when she tries to wipe them Lizwilezulu holds her hand and wipes off her tears with his handkerchief and pulls her in for a hug and she painfully sobs. He doesn't know why he's comforting her but something is pulling him to her.

MEANWHILE AT THE THEATRE FLOOR

Nkosenye: "Why is Zulu running after the poor doctor?"

Lomso: "I hope he doesn't shout the poor doctor." Lizwilezulu comes back with Zenande after she has made the call. Zenande goes back to the theatre room and tells Mr Mabutho that Natasha's family is outside.

Lwazi leaves the theatre room.

Mr Mabutho: "Evening, I'm Lwazi Mabutho ,the hospital's manager and neurologist. I'd like for us to go to my office. Please follow me." They follow Lwazi and when they arrive at his office, Lwazi offers them a seat and water.

IN MR MABUTHO'S OFFICE

Mr Mabutho: "Your daughter has a right broken leg and arm, we managed to repair them. A bleeding head - we've managed to stop the bleeding but we're still checking the side effects of the bleeding, whether the brain was or is affected or not. A cutted lower stomach due to uhm...broken glass pieces, a small portion of one of her intestines was a little out, luckily it wasn't

open or reaped apart. We decided to operate her and... we have found a piece of glass in her uterus, it might have moved to the lower stomach to the uterus when they were moving her out of the car, all that movement. We managed to take it out but, she lost a great amount of blood, right now we need it in-order for the continuous operations to happen. We are still waiting for the results, whether the glass that was on her uterus caused any damage, like: will she be able to bear any children in the future. We are also waiting to scan her spinal cord to check if it is broken or not and if it is, will she be able to walk again or not. Right now we need blood because she lost some during the already done operations. Those who want to donate blood will remain here. I need to go

back to the theatre."

Nkosenye: "Will she make it?" He says with glittering eyes with tears.

Mr Mabutho:"I'm sorry Mr Zulu but, it's hard to say." He leaves the office. After Mr Mabutho left , Ndoniyamanzi and Uthandiwe sobbed loudly and painfully. Their sobs were piecing through every heart that was in Mr Mabutho's office. Mr Zulu's tears fell. Her daughter was her second love. He's also afraid of losing her,even though he has another daughter, he loves Natasha because always behaved like a baby and she's daddy's baby and she'll always be to her father.

Lizwilezulu also cried,he hugged his father and his father hugged him back,letting go of his tears. Khwezilomso and Lizwilenkosi were

left numb, only tear made their way out and their hearts were numb, their whole bodies were. After a painful hour, everyone was quiet, there were only sniffs from Ndoniyamanzi. The kids excused themselves saying that they are going outside to get some air. Nkosenye was left with his wife.

Nkosenye: "Come here Ndoni yami." He says patting his lap. Even though they are old and have children, they still love each other, support each other and they still do the things they were doing when they were young. Ndoni went her husband and sat on his lap. Nkosenye is a tall dark man, he's masculine and has a white growing hairs. The twins take after their father and Ndoniyamanzi is a short women with great physique. Big hips and butt, thick legs and light skinned only

Natasha took after her mother with the shortness and physique. Lomso and Utha are light skinned and average tall. Lomso is tall just like his father but light skinned and Utha is light skinned, average height and a bit chubby.

Nkosenye kissed Ndoni's forehead and hugged her, taking in all her scent. Ndoni broke off the hug.

Nkosenye: "MaNkosi, uyazi ukuthi(You know that) she'll make it right?" He says holding his wife's chubby cheeks. She nod."Cha MaNkosi, ngifuna ukuzwa usisho.(No MaNkosi, I want to hear you saying it.)" She breathes in and nods again, Nkosenye kisses her lips slowly and gently then pulls out.

Ndoni:"I know, our daughter will make it."

She says it while meaning it. She then lays her head on her husband's chest. MaNkosi's favourite part of her husband's body is his broad chest. She closes her eyes and breathes in his cologne then her heart melts. Lomso pops in his head on Mr Mabutho's office.

Lomso: "Baba asambeni.(Dad let's go.) The doctor wants to check our blood types." His father nods and MaNkosi stand's up, followed by her husband.

Nkosenye: "Be strong okay? She needs us strong." He hugs her and pulls out. They go out hand in hand and get checked. Only Lizwilezulu and Nkosenye can donate blood, their blood types are O. The doctor takes their blood and transfers it to Natasha. The

blood transfer was now done and they will check when she wakes up if can walk. In the meantime they give her a treatment that will prevent her from being paralysed. After another 6 of operating, the operation was successful but she hasn't woken up. They don't know when. Mr Mabutho went back to the Zulu family to give them a report.

Mr Mabutho: "We are done with operating her, we are only waiting for the results of the operations and her response for the treatment we've given her. We also don't know when she'll wake up. Thank you." After he left, he went to his office to call Nkosi but he decided to not tell him because Nkosi's little sister-Lolwethu is having a ceremony in the following week. He can't disturb him because Nkosi takes Lolwethu as

his own daughter.

NKOSIYOMUZI✿

After Natasha said that she won't come with me, I don't know how I felt, to say that I was hurt was an understatement. She's so unreasonable, I don't know why she can't compromise. I understand that it's early for us to meet each other parents, but couldn't she at least trust me, to keep us loving each other. I just went to the bathroom and stayed there to keep myself calm. Anyway I left Jo'burg and went in Drakensberg for Umemulo waka Lolwethu. I left right after my meeting and my flight only took 3 hours. By 16:32 I was already in my father's homestead. I can't wait to see my daughter. I'll tell my father about Thando later. I

stepped into my father's house.

Me:*Hawu!Akukhobantu kanti lana ekhaya? Mina ngiyosuka ngithathe imithwalo yami ngibuyele kwa NdongaziyaDuma.(Isn't there anyone here at home?I'll just take my luggage and go back to Jo'burg)" Lolwethu screamed, jumping up and down like a child. She squealed in excitement.

Olo:"Baba!(Dad!)" She hugged and I span her around. "Ave ngikukhumbule baba.(I've missed you so much dad.)" I kissed her face causing her to giggle, I then started tickling her causing her to laugh. "Cha Baba! Mama!Mama!UBaba uyangikitaza! Izongisiza!Uyangibulala manje! (No Dad!, Mom!Mom! Dad is tickling me!Come and help me!He's killing me now!)" I laughed at her

then stopped. I sat down and put her on top of my lap.

Me: "Ngikukhumbule nami ngane yami. (I've also missed you my child.)" I kiss her forehead.

Baba: "Ah laze lafika elixhego lalana endlini lizongithathela ingane yami! Muzi! Uphi umakoti! Awazi ukuthi ingane yenziwa kanjani? Yimi lana owayengalali obusuku bonke e... (Here comes the old man of this house. He takes my child. Muzi! Where's my daughter in law? Don't you know how to make kids! I'm the one who didn't sleep at night busy...)" my mother slaps his head.

Ma: "Cha Mkhize! kukho ingane phela Lana endlini. (No Mkhize! There's a child here in the room.)" I laugh and stand up to hug my

mother.

Me: "Sawubona ma.kunjani?(Hello mom. How is it?)" I kiss her cheeks and also hug my father. "Madala(Old man)" My father chuckles.

Baba: "Ngiyokushaya njalo Muzi. Angisengo madala Mina. Buza uMa wakho, uyokutshela. (I'll hit you Muzi.I'm not an old man, ask your mother, she'll tell you.)" I burst out and laugh, joined by Lungelo and Lilitha. I go and hug my sister.

Lily: "Bhut' Muzi sawubona.(Hello Muzi)" I kiss her forehead.

Me: "Sawubona dadewami omncane.(Hello my little sister.)" I shake hands with Lungelo and we shoulder bump and pat each others back. "Bafo.(Brother) "

Luu:"Foza(Brother) "We let go and sit down.

Me:" Ukuphi uLuyanda,uLelethu kunye no Lwandile?(Where's Luyanda,Lelethu and Lwandile?)

Olo:"Baye edolophini baba, baseyokuthenga izinto ezishodayo.(They went to town to buy shortage stuff.)" I nod and we all chat a storm.

Me:"Akudliwa yhini nala ekhaya? Oko ngifikile angikaze ngikunikwe ukudla.(Are we fasting here?Ever since I arrived, I haven't served food.) They laugh and Olo stands up and disappears to the kitchen and comes out with a dish of warm water and a dishcloth. She slightly bows and I wash my hands and wipe them. She goes back to the kitchen and comes back with a meal placed in a tray. One

of the things I love about her is that she's respectful, I eat and we all catch up and go to sleep.

I woke up in the morning and took a shower. I wore my red sneakers, sky blue jeans and red t-shirt. I went to the dining room and found my family chatting with food on the table. One thing about my family, we wait for each other whenever it's time to eat. I greet and kiss my daughters forehead and sit down. My father is reading a newspaper. That's my father for you. I also read newspaper in the morning, but only when I'm at the office or my house."Baba yhini leyo oyifundayo lapho?(Father, what are you reading?) "I ask as we finished dishing up, I'm now ready to eat.

Baba:" Jo'burg news, I've just read about a fatal accident that happened yesterday. The paper was released today." I nod.

Me:"Celungiphe lona, ngiyokulifunda uma ngiqedile ukudla.(Please pass it to me, I'll read it when I've finished eating.) "Lily passes it to me and I fold it then continue eating. We catch up again with them asking me about my company and I ask my father about his farm. My father is your typical Zulu man, just like me but he's worse. He's a farmer, he owns the largest farm here in South Africa. He deals with food and animals. He's farm is situated in Limpopo. Lungelo owns Gooderson Drakensberg Garden Golf and spa resort, it's a Hotel Resort. After we catch up I decide to take the newspaper.

Me:" Baba, the page of the Jo'burg accident.
" I look up and see him looking at me.

Baba:"Uhm page...12. You know advocate Zulu's daughter is the one that was involved in the accident. Apparently it's the one that is a doctor." I quickly look up at him." It's uhh.. Na what what, I don't recall her name but it has something with a nut. "I quickly check the newspaper. I read it aloud.

Me:"The daughter of Advocate Zulu lands in Christiano Barnard's Hospital in Johannesburg. Natasha Zulu is involved in the N4 way accident ... she what! Oh no no no no no no no, let it not be my Thando." I feel my heart beating out of my chest. I quickly take my cellphone and call her. "The subscriber..." "Oh shit! Lolo check it online."

I quickly call Lwazi, it rings." Answer it damnit!" He answer it in the fourth ring..

Me:"Tell me it's not her. Tell me it's not my Natasha! " I'm now pacing up and down with my family looking at me like I'm crazy.

Lwazi: "I'm sorry man but it's your women. She was submitted here yesterday around 3oclock ,I can't tell you more man. I'm sorry but her family is here."

Me:"What was the cause?"I ask slowly as fuck!

Lwazi:"I don't know mab but her blood pressure was high when she arrived, I believe it might be stress. I'm tired man,I've been on her operating room since she arrived and now I'm dog tired." With that, he hungs up.

Baba:"Ndodana yhini indaba? (Son, what's

wrong?). He's now besides Mr.

Me:"Nguye baba.(It's her father)." I feel my tears threatening to fall. I look up to stop them from falling. "I have to go back to Jo'burg, I'll come Friday next week." With that said, I run to my car and drive to the airport while calling my P.A to book me a ticket to the next flight going to Jo'burg.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT 😊

TEN ❤️

CONTINUATION 🌸

Ndoniyamanzi: "Please show it to mommy that

you love her. Can you at least move a finger for her? Even if you move your beautiful pretty eyes for her. Please my baby."

Natasha doesn't do any of the things her mother asks." I can't do it anymore. "She runs to the door and leaves the ward. Her father comes in. He walks to her and kisses her forehead.

Nkosenye: "My second love." He holds her hand, kisses it and gives it a squeeze. "My love, you know that daddy loves you right? You know that he loves you more when you sulk like around and act like a baby. Why don't you sulk for daddy huh? You want me to call Bhut'Zulu to punish you?" He blinks away his tears. "My love, daddy is sorry for everything he has done to you that hurt you, okay? Daddy humbly apologises to her second

love, sorry if I wronged you but please wake up for me baby. Wake up for daddy my love. Who will do the things you used to do when you leave daddy huh? Who will hide behind daddy when mommy shouts her? Who will daddy feed now when you want to leave me huh?" He painfully cries." Love please wake up. Baby please give daddy a sign or anything to prove that you won't leave him." He cries until he calms down. "I'll come later okay baby? Your one and only daddy loves you." He babykisses her lips and moistures them with his labello. He goes to the bathroom and washes his face. When he's done he walks out and walks to Mr Mabutho's office because they were called for a meeting

INSIDE MR MABUTHO'S OFFICE ✦ ✦

Mr Mabutho: "Greetings to you all, we as the hospital doctors of this hospital and I as the manager of it have reached a decision about Miss Zulu. We decided to advise you to switch off the machines of Miss Zulu since we've run out of options and because she's now breathing with machines. There's nothing that will change her condition while she's still in this hospital."

Lizwilezulu: "We won't do that nonsense!"

**Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com**

I N S E R T 😊

T E N ♥

LAST CONTINUATION ❁

IN MR MABUTHO'S OFFICE

Lizwilezulu: "We will keep her here until she recovers! We won't kill her!" He roars and stomps out of the office, Zulu had longed for a sister to protect, love and spoil because his parents before Natasha was born, his mother gave birth to another boy so him letting go of her princess, the one that loves to be spoiled and the one that is a crybaby. He loved her the most because even though she is old, she still acted like a child, she never changed. Ndoni is very numb to even cry, she cried a lot in the past few months. Mr Mabutho excuses himself and calls Nkosi. His cellphone rings and he answers it on the

fourth ring.

Nkosi: "Sure." He says sitting on his bed, he had just showered and decided to visit Natasha.

Lwazi: "We have decided to tell the family to switch off the machines because she's breathing with them and doesn't responds to any of the medication we gave her." Nkosi sighs and feels his tears threatening to fall so he looks up to stop them.

Nkosi: "What is her problem?" He puts the call in loud speaker and he gets dressed.

Lwazi: "Damaged brain and she's paralyzed. You already know that right?" Nkosi stops clothing.

Nkosi: "What! Whoah you say she's paralyzed as in she's unable to walk?"

Lwazi:"Yheah, just come man." Nkosi sits down and he let's his tears fall. He's heartbroken without Natasha and incomplete. He hasn't been himself in the past few months, he's now thin with only muscles left, he's ugly and unattractive. He stands up and looks himself in the mirror. He shaves his long beard and cuts his afro. He now looks neat and clean. He has a sky blue jeans with a navy t-shirt that has Natasha's scent. He takes his cellphone and car keys and descends the stairs then walks to the garage. He takes his black SUV and drives off to the mall to buy pink roses and dusty pink human sized teddy bear and goes to the hospital. He arrives and parks then goes straight in Natasha's ward. He steps inside and he greet.

Nkosi: "Sawubona bab'zulu (Greetings Mr Zulu.) Sawubona ma. (Greetings Mother.) Ngiyanibingelela nonke. (Greetings to you all.) I'm Nkosiyomuzi Mkhize, from KZN in Drakensberg. I'm in a relationship with Thando." Zulu quickly turn to look at him.

Lizwilezulu: "INI?!(What?!)" He marches to Nkosiyomuzi but Lizwilenkosi stops him and takes a look at the unmoved Nkosiyomuzi.

Lizwilezulu: "Zulu stop! Now is not the time for you to fight with him. Remember that he's Natasha's lover, she agreed to be with him and she was bound to date now, we can't always protect her from guys. She's old enough now." Zulu steps back." Uh.. Muzi, I'm Lizwi and this is Zulu, you already see that we're twins. And these are our parents and

this is Lomso and Utha ,our siblings." He extends his hand for a handshake and Nkosi takes it." Family, let's give them a moment. Zulu, let's go and get some food." He says as he shoves him towards the door. They leave and Nkosi is now left with Natasha. He puts her presents below her feet. He brushes her face and lips with tears glittering in his eyes. He kisses her forehead and gives her a long deep kiss and his tears fall on top of her cheeks making the machines make noise. Her family rushes inside with doctors telling them to go and wait outside, they leave the ward and watch at the glass window as the doctor monitors her. They hope that she wakes up.

After the doctors monitor her, Mr Mabutho went out.

Mr Mabutho: "Please, to my office." They all go and Nkosi walks with them." Did they accept you bro?"

Nkosi: "Another twin wanted to beat me up bro." They laugh and walk into his office.

Mr Mabutho: "While we were monitoring Miss Zulu, we noticed that she had a seizure, it was a good thing that it happened because we know that she responded to the treatment we've been giving her and she's rejecting it, it's also a bad thing that she had a seizure because it contributed to her brain damage causing it to dismally fail. I suggest that we still sw..."

Nkosi: "Don't switch off the machines, I'm transferring her to Switzerland for her brain operations. I've already paid for the

operation. I just wanted to share it with her family first but we're running out of time."

Mr Zulu: "How much did the operation cost?"

Nkosi shifts his attention to Mr Zulu.

Nkosi: "\$288 000, when you convert it in rands it's R2 millions."

Mr Zulu: "When did you do all of this?"

Nkosi: "This week, I booked the ticket for tomorrow 8am. I paid for the operation on Tuesday and the money transaction was done Monday. I brought the ticket Wednesday."

Mr Zulu: "Thank you , we didn't think about the operation. We'll pay you tomorrow. What do you do for a living Mkhize?"

Lizwilezulu: "Because if you're anything that endangers our princess, you leave her for

good." Nkosiyomuzi looks at Lwazi thinking about his sidelines. He shifts back his attention to Mr Zulu.

Nkosi: "I'm the owner of Mkhize Architectural Company. I actually built your firm. It's a pity that you don't recognise me. And no need for the payment, I was doing it out of love and because I still need her in my life."

Lizwilezulu: "You're lucky that I don't know your history or I wouldn't accept you, and don't think that I accept you because you have money, no I don't. I accept you because I see you're good for my princess."

Ndoniyamanzi: "You talk like you're her father. Someone would think that you're her father you know."

Lomso: " I can't believe that Zulu accepts her daughter's boyfriend without a fight or punch. "He chuckles.

Nkosi:" That's because I'm not a boyfriend, I'm a man." Nkosenye looks at Nkosi.

Lizwilezulu: "That's because your stupid brother stopped me."

Lizwilenkosi: "Hey I'm not stupid, I was doing you a favour because you don't have muscles and broad chest with shoulders." The brothers laugh.

Nkosenye: "It's a good thing to actually see you laughing. I guess Mkhize makes you happy. Thank you Mkhize." He stands up and walks to Nkosi for a handshake and Nkosi also stands up, they shake hands." But this does not mean I accept you as my daughter's

boyfriend. "Nkosi chuckles.

Nkosi: "I'm not a boy, I'm a man." Nkosenye looks Nkosi straight in the eye and thinks to himself that her daughter really found a man in Nkosi.

Nkosenye: "I want a private chat with you Mkhize." Nkosi nods and Lwazi clears his throat gaining their attention.

Mr Mabutho: "I have another good news. Miss Zulu is not paralysed. While she had a seizure, her legs moved. Nkosi, Mr Zulu will break other news to you by himself." Nkosi is now worried about the news and he turns and asks Mr Zulu.

Nkosi: "What news?" Mr Zulu signals for everyone to leave the office. They leave.

Mr Zulu: "Sit down Mkhize." Nkosi sits down

not removing his eyes from Mr Zulu.

Nkosiyomuzi likes having eye contact with the one he talks with, to him it's a sign of concentration and focus.

Mr Zulu: "After the accident, we found that Natasha won't bear any kids in future."

Nkosi's jaws drop

Nkosi: "Oh shit!" He closes his eyes and put's his hands on face. He thinks about the fact that he wants kids, especially now that he has found the one he loves. But the one that he loves can't bear her his kids to continue his legacy. "Yhooh!" He removes his hands and looks Mr Zulu. "Are you serious? Like seriously?" He asks looking Mr Zulu straight in the eye. Mr Zulu now pities Nkosi because he understands how much a Zulu man wants

kids and loves them. Mr Zulu nods."I want to hear you saying it." Mr Zulu chuckles and shakes his head realising that him and Nkosi have somethings in common.

Mr Zulu: "Yes, I am serious." Nkosi stands up and leaves, Mr Zulu sighs." This is harder than I thought it is."

INSERT 😊

TWELVE ❤️

NATASHA 🌸

I don't know what happened to me or what's happening, all I know is that I trust this Lathi guy. He's so handsome guys 🐱 😊, when he kissed me, I swear he took me to another

planet whereby it's just the two of us. He's touch is so 🐱🔥 uhmm... It sends shivers down my spine, I swear if I was an ice, I would have melted. Okay, I should stop dreaming about him but I can't help it. About my family, well I don't know anyone, I don't even know how I look like or I'd we look alike but I know one thing that this guy I'm sleeping on top of is definitely mine. Well he already said that we're in a relationship. Now it's in the morning and I want to pee and eat, I'm very hungry. I try to move away from him but he tightens his grip around my waist.

Nkosi: "Where do you think you're going?"
He says with a very deep husky voice. I swear guys, my heart melted by just hearing his voice. He kisses the top of my head and I feel butterflies dancing in my stomach.

Me:"I want to go to the bathroom, and besides, I'm hungry now. "I pout after that.

Nkosi:" I forgot that my baby is a food lover, but you should have woke me up and said that you want to use the bathroom.

Me:"I didn't want to disturb you in your sleep." He kisses my forehead.

Nkosi: "You'd never disturb me my love." He removes me away from him and he stands up,he's wearing a track pant with a muscle vest and stretches himself. Who! I see many abs here! He doesn't only have a six pack guys😁he has some things that are on his ribs when he stretches. He walks to my side and guys! He has big muscles but he looks thin? He would have been better if he was a little broad and a bit big but he's handsome

anyways.

Me: "You look like you were born a bit big than you're right now. In fact you're thin. What did you do in order to be thin? Because I bet you're more handsome when you're big or have gained weight." He chuckles and picks me up. We walk to the bathroom and stand in front of a mirror. I have a chiskop guys! My head is so round and little! I'm thin and have an ass 😁. It's not big ❤️, oh I'm not so bad then. I have chubby cheeks, but I'm this though! "Am I this thin? Because I look like I was.. Chubby? well according to my cheeks." He chuckle and watches me as I pee and wipe my self. To say I'm uncomfortable would be an understatement, I'm comfortable. I wash my hands and we walk back to the room and sit on top of the bed.

Nkosi: "Well I'm not thin, actually I have more weight than the one that I weigh and you're the cause of my thinness because you were taking your time to wake up and I didn't cope well with that but now I definitely will because you'll be staying with me."

Nkosenye: "Actually, she's going back to KZN, we'll be flying in a week. She'll have to do Umemulo and Umhlonanye, together with Uthandiwe." What?! I'm not going anywhere without Nkosi, no I don't agree.

Me: "I'm not going anywhere without Nkosi and his permission." I sulk looking at Nkosi. He's now wearing clothes, I mean he's no longer wearing a muscle vest. He stands up and kisses my forehead.

Nkosi: "I'm going out. You'll solve this as a

family. "

Me: "But Lathi you are my family!" I'm on the verge of crying.

Nkosi: "Thandolwam, they are your blood family. It's actually me who should ask permission from them." I try to stand up but he quickly stops me." Thando, lye on the bed please, I don't want you to hurt yourself nor walking around okay? I don't want anything bad happening to you."

Me: "But I want to be with you Nkosi!" Tears fall off my eyes." I want to go with you! Don't leave me with people I don't know please." He sighs abs kneels to my level. He touches my cheeks and holds my hands, he kisses them and the butterflies woke up.

Nkosi: "I will go with you then okay? Just

don't cry, you know how much I the seeing you cry. You want me to be more thinner than I am?" I quickly nod a no." Then behave and stay with them. They won't harm you, especially when there's your father and brother not forgetting your feisty mother like you." He chuckles and shakes his head sideways. "I love you okay? I'll protect you with my all , from now on. You trust me right?" I giggle and he wipes my tears.

Me:"Yes, I trust you. Please come back again." He stands up and kisses my forehead.

Nkosi: "I will, I promise." He walks to the door and greets my 'family'. I get into bed and close my eyes.

Ndoniyamanzi: "Hello baby." I look up and see my replica.

Me: "We look alike." I say with a confused expression.

Ndoniyamanzi: "And that is because you are my daughter and I'm your mother. I love you okay sweetheart? One day you'll remember that I'm your mother. Don't think hard about everything okay?let everything happen on it's own. Once we get to KZN, I'll show you everything that is about your life sweetheart. Now tell me, why do you trust that boy more than your replica?"

**Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com**

I N S E R T 😊

T W E L V E ♥

C O N T I N U A T I O N 🐱

Natasha: "I don't know mommy, there's something that is pulling me to him and I love his company." I say looking down and fiddling with my hands.

Ndoniyamanzi: "I'm glad that you called me mommy my baby, I missed being called that." She says with a huge smile.

Uthandiwe: "But I also call you like that mom."

Ndoniyamanzi:" You say mom my child not mommy."

Uthandiwe: "Why do you say 'my child' to me but you say 'my baby' to her?"

Ndoniyamanzi:" That is because she behaves

like a baby and you behave like a child. Don't get me wrong okay sweetheart?

Uthandiwe:"Yes mom."I just looked at them talking and I noticed that they look alike.

Maybe she's really my sister. I sigh and look at the door hoping that Nkosi will come in, I miss him now. We all chat and talk, I think it's safe to say Zulu is not talkative, I wonder how he is at work. After some time he comes back with a security guard and they have plastic bags. I smile and my stomach growls💔. I've been very hungry, my family didn't even come with food.

NKOSIYOMUZI🌍👑

It was good having Thando in my arms again and I'm glad that her family didn't come back because I wouldn't have her in my arms.

I'm hurt that she has to go back to Zimbali when we arrive in Johannesburg. I thought that she'll stay with me but I guess, her family missed her more and the ceremonies have to be done for her, well I understand because we also did Umhlonyane for Lolwethu. Anyway I left her ward to go and buy her favourite. I don't even know whether there's a Mug&Bean here. I went to my car and drove to the malls, I'm guided by the GPS and I rented the car when I arrived here, just to be on standby. I first looked around for Mug&Bean. I found it and brought her hot fries, quarter leg(chicken), chocolate cake and chocolate milkshake. I went out and got to Spur, I brought her hot wings and ribs, I'm brought myself steaks. I went to a flower boutique and brought her pink flowers. I

went to a food market and brought Ferrero Richer collection, human sized teddy bear, Mexican lays, Bliss chocolate flavoured, plums, yellow cling peaches and banana, ultramel and a Liquor Litch juice and a Apple juice. I wanted to drop these off to the car and went to a clothing boutique. I brought her Sissy Boy jeans, Superga Takkies, White shirt, Black bootleg, brown coat and dusty pink coat. Brought toiletries for us, dusty pink gown, warm pyjamas, socks and a pair of undergarments. I went to the till and I was done. I went back to the hospital and asked the security guard to help me with the food. We went to her ward and I found her laughing. I greeted her family and went to her and kissed her forehead. And put the clothing bags at the drawers and the teddy

bear next to her, I put the flowers on top of the drawer.

Zulu: "How thoughtful of you to buy us food." I turn to look at him.

Me: "Actually, everything is for Thando. Security, please give me the plastics." He gives them to me and I give him R200" Thank you." I take out the Mug&Bean takeaways and give them to Thando.

Thando: "Thank you Mkhize 😊❤️. I've been waiting for you to come back but you were taking time but I guess it's because you shopped for me. Thank you 😊." I nod and watch her as she eats. She finishes eating the quarter leg and fries, I take out the ribs and wings and give them to her. She smiles and starts to eat. She also finishes them and

I give her the apple juice to drink. She drinks it and I take out the chocolate cake and milkshake.

Me:"Did you bath?" She shakes her head sideways indicating that she hasn't bathed. I nod and take out the plastic that has the gown,pyjamas, socks, toiletries and her undergarments and go to the bathroom to run a hot bath for her. I run the hot bath for her and return back to her, when I look at her, she burps and giggles, I guess she's full. I chuckle,scoope her and take her to the bathroom. I remove my leather jacket, I strip her naked and bath her. After I finished ,I take her out and lotion her. I make her wear the undergarments and dress her socks,pyjamas and the gown. I scoope her again and take her to the bed. I tuck her

in and kiss her forehead." I'll be back later okay?" She nods." I love you." I steal a quick peck and turn around. Her family is still here, looking at me. Oh shit! I shouldn't have pecked her lips, now her father will think that I disrespected him. I look down and walk to the door.

Nkosenye: "Muzi stop." I stop and look at him. "I give you my blessings, we give you our blessings. You've proved to us countless times that you love her and you take care of her. We didn't even notice that she's hungry and hasn't eaten, even if she did, we didn't buy her food and clothes as her family but you did it. We didn't even notice nor ask whether she has bathed but you noticed it, you bathed her and fed her. You treated her like she's the only person in the room, you

didn't even acknowledge us. I give you my blessings son." I nod and go to him to shake his hand, but guess what? He pulls me in for a hug. I hug him back and step out. I drive to the Switzerland Hotel and first thing I do is to run a hot shower for my self. I shower and for what seemed like 15 minutes, I go out and lotion my body. I order food and eat , after I'm done, I go to bed and sleep naked.

I wake up and check the time, it's 22:45. I step off the bed and walk to the balcony to clear off the sleep, I'm still naked. It's rainy outside, how I hate driving in rainy days. I walk back to the room and close the door to the balcony. I walk to the bathroom go take a quick shower, when I'm done, I lotion and wear my grey sweatpant and a grey hoodie. I order food while I call Lwazi.

Me:"Lwazi." I hear some shuffling in the background.

Lwazi: "Sure Nkosi. How are you and how was the operation?"

Me:"I'm good man, the operation went well and Thando is awake. And how are you?"

Lwazi:"We'll talk at our meet ups about me. That's good man, did you make the decision about Thando's condition? "

Me: "About that man, Thando doesn't know me nor her family, she lost her memory so I decided to not tell her about it, well for now."

Lwazi: "Dude her memory loss is temporary, I'm sure the doctors said that, it's caused by the operation. When the time goes by, she'll remember everything." I sigh.

Me: "Yeah they did tell us that it's temporary. I made a decision to tell the doctors to do some tests about her fertility and uterus." He chuckles, eh why is he chuckling?

Lwazi: "You still haven't changed, you still demand. You tell them but you don't ask them, Heey Nkosiyomuzi! Well about that, you might do the tests man, but the results won't change. I see you haven't accepted the situation and her condition."

Me: "It's hard to accept it man, it's really hard, very hard. I've never come up with a situation this hard, in my life. I'll take my chances and see the results. If they come out the same, I don't know what I'll do."

Lwazi: "The choice is easy man. It's either your love for Thando or your love for kids."

Chose."

Me:"Lwazi no man, you can't make me choose between the two, I need them both in my life."

Lwazi:"Well it's easy then. You can have both. Marry Thando and another women then have kids with her. Polygamy it is because you can't chose."

Me: "Thanks man for the talk, I needed it, I have to go now." I end the call and eat. After I'm done I go to the bathroom and brush my teeth and leave the hotel. The time is now 23:42, I'm sure Thando is asleep now. I drive off to the hospital and by the time I arrive, it's 00:02. I step out of the car and walk inside the hospital. I walk to her ward but I'm stopped by a nurse.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT 😊

THIRTEEN ❤️

NKOSIYOMUZI 🌸

Nurse: "Sorry Sir, visiting hours are over." I turn to look at her.

Me: "I know that but I'm not going to follow your rules. I'll see her but first I want to see her doctor's office. Show it to me." I say with my deep husky commanding and authoritative voice while staring her straight in the eye. She seems frightened and bit scared. Nurse: "Yes sir." She says leading the

way. I walk besides her until we get in the office. "Doctor Evans, Mr demanded to see you." The doctor looks up and her jaws drop when she sees me. She analyzes me with lustful eyes. I chuckle and step in her office. I close it and take a sit.

Me:"It's better to stop drooling doctor because you won't get to taste me. Stop drooling and listen to what I'm here for."I say with my deep husky commanding voice, she quickly snaps out. I guess my voice woke her up from her little dream.

Dr Evans:"Sorry, I'm doctor Evans." She stands up for a handshake, I just stare her with a blank expression.

Me:"Sit down doctor Evans, I know who you are. I'm here because I want you to do a test

for Natasha Zulu. I want you to check her fertility and uterus if it can carry babies. I want you to do a test for her this morning, I want the test tomorrow morning." I stand up to leave.

Dr Evans:"We'll have to first get her permission becau..." I cut her off.

Me:"I don't care Miss Evans, I gave you an order. I don't care what you do but I want my answer tomorrow." I stand up and leave her office. I walk to Natasha's ward and she's asleep. I sigh and walk towards her bed, I remove her teddy bear, my kicks, hoodie and sleep next. I cuddle her, kiss her forehead and sleep.

N A T A S H A ❀

I woke up with a stiff body, I opened my eyes

and saw hands that are holding me, they are Nkosi's hands. I turn and see him sleeping, I wonder when did he arrive. I sigh and slowly get off his hold, luckily he didn't hear me. I walk to the bathroom and bath, after I'm done, I lotion and wear another pair of pyjamas. I wear my morning shoes and walk to the room, Nkosi is still sleeping, I guess he's tired. I walk to the window and watch the beautiful view of Switzerland while in thoughts. I'm frightened by hands snaking around my waist, I turn and see Nkosi, he smells very nice, even if he has just woken up. I turn and watch the view again.

Nkosi: "Morning my love." I nod and reply.

Me: "Good morning Nkosi, when did you get here?" He lays his head on my shoulders, still

holding my waist from behind, his face is on the crook of my neck.

Nkosi: "Last night, midnight. I'm sorry to not arrive earlier, I overslept but I kept my promise and came." I nod. "Thando, I ordered the doctor to check whether your uterus can carry my kids." I chuckle and turn to look at him.

Me: "Why did you do that? Nkosi this is my body, you can't do what you want nor like about it. Unjani nakanti?"

Nkosi: "Lalela Thando (Listen Thando.) While you had an accident, your uterus was affected and can't bear children. That's what we discovered, now I want these doctors to check whether the results were true or they will be the same." I keep quiet

look at him. I pass him and sit on the bed. A nurse comes in with breakfast, I thank her and eat. Nkosi goes to the bathroom and comes out when I'm on my last spoon of the salad. A doctor comes in and greets. I greet back and Nkosi stares her blankly.

Dr:"I'm here to do tests for your uterus Miss Zulu. Sir if you don't mind , please leave us." Nkosi stares her.

Nkosi:"I'm not going anywhere. You'll do the test while I'm here , supporting my woman. I suggest you start doing your things right now." The doctor nods and she starts with the test. It's a little painful. I kept on screaming here and there with Nkosi telling me to calm down. The doctor takes off the thing she inserted in my little cookie jar. It

comes out with blood and I start bleeding.

Dr:" Miss Zulu, you will need sanitary pads. The bleeding will continue a little. I'll give you pills for the pain." I nod.

Nkosi:"Will she buy the pads or you will come with them." The doctor shifts her attention to Nkosi.

Dr:"I will come with them. I'm taking these to the lab. The results will come out tomorrow. " I nod and she goes out. Nkosi follows the doctor and when he comes back , he comes with sanitary pads. He helps me with them and he scooped me. He takes me to my ward and the family is already there. We greet and Nkosi puts me down. He tucks me in and kiss my forehead. I was starting to wonder that when will he give it to me.

Daddy: "Where are you coming from?"

Me: "We went take tests for my uterus. They will come back tomorrow. "He nods and we chat until they leave and I'm left alone. I think about my possibility of not bearing children in future until I sleep.

I'm woken up by Nkosi's Cologne hitting my nostrils and kisses on my face. I turn the other way around and I hear him chuckling.

Nkosi: "Baby vuka hawu(Baby wake up.)" I mumble.

Me: "Huh.a" He removes the covers and scoops me up. "Nkosiyomuzi ungisakuphi?(Nkosiyomuzi where are you taking me?)" He chuckles and I open my eyes. Oh,we're in the bathroom. He puts me down and prepares my bath. After he's done, he

closes the toilet seat with its lid and sits down. "Are you going to watch me bathing?" He chuckles and nods. "No, you won't, go." I say removing my clothes and disposing my wasted pad. I get into the bathtub and wash my body. When I'm done, I take the towel and wrap it around my body then drain the water. I go and stand in front of the mirror, my hair is growing. I brush my teeth and while brushing them, I notice Nkosi looking at me blankly, sitting on the toilet seat. I shake my head and cleanse my mouth with water. I remove the towel and dry my body and lotion with Nkosi looking me, my back is on him.

Nkosi: "Thando cha. Musukunginika umuva wakho (Thando no. Don't give me your back)." I giggle and bend to touch my

tarsals. "Thando, do you want me to senselessly fuck you?" He says with a husky deep voice. I bend more and touch my phalanges. I felt a painful sting in my butt, I scream and unbend, I turn to look behind me and I see Nkosi smirking with a huge grin plastered on his face. I try to speak but he shuts me up with a smooch. He lifts me and I wrap my legs around his waist. He pins me against the wall and I balance my self with his broad shoulders, I moan and he spreads my legs and places his hand on my cookie jar. I remove my right hand on his shoulders and try to remove his hand that's on my cookie jar but he pins my hands above my head with his one big hand and holds my small wrists. He steps closer and I'm squashed against this wall. He pulls out of the kiss to lick his

fingers with a smirk on his face and rubs my clit. I moan out loud because of the pleasure that kicks in my lower abdomen. He rubs it in a circular movement, I curl my toes and he smashes his lips on mine. I'm wet 😊, he inserts his index finger and I jump a little because of pain. He moves it in and out, I moan a little, he goes faster and deeper and I moan out loud but he doesn't want to let go of my lips. He inserts his tongue and our tongues fight in dominance. He continues to pound me and moves his finger in a circular movement and I feel something building up. He touches a spot and I pull myself to him so that he goes deeper. He does and taps the spot, I moan out loud in his mouth and I begin to shake, that thing continues to build up. I forcefully pull out of the kiss and moan out

very loud but he captures them to stop me from moaning. I shake uncontrollably and curl my toes, I scream and cry in his mouth but he doesn't pull out. I suddenly feel relief and the shaking stops. He pulls out of the kiss and removes his finger in my cookie, it's a bit painful when he does and I moan. He licks his fingers that have a white liquid.

Me: "Nkosi what did you do to me?" I ask struggling to breath and I breath out heavily causing Nkosi to chuckle.

Nkosi: "That's what you get for not listening to me." He puts me down and legs go of me, my knees are wobbly and I quickly hold on to him." Now you can't walk!" He laughs and puts me in some little couch. He takes a wet towel and wipes my cookie." Hey little velvet, you

hide good things here." He licks his lips and stands up.

Nkosi: "Why are you talking to my cookie?"

Nkosi: "Point of correction, it's mine and I was praising it. Wear, we have to go. I'm sure your family is already here." I nod and wear my undergarments. He removes his clothes with his back on me and steps in the shower. He has a broad back, it's a little scary. I shake my head and wear pyjamas. My head bandage has been removed and the thing of having memory loss is temporary. I finish and Nkosi steps out of the shower stark naked. I quickly turn around, I don't want to see his thing, well I'm scared. "So you're still scared of uKhabazela?" I should let you taste him right now."

Me: "Who's Khabazela? And how do I taste a person."

Nkosi: "It's actually the thing you're scared to look at. Turn around now, I've finished wearing clothes." I turn and stand up. He takes my hand and we walk to the ward. There's a nurse with my food. She looks up.

Nurse: "Good morning. Doctor Evans said she'll come with your results at 09:00." She turns and leaves. I let go of Nkosi's hand and sit down. Worry starts to shower. I look down and play with my fingers. What if I can't bear kids? Will Nkosi leave me? I should break things off with him right now. It will be better if I do it on my own because when he does, it will hurt more. I look up and see him standing near the big glass window,

looking at the Switzerland view . I clear my throat .

Me:"Nkosi , whatever was happening between us is over." He turns faster than a lightning "I know that every guy wants kids. If I can't bear them , leave me alone and get someone who can. I give you my blessings."I can't believe I just broke things off between us. I hope I don't regret this. Well I won't because I'm helping him , just as he helped me by bringing me here.

NKOSIYOMUZI❁

I can't believe what Thando had said. I won't give her any break. I was about to reply to what she said but the doctor got in.

Dr:" Good morning. How is our patient doing ?"

Thando:"I am good. The bleeding stopped last night. Do you have the results?"

Dr:"Yes I do,let me read them for you."

Thando:"No don't , I will read them myself.

Dr: "Oh okay,here. " She gives them to her and Thando nods with a small smile and the doctor goes out . Thando opens the envelope and reads them. She smiles and releases a chuckle.

Thando:" Nkosiyomuzi leave. I appreciate everything you've done for me. Now please go and never come back." She takes the results and goes to the bathroom. I follow her and when I try to open the door , it's closed.

Me:" Natasha open this door ." I bang it but she doesn't open it .

Me:"Milisuthando I said open up!" She doesn't. I feel my anger rising up . She can't tell me to go and never come back without any explanation. I won't do that , I waited for almost 4 months for her to wake up. No I can't. "Milisuthando I say open this fucken door dammit!"

Thando:"I said go away and never come back !
"

Me:" I won't do that Milisuthando! Open this door.

Nkosenye:"What's going on here Muzi ?" I turn and see her family with curious expression.

Me:"Tell your daughter to open this door before I break it. Milisuthando I said open this door !" He says banging it .

Nkosenye: "Tasha sweetheart please open up !"

Thando: "Nkosiyomuzi must go out first !"

Me: "I'm not going anywhere Milisuthando! I'll wait until you open up."

Zulu : "Nkosi be quiet we'll make it look like you're gone okay?" He whispers in my ear . I turn to look at him. I think about it and bang the door.

Me: "Milisuthando I said come out! I'm not leaving without seeing you!"

Zulu: "Stop being stubborn Muzi! Where did Tasha find a stubborn man like you?" Just as I was about to answer him, Lizwi comes with security guards

Security: "Mr Mkhize please leave the ward,

please."

Me:"I'm not going anywhere damnit!" He tries to hold me. "I dare you to touch me! You'll regret it!" I was now furious and pointing them with fingers. The other security tries to hold my hands but I quickly punch him hard across his face and he groans loud.

Zulu:"Muzi no man, you can't beat up a security! "

Me:"HLUKANA NAMU LIZWILEZULU!!!(Stay the hell away from me Lizwilezulu) " I roared and he held my arms together from behind. "LIZWILEZULU NGITHI HLUKANA NAMI AWUZWA?!! UFUNA NGIZE NGIKUSHAYE NAWE?!!(Lizwilezulu I say stay the hell away

from me, didn't you hear me? Do you want me to also beat you up?)

Security:"Sir if you don't leave, we'll call the police."

Me:"I DON'T GIVE A FUCK ABOUT THAT DAMNIT! MILISUTHANDO I'LL BREAK THIS DOOR IF YOU DON'T COME OUT! I SWEAR TO YOU!" I hear the door opening and I quickly turn to look at it, Thando comes out, fiddling with her fingers and looking down. I quickly remove my arms from Zulu and rush to Thando. I pull her in for a hug.

Me:"You'll be the death of me I swear ." I hug the life out of her, but she doesn't return it. Well I don't care , as long as she's safe. She tries to get off my hold. "Where do you think you're going?" I swear my anger

vanished the minute I saw her .

Thando:" I told you to leave Nkosiyumuzi. Why are you so stubborn? " She forcefully pulls out and I let her ." Security please take him away."

Zulu:"What did he do?"

Thando:"He did nothing, I want nothing to do with him. Him and I are done forever. I told him to go and never come back."

Zulu: "Why Natasha?"

Thando:"Because when we were waiting for the results, I told him that , if the results say I can't bear children, he must go and look for another women that will give him children. I don't know why he's stubborn because I'm helping him, saving him from trouble that will be him breaking up with me

because he helped me, only to break me."

What?! She means that the results are the same?! But she smiled, why is she this calm? She's so confusing.

Me: "Thando, you're trying to say that the results said that you can't bear children?"

Thando: "Yes they did. Now please go."

Me: "I'm not going anywhere Thando, I already told you."

Zulu: "Please go, just go Muzi, let her be alone, just for the moment. She's fine."

Me: "Bk she's not Zulu, she need me. She's even bottling things up by saying that I should go, she wants to. She's not even sad accepted this without even shedding a tear, without showing any emotions! "

Zulu:"That is how she deals with everything. She's calm, hardly cries nor be sad when she receives bad news." I turn to look at her and she shows no sad emotion in her mother's hold, nor a confused expression. "Please go man." I go to her and her mother let's go of her.

Me:"I'll come back and I won't listen to you. We're in this together, for life. I love you." I kiss her lips and forehead then turn to go. Don't know how I feel, I'm just confused as hell!

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT 😊

FOURTEEN♥

NATASHA✿

Daddy:"Natasha what was that about?" I go to the room and sit on the bed. "Natasha khuluma, ngibuzile, futhi ngibheke uma ngikhuluma nawe. (Natasha talk,I've asked, and look at me when I'm talking to you.)" I look up and look down again.

Me:"I broke up with Nkosi." I say playing with my fingers.

Daddy:"Why?"

Zulu:"And tell us everything, don't wait for us to ask you questions." I breath in and out.

Me:"Nkosi told me that, I should do a uterus test to check whether it can bear his children. Well he said I will do it, I asked

why and he told me about the sides effects of the accident and I agreed. When we were waiting for the results today I told him that whatever that was going on between us is over and if I can't bear children, he must leave me alone and find someone who will be able to bear him, so the results said that I can't bear them and I told him to leave and never come back. I left him here and went to the bathroom then locked myself in it, and you know what happened after."

Daddy:"Natasha, you're telling me that you broke things off with Muzi because of what the results said?!"

Zulu:"No need to lecture him father. We already know that Muzi is stubborn and he won't let Natasha go just because of the

results. We're here to tell you that ..."

Daddy:"Zulu awukahle, yhimu ubaba walengane. Musa uzenza ubaba kuyo, ube ufundela kuyo, hawu. (Zulu stop, I'm the father of this child. Stop pretending like a father to her, stop acting like a father to her.) My baby, tomorrow we're leaving. The ceremony will be done on the 24th of this month so Mkami, pakishela umntwana impahla. Sihamba kusasa.(My Wife,pack clothes for the baby. We're leaving in the morning.)"

Me:"UNkosi yena?(What about Nkosi?) "

Daddy: "He'll sort himself out. He's old enough and a man. Zulu what time is it?"

Zulu:"Half past one father. We'll go and buy lunch. "

Utha:"I'll stay with Tasha, you can go. "

Mommy: "Alright then girls, love you!"

Me: "Where's I mom?" They all laugh.

Lomso: "I've already expected that from you. I love you little sis."

Mom: "I love you girls."

Us: "I love you too mommy/mom." They all go out.

Utha: "Sis, why did you break up with Bhut' Muzi? "

Me: "I'm scared of heartbreak Utha. I broke things by myself because it won't be too painful. If he was the one who said these words, it would have been more painful. I'm protecting my heart."

Nkosi: "No need to protect your heart from me, I won't hurt it nor hurt yourself. Let me

love you, don't be scared my love. Please."

Utha:"I'll give you space." She stands up and leaves. Nkosi gets in.

Nkosi:"Thando I love you for who you are, not what you are. Being not able to carry children doesn't change the way I feel about you. We won't break up, we will get through this phase together. No one is leaving the other."

Me:"But Nkosi, I'm sure you want children, maybe lots of them. I can't give you that, why staying with me while I can't?"

Nkosi:"Yes I do want children, there are many ways we can get them. And I'm staying with you because, I love you and the person you are."

Me:"I want to experience pregnancy Nkosi, I

want to know how it feels to be pregnant. I want to feel my baby's kicks and cravings. I want to get through those hormones and all. I want it to be you who gives me my first child and more, I want it to be you who takes my innocence, pride and purity. I want it to be me who gives you your first child and builds your legacy and give it to you! But I can't Nkosi! I'm a barren!" I say with a sob escaping my mouth.

Nkosi: "Hey, don't cry okay. I know what you're saying and it makes sense, I understand what you're saying. I also want the same things. I want it to be you who gives me children, I want to see you more chubby and I want to hold your hand through every pregnancy you will encounter until the babies are born. I want to touch your

stomach and feel our baby's kicks, while we're all connecting. It might not be possible now but believe and hope that one day, it might be possible because I do. Let's not let this break us up okay?" I nod and he stares me blankly causing me to giggle.

Me:"Yes Mkhize! It won't and it shouldn't. I'm sorry about the way I behaved and reacted to the situation earlier on. I'm even sorry for what I've said. "

Nkosi:"Don't worry, I'll forgive you only if I get my kiss. "

Me:"Come and get it." He chuckles and shakes his head. He's standing below the bed and I'm lying on it."

Nkosi:"No, stand up, come to me and ask for forgiveness." I giggle and walk to him. I

stand near him and stand by my toes and lean in but he stands straight and he looks at me with a grin plastered on his face.

Me:"Nkosi bend!" He laughs and I smile. I stand by my feet and look down.

Nkosi:"You're so short my love, very short if you'd ask me." Well it's true, I only reach below his chest.

Me:"And you're very tall."

Nkosi:"You talk too much, come here!" He pulls me to him and lifts me up. I wrap my legs around his waist and he looks down. I hold his cheeks and kiss him. Butterflies start dancing and he sucks my bottom lip so good that I end up moaning and wanting to melt right away. He slips his tongue in and our tongues roll and twist against each other.

He's a very good kisser with his full thick dark plump lips. He caresses my butt and squeezes it then I moan and he moves around and puts me in bed. He pulls out of the kiss and looks at me with his sudden red, very small eyes. He climbs in bed and gets in between my legs, I wrap them around his waist and pull him closer. He smashes his thick full lips on mine and his hands roam around my body while mine roam around his back, neck and head. He leaves my lips and nibbles my earlobe. I moan out of pleasure and he kisses me behind my ear, I moan a little loud and he kisses my necks and sucks on it. He finds some spot and I lose my senses. I moan out loud, feeling pleasure and he grinds me, I feel his bulge directly on my cookie jar and it feels so good. He leaves my

neck and claims my lips. He bites my bottom lips and pulls me in for a soft, gentle slow and deep passionate kiss. It feels so good because he grinds on my cookie. Pleasure starts kicking in and I unwrap my legs and spread them a little wide. He fits perfectly between my thighs and I also move my waist and grind him, pleasure increases and I moan loud in his mouth, I pull his butt closer so that I feel his bulge more in my cookie. I raise my waist and grind him hard and more, the pleasure is sooo good! And high! He also grinds me and I feel my self shaking! Nkosi pulls out of the kiss and I moan out loud. He continues to grind me and I also do. "Thando stop grinding me, you're making me very hard and it's hard to resist you. Remember we're in hospital and anyone can come in." I don't

stop, I continue. "Thando I said stop." He tries to pull away from me but I pin him down and he lies on the bed with his back. I climb on top of him and sit directly in his bulge and grind it hard and fast! I moan out loud and shake." Oh Thando! Oh shit! ... Uhhrrhg! What the fuck!... Shit!shit!shit!shit! Fuck! Thando what are! Urghhh! What are you doing to me!" He hisses, groans loud and curses and I start shaking uncontrollably and I scream and cry out his name. Nkosi quickly claims my lips and I wet my self. I pull out of the kiss panting, breathing heavily and I try to catch my breath. His bulge pokes me and I jump up a little and he chuckles. "You've just grinded uKhabazela hard and fast but when he pokes you, you jump high." I giggle and hide my face in his chest. We were grinding each other

wearing clothes. "I get the feeling that you'll be very clingy once you meet uKhabazela." I laugh and remove myself from him. I lie besides him.

Me: "No I won't be clingy, and who said that I'll meet him?"

Nkosi: "You've just grinded uKhabazela hard and when I wanted us to stop you said no and pinned me on the bed and got on top of me and grinded me hard! That's a sign, and who thought you to grind?" I giggle and hide my face on his chest.

Me: "You were grinding me good and I thought that I should return the favour." He laughs and his laugh is so mainly and his voice caused it to be deep and sexy 😹. "You have a beautiful laugh." I raise my head to look at

him and he chuckles then smiles. "But your smile is ugly, it's bad." He laughs.

Nkosi:"Thank you for your compliments and I see that I've overstayed my welcome so I should leave." He removes me from him but I hold his waist." Hayibo!(Wow!) Wee ntokazi ngiyekele ngihambe. Angithi kusasa uyahamba,so kumele nami ngihambe ukuze ngiqoqe imithwalo yami ngilale bese ekuseni ngihambe. (Lady, let me go and leave.

Tomorrow you're leaving so I also have to pack my luggage then sleep so that I'll leave in the morning.)" I shake my head head and he sits up, I also sit-up, not removing my arms around his waist." Thando stop being clingy, I love it when you are but I have to go."

Me:"Please don't go Nkosi. Ngiyakucela Lathi,
Mkhize,Khabazela-Khabazela
kaMavovo,Gcwabe,Mumbomhlophe. Gubhela
ngicale uhlale nami namuhlanje uhambe
ntambamba ngoba ngiyokukhumbula uma
ngisemakhaya. Ngiyakucela Sithandwa
sami.(Please Lathi,Mkhize,
Khabazela-Khabazela
kaMavovo,Gcwabe,Mumbomhlophe. Gubhela
Please stay with me today and leave
afternoon because I'll miss you when I'm at
home. Please my love.)" I say looking straight
in his eyes and I take his hand and kiss it. He
looks deep into my eyes and grins then he
pulls me in for a soft,gentle, slow heartfelt
passionate kiss that's full of love and
emotions. I kiss him back,close my eyes and I
feel myself pouring all my love for him and

unsaid words to him. He also pours his love for me and slowly pulls out and locks our forehead. I catch my breath.

Nkosi:"Ngiyakuthanda uyezwa MaZulu, MaNdaba wami.(I love you, do you hear me MaZulu,my MaNdaba.)" He kisses my forehead and hugs me."Ngizizwa ngibusisekile uma nginawe ebomini nami. Ngiyohlezi nginawe kuze kubengunaphakade. Angizuhamba uyezwa, ngiyokuhlalisa.(I feel blessed with you in my life. I'll always love you till forever. I won't leave you hear me,I'll stay with you.)" I pull away from the hug and baby kiss him. He lyes back and I lye next to him while holding his waist and him holding my butt. We lye in a comfortable silence. "Did you wipe yourself after you've cum?" I shake my head and he chuckles. "Do you have any wipes

here?"

Me:"I think I have them. Check the drawers.
"He checks them and finds them. He takes them and removes my pyjama pants together with my undergarment. He spreads my legs and I hide my face with my hands. I'm a bit shy and I try to close my legs but he slaps them.

Nkosi:"Open your legs." He says in a commanding deep husky voice and I submit. He kneels between my legs and wipes them. He licks his lips and he buries his head between my legs.

Me:"What are you doing Nko..uhmn." He licks my clit and I moan loud and spread them more. He chuckles causing my clit to vibrate and sends shivers down my spine. He licks and

sucks my clit very hard then he closes my legs. "Nkosi! Why are you stopping?" He helps me to wear the pyjamas.

Nkosi:"I did say you'll get clingy. Now you're."

Me:"Mxm." He laughs and lyes next to me and pulls me to him but I push him away an he laughs hard. I'm so pissed! I try to get up but he holds me.

Nkosi: "Where do you think you're going my love?" He asks muffling a laugh.I click my tounge and he gets on top of me then he starts tickling me. I laugh out very hard and ask him to let me go.

Me:"Nkosi please! Let me go! "He tickles me more and my stomach even hurts because of laughing." Nkosi! Please!" He laughs at me and

tears start falling I'm laughing very hard."Nkosi my stomach hurt!"

Lizwi:"Hey! What are you doing?! Muzi get off my sister!" I laugh out loudly for the last time and wipe my tears."Oh I thought you were crying." Nkosi gets off from the laughing.

Nkosi:"Sorry to frighten you, it's just that she was busy sulking so I tickled her." I giggle and shake my head.

Me:"No I wasn't!" He chuckles.

Daddy:"You're so happy! And busy talking that you don't even notice that I'm here. I guess you fixed your things. "

Zulu:" I told you that Nkosi will deal with her. He's too stubborn to let her go." I stand up and take the lunch bag from him and start

eating." Uphangelani pho Natasha?

Awuzucelwa ,musuphanga uyokomiwa!" They all laugh and don't mind them. I continue eating and this food is deliciouss!

Nkosi:"I'm leaving now. I'll come back tomorrow to say goodbye."

Me:"Won't you fly with us?"

Nkosi:"No, I'm leaving very early. I'll fly by 07:00,I'll try to come here early so that we can spend some last few hours ,okay?" I feel a lump in my throat. I look down and put the food aside." Hey,don't be sad. We'll talk tomorrow, okay?" I nod." Look at me." I look up and stare his dark brown eyes. Tears fall and I quickly wipe them. He hugs me so tight that I terribly want to cry." Don't cry, I'll come back tomorrow and spend time with you.

"

Me:"Please don't leave, leave in the morning."

He sighs and keeps quiet for a short time.

Nkosi:"Okay, I'll leave in the morning but let me go and pack then finalise my things for now. I'll be back by six o'clock. It will only be two or three hours,okay?"

Me:"Okay." He pulls out and I watch him as he leaves. I hope he won't come late again or when I'm asleep.

Mommy:"He'll be back sweetheart, no need to cry." I shift my focus to her and she wipes my tears. I didn't even realise that I was crying. "You love him right?" I nod. "Did you tell him?" I shake my head. "Why?"

Lomso:"There's no need for her to say it, Nkosi already knows and her actions sell her

off."

Zulu:"And I'm sure that she once said that she loves him."

Lizwi:"Siyohlala lana sikhulume ngothando luka Muzi no Natasha? Wena Zulu uthanda bani?(We'll stay here and talk about the love of Muzi and Natasha? And Zulu,who are you in love with?)" We all laugh.

Zulu:"Awuhlukane nami Wele (Leave me alone twin.)"

Lomso:"What did you do to that CBH doctor?" Zulu smiles for a moment. "And he blushes! I hope you didn't fu..."

Mommy: "Hey Wena! Kukho iingane lana!(Hey You! There are kids here.)"

Daddy:"Speaking of that, Natasha

zisaphelele inkomo zami?(Natasha are you still a virgin?)" They all look at me with serious expression.

Me:"Hawu Baba, ungangibuza njani intwenjalo?(Wow father, how can you ask me something like that?)"

Zulu:"Phendula umbuzo Natasha. (Answer the question Natasha.)" He's too calm for my liking.

Me:"Angazi Baba.(I don't know father.)"
They all gasp.

Zulu:"Natasha ngiyokubulala uma kuthi awuselotjitji.(Natasha I'll kill you if you're no longer a virgin.) Call Muzi. "

Me:"Angina phone.(I don't have a cellphone.)"

Zulu:"Ameni!" He claps his hands once and

lifts them up.

Mommy: "There's no need to call Muzi, mother in law will check her when we're at home." She says packing my clothes.

Lomso: "Athi ngihambe la. (Let me go here.)"

Lizwi: "Let me join you." They go out.

Utha: "What will happen if she's no longer a virgin dad?"

Daddy: "Don't tell me that you're no longer a virgin Uthandiwe because I'll give you a hard hiding." Yhoah!

Utha: "I'm still a virgin father! Why didn't you say that to Natasha?" Hayibo!

Ngingenaphi manje Mina?

Daddy: "She's old enough now and she should be married but I'm glad that she's not

because I don't want her to leave my family."

Me:"Even if I get married, you'll still be my father." He smiles and kisses my forehead.

"I'll still love you daddy." He grins.

Daddy:"I'm glad my love and daddy loves you too. I love you all."

Zulu:"You're such s softy around these women father but in court,you're very cruel." I laugh and mommy joins me.

Daddy:"Repeat what you've just said and I'll slap you. You might be a first born but I'll beat you because you're still a boy to me." I laugh and Zulu gives me a death stare. I quickly shut up." And for scaring my baby." I smirk and giggle.

Zulu:"I'm gone." He walks out.

Mommy: "We should also go, we'll depart very early so we need to sleep early. Bye bye baby, mommy loves you." She kisses my forehead and pecks my lips. They go and I walk to the bathroom and shower. After showering I lotion and wear my pyjamas and morning shoes then walk to the ward. I step in and Nkosi hasn't arrived. I'm a bit sad. I wait for him until I sleep. I sleep with a broken heart.💔

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT 😊

FIFTEEN ❤️

NKOSIYOMUZI❁

I arrived at the hotel, I ordered a meal and went to take a shower. I finished showering and dried my body then lotioned. I wore my black VQ trackpants with a black vapor max, I rolled my hair using a towel. It's growing and I have to cut it. I then ate my meal and checked my company's progress and other missions. I lost a track of time because when I finished working, it was 20:08 and I promised Thando that by 18:00, I'll be back. I drove out of the hotel and it took me 20 minutes to arrive. I found her sleeping, I sat on the couch and ordered 4 tenderised steaks from Spur and 2 large chicken crammed-crust pizzas from Debonairs Pizza and a refreshment. I took off my shoes and the VQ tracktop. I climbed into bed and

Thando moaned. That gave me a little hard because her moans 🐱😁 uhhm, they drive me crazy. I ended up kissing her neck and sucking it with her moaning. I made her lie with her back and I climbed on top of her and spread her legs. I remove her top and pants then I start rubbing her ladies slowly and lightly, I rub her nipples very slowly and gently and I hear her moaning and lifting her knees a little up. I then slowly and slightly lick her nipples and they get hard. I hear her mumbling "Mmhh Nkosi."

Me: "What is it my love?" She moans out loud, feeling pleasure

Thando: "Go down." I continue licking her nipples and caressing her ladies. I suck them slowly and bite them a little. "Ba..uhh.. Nkosi..

Uh." I slowly and lightly kiss her nipples and go down to her stomach leaving love bites, all the way down to her pelvis. I keep going down but I don't reach my heaven yet. "Nkosi!"

Me:"What my love?" She moans and lifts her legs, she puts them in my shoulders. I take a look at my heaven and it shines, she's wet! For me! 😍😁 I kiss her clit and she moans so beautifully, she's enjoying it. I slowly and lightly kiss it, she moans loud and shoves my head deep inside her legs. I chuckle and chow her clit fast and deep and suck it hard!

Thando: "Oh my! Nkosi!" She breathes heavily and I can feel that she's about to cum. She shakes and I go down and eat her cookie hard! Deep! and Fast! I suck it and lick it! She shakes uncontrollably and tries to

remove my head but I sunk deep inside her and eat her deep! I insert my tounge and widdle it inside her and drink her precum.

She cries 😊." Nkosi! No!no!no!no! Please !

Please! Stop! I'm...oh Nkosi!

Nk...ahhhhh!Nkosi I'm dying! " she moans my

name out loud so beautiful that I end up

chowing her and sucking her juices! She

tastes so good! 😊She cums and screams out

loud. I continue eating her through her

orgasm, she closes her legs and tries to

pushe my head out and run away but I fight

her and go deeper. She cries loud and begs

me to stop but I don't ,she moves away from

me but I hold her thighs tight and show no

mercy to her! 😈😊. She starts to build up

again and she shakes uncontrollably then

squirts! Oh fuck! I rub her clit vigorously and

continue to chow her. She doesn't stop crying, she pushes my head away from my heaven and tries to run away from me again but I hold her waist with my left hand and pull her closer. I eat and suck the senses out of her and she continues to shake, cum and she squirts and squirms until her cookie farts. "Nkosi I'm dying!" She shakes uncontrollably and vigorously but I don't stop. I eat her, suck her and rub her clit hard. She shakes until she stops and keeps quiet, I only hear her breathing loud and fast. I stop eating her and rubbing her clit but she continues to cum and squirt until her cookie farts. I lift my head up and her eyes are closed, chest going up and down. I chuckle and go up to her and kiss her neck. I suck it and she moans. "Nkosi yo...you...you killed

me...please...let me rest...in eternal peace." I chuckle and stand up. I go to the bathroom to wash my head and face because she wetted on me. I wipe my face and dry my hair with it then remove my vest and throw it in the bathtub. I wet a towel with luke warm water and go to her. Her legs are still open, I wipe her and lick my heaven. "No! Please! Please don't!" She screams and moves up to the pillow. I chuckle.

Me:" ,Evening my love 😊,how are you?" She gives me a death stare and I laugh, I didn't know that she has one. I give her undergarments and pyjamas to wear and she does. "But you wanted me to eat you earlier on, now I've ate you but you're not talking to me. Or did I eat you bad? I can repeat and eat you very very good my love 😊😊."

Thando: "Not this hard though Nkosi!" I smirk.

Me: "But you felt good and begged for more." I grin.

Thando: "I didn't know that you'll end up eating the senses out of me!" I laugh out very hard because she had just boosted my ego! I remove the bedspread and look for another one but I don't find it. I make my way to the door." Nkosi? Where do you think you're half naked? You're not leaving this room like that."

Me: "Oh, you're possessive, I see. I guess I ate you good then because you were not like this but, I'm only yours ,okay?" I put my foot outside and Thando yells.

Thando: "If you go out looking like that, just

know that you're single and never coming back here!" I sigh and step back into the room and go to her on the couch.

Me:"But I'll just call a nurse and ask for a bedspread. "

Thando:"Hamba😊." Yhoah! I'm caged.

**Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com**

INSERT😊

SIXTEEN♥

NKOSIYOMUZI🌸

Me:"Where did I get a stubborn and

persistent lady like you?"

Thando: "Where did I get a stubborn, persistent, scary and intimidating guy like you? A guy with a respect demanding aura?"
I release a carefree laugh.

Me: "You say that, I demand respect?"

Thando: "Yes, without saying it and a bad aura!" Oh fuck! I chuckle.

Me: "But you love me like that."

Thando: "Who said I do?"

Me: "Don't make me force you to say it."

Thando: "Oh no-no-no-no, yes-yes-yes, I do, I do." She says running away to stand near the window, I laugh at her and my cellphone beeps. {°°Delivery Arrived! Enjoy!From Debonair's Pizza°°}. And there's a knock. I

walk to the door and a delivery guy gives me pizza's. I give him \$400 and close the door, I look at Thando and she looks at the pizza's with lustful eyes.

Me:"Come and eat." She comes and her stomach growls. "Take the whole pizza." She nods and sits down. She's a food lover, I haven't noticed that because when she was visiting me, all she did was to sleep, I guess work made her tired. "I love you Thando, I know that when we leave here we won't know when we'll see each other. I know that I'll be busy with work and you'll be busy with the ceremonies and stay a little longer, but know that, I will still love you,miss you and check up on you whenever I get a chance. Your family might want you to stay there for a long time but please, visit me if you can." She

stops eating and looks at me.

Thando: "Come with me. Let's go together." I also stop eating and look at her, I can't go with her.

Me: "Thando I can't, almost 4 months that I've been absent in work and I have to catch up. I'll try by my all to visit you but I promise nothing. "

Thando: "Please promise me Nkosi." She says with teary eyes. I pull her to sit on my lap, I peck her lips and she cries. Oh fuck! I pull her in for a tight heartfelt hug and kiss her forehead then she breaks down and I decide to keep quiet and let her cry. I don't want to promise her that I'll come and end up breaking the promise because I hate breaking promises. She keeps quiet and puts

her head on my chest, I can't believe that I've dealt with her crying self for months now. She's quiet, only hiccups are making sounds. I lay back on the couch and put her on top of me. My chest is full of her tears, I remove her head a little and wipe my chest with the VQ tracktop and put her back.

Me: "My love, are you full?" She nods and I keep quiet.

Thando: "Will we survive?" I close my eyes and take a deep breath.

Me: "Yes we will. I said that we are in this forever, so there's nothing we won't survive, come hell or high waters, we will still survive."
"

Thando: "I love you Lathi."

Me: "I love you Thando."

Thando:" Am I still a Virgin?"

Me:"Yes, you're still a Virgin."

Thando:"How many months we've been together? "

Me:"Four months."

Thando:"How many women have you slept with?" Where is this conversation coming from?

Me:"I don't know."

Thando:"When was your first intercourse?"

Me:"Don't know, but I was 16years."

Thando:"Have you slept with a women while we were together? "

Me:"We're still together and no. I haven't slept with any women ever since we've been

together. "

Thando: "How do you keep up? I mean, you're a man and... You know."

Me:"Yes I am a man but I putted my desires aside and put your heart first and I keep up by doing nothing but loving your beautiful loving self."

Thando:"Don't you do those hand what what?" I chuckle.

Me:"No, I don't do those things. If I want to release, I'll release my seed in you just not now, I'm waiting. "

Thando:"Why waiting? I'm ready." I open my eyes and she's looking at me.

Me:"It's because you're worth the wait and besides, I'm scared that I'll make love to

you until you regain your memory. I don't mind but, I want you to regain your memory on your own time."

Thando:"No you won't make love to me until I regain my memory. You're lying." I chuckle and shake my head.

Me:"Don't ever say that I'm lying, I hate that word. If you were not a Virgin, I would have already fucked the senses out of you until you collapse but I'm not in hurry because I'll punish you for all the days you made me hard as a rock." She giggles and a knock comes through. "IN!" A nurse comes in and she looks at me with lustful eyes and Thando lyes on top of me, hiding my naked chest.

Nurse:"Mhmh.(She clears her throat.) I've

brought you supper and your meds." Thando hesitates to get up but she finally does and takes the meds then puts them on top of her drawers. The nurse doesn't take off her eyes from me. I chuckle and stand up then stretch my self. "Uhm😊."

Thando:"You can leave, I'll drink the meds and go with your supper." The nurse takes it looking at me. "There is the door!" The nurse snaps out and looks at Thando.

Me:"Come back with a new bedspread." She smiles seductively and licks her lips.

Nurse: "Yes,uhm(She moans and bites her lips then crosses her legs.) Yes sir." She turns and shake her huge behind then catwalks and leave. I look at her until she closes and when she does, she winks.

Thando: "Nkosiyomuzi you're looking at her with lustful eyes." I turn and see Thando looking at me with eyes glittering with tears.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT 😊

SIXTEEN ♥

CONTINUATION 🌍

NKOSIYOMUZI 🌸

I clear my throat and walk towards her. She walks back until she hits the wall, I touch her face but she slaps me in the face! What the fuck! When did I last get a slap?! Oh shit!

Me: "Don't you dare, I say don't you dare ever slap me again in your life Milisuthando! This better be the first and last time you slap me, am I making my self clear?" I say with a low deep husky authoritative commanding voice. She looks at me blankly, no emotions are displayed in her face. Okay, that's first because she would have been teary eyes by now, I guess this is how she is when she's angry.

Thando: "And don't you dare give me an order, threat, promise or whatever you think you're doing right now in your life because I'll slap you **AGAIN**." She says emphasizing 'again' like she's making her self or should I say my self clear? Clearly this women doesn't know me.

Me: "You wouldn't dare Milisuthando.

Thando: "I dare Lathethu." Okay. That gave me a hard-on because she's no longer the baby that I know but she's revealing her feisty and intimidating self, she's so sexy 😹 😊. I snap out of my thoughts when she slaps me hard twice and pushes me away and walks away. I quickly pull her towards me roughly and pin her against the wall. I roughly kiss her lips and remove her pants then roughly finger fuck her with four fingers. She whimpers silently and I finger fuck her roughly, hard, deep and fast then she cries loud. "Nkosi stop! You're hurting me! Nkosi!" She says crying and pushing my hand then I feel a liquid streaming down my fingers to my hands and arms, I look at it and it's blood. I quickly pull away and move away from her and

she whimpers then slide down the wall with blood streaming down her legs. She continues to whimper and she rolls herself like a baby. Oh fuck! What have I done?! How the fuck did that happen? One minute I was admiring her feisty intimidating self then I... oh God! The blood stops streaming and she keeps quiet with her eyes shut. A knock comes through and the nurse comes in with the spreads. I quickly take them and close the door then lock it. I tidy up the bed and around the room then take the pizzas and steaks and put them in a small table. I go to the bathroom and run a warm bath with salts for her. I scoope her up while she's asleep and go to the bathroom and strip her naked. I put her inside the tub and wash her body then dry it. I lotion her and make her wear

the socks, pyjamas and a gown. I take her to the room and tuck her in bed. I take the towel and wipe her blood that's on the tiles and wash it together with the bloody pants and my vest then hang them by the shower to so that they can dry. I take a long cold shower thinking about what I've done to her. Maybe I shouldn't have finger fucked her roughly, I mean she's a virgin and I used to insert one finger and make her wet before I fingerfuck her. I don't know how I did that and what changed nor crossed my mind. I decide to switch off the shower, lotion and wear clothes and when I'm done, I sit on the couch. Will she forgive me for what I've done or leave me? I mean what I did is the same as rape but I didn't have sex with her, but she bled and I hurt her, I mean it's been

only a day or two since she did the uterus test. Did I go too deep? Why can't I control my self sometimes! I groan and stand up fuming, furious at my self, I throw everything that's in front of me and throw them across the room and I end up breaking the mirror with my fist. I breath out loud and heavily, my fist bleeds and there are small glasses in it. I punch the mirror again until it falls down and I release a deep loud growl. I turn around to sit on the floor but I see Thando with a terrified expression and tears falling down her pretty chubby tears. I walk towards her but she cried and screamed and went back to the room limping. Oh fuck! I hurted her, I go to her and she rolled herself in bed, silently crying. "Thando." She shakes with fear and her round innocent

beautiful eyes are filled with tears and fear. How I hate myself for hurting her and making her cry right now. She holds her mouth trying to stop a sob from coming out.

Thando: "Nkosi, Nkosi please, please don't hurt me." She says sitting up and rolling her legs up while rocking herself. I walk towards her. "Nkosi please don't, don't come near. I'm begging you, please don't hurt me. Please step back." I close my eyes and she cries, I walk back to the room and wash my hands. Maybe I should leave, no I don't want to leave her in that state. I wash away the blood and remove the glasses then wrap a bandage around one hand. I walk back to her and she's quiet, I sit on top of the bed and she shivers.

Me: "Thando, please wake up so that we can talk."

Thando: "No, you'll hurt me."

Me: "I won't Thandolwam, if I wanted to, I would have already hurt you. I'd never hurt you Thando. "

Thando: "But you did Nkosiyomuzi! You hurt me! While I begged for you to stop but you didn't! If I didn't bleed, you wouldn't have stopped Lathi." She says with a breaking voice.

Me: "It wasn't my intention to hurt you Thando. I'm sorry, please forgive me."

Thando: "I forgive you, now leave. Please." I take her hand and she shivers and bites her bottom lip, I quickly let go of her hand.

Me: "Thando, are you scared of me?" She moves away and shakes her head. "Please tell me the truth." Tears stream down her chubby cheeks.

Thando: "Yes, I'm scared of you Nkosiyoumuzi. I no longer feel safe and secured around you like I was. I feel like I'm with a stranger, a criminal or something I don't want to think about. You scare me Nkosiyoumuzi."

Me: "Thando, will you leave me?" She looks at me with fear. "I won't let anything to you Thando. I'm still the Nkosi you know. Do you trust me?"

Thando: "I no longer trust you Nkosiyoumuzi, I feel like I don't even know who you are, I'm scared Nkosiyoumuzi and I fear for my life." I close my eyes and feel tears falling, it wasn't

my intention to make her fear for her life, to break her trust. It takes time to repair it.

Me: "Do you still love me Thando?" My eyes are still closed and I ask in a low husky deep voice. "Don't be scared of anything, feel free to talk your feelings."

Thando: "I still love you Nkosiyomuzi." At least she doesn't hate me.

Me: "Will you leave me? Take time to think about it before giving me an answer. If you leave me, I won't stop nor beg you to stay. I'll leave you alone." I open my eyes and stand up then I walk to stand near the window. My body is tense, I shove my hands deep inside my pockets and watch what's happening outside. I don't want to think, if Thando decides to leave me, I'll let her leave.

I won't beg her to stay, she's too good and innocent for someone like me. It was a matter of time until I reveal my other side. I'm glad she hasn't witnessed the other. I feel her small shaking hand touching my back, she's still scared. My body relaxes and I feel her other touching my shoulder. Her other hand let's go of my back and they massage my shoulders and I melt. I close my eyes and I feel my muscles unlocking and making weird sounds. Her little soft hands are magical, she's my home and healing pla She's my heart, wife and mother of our future children. She's my weakness and strength, my love and forever, my heaven on earth, the safest heaven. She's my comfort pillow and my shoulder to lean on. I love her and I wouldn't trade her for anything. I

would only trade my self for her and her happiness, sorrow and fears. I love her very much that sometimes scares me. I love her to the moon and back, with every fibre in my body. I will love her from infinity and beyond, even if she leaves me.

Thando:"You'll love me from infinity and beyond while we're still together, I'm never leaving you. We are in this forever, you might have scared and all but I somehow feel safe and secured in your arms. Please hold me and never let me go." I guess I was pleasure out loud. I turn and hug her very tight and she also hugs me tight, her hug is very warm and heartfelt, it's welcoming and magical. I find my self sinking deep in her love and warm arms. We hold each other in silence and with our eyes closed,only our hearts talking. I sit

down in the couch without letting go of her and she straddles me. I lye back and we fall asleep in each others arms. "I love you Lathelethu Mkhize♥️🌍" She whispers.

Me:"I love you Milisuthando Zulu♥️🌍" I kiss her forehead and sleep.

THE END!👋🌸

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT😊

SEVENTEEN♥️

NATASHA🌸

I'm woken up by my grumbling stomach. I

open my eyes and look around, it's dark outside and I'm still on top of Nkosi. I admire him, his full thick lips pouted, they're dark plum, it's like he smokes, he has a strong jawline with a clear skin and well trimmed beard. He's handsome with his mustache, I touch it and it's soft and black with his little beard and haircut. His ears are big but not that big, they are pointy but they look round, he has slim thick shiny eyebrows, they are always narrowed. "Are you staring or gazing." I look at his half closed small eyes, I peck his lips.

Me: "I'm gazing, when you were a kid, did you have chubby cheeks?" He chuckles and closes his eyes, he moves his lower body up and my clit danced. I'm so attached and addicted. I move my hips and he quickly open his eyes

and tightly hold my waist.

Nkosi:"Thando don't.I don't want to hurt you."

Me:"But Nkosi you won't hurt me!"

Nkosi:"Well, I fear hurting you again." I sulk and I feel heat in my eyes. I'm such a cry baby, I don't know how Nkosi copes with me.

"Your(kiss)tears(kiss)won't (kiss)trick (kiss)me(kiss)me(kiss)." I pull him for a hungry lustful kiss. He doesn't respond,I bite his bottom lip and he returns the kiss. He grabs my butt and give it a squeeze. I moan and he quickly pulls out.

Me:"Nkosi. "I sulk and he stands up, I wrap my legs around his waist.

Nkosi:" Thando get off." I shake my head and he moves around with me. He takes the

pizzas and steaks then calls a cleaner.

Cleaner: "Yes Sir. "

Nkosi: "Please warm these for me. If you want a slice of pizza, you can take it or a steak, you can cut it."

Cleaner: "Thank you Sir." He closes the door and we walk to the bathroom, it's repaired.

Me: "Who repaired this bathroom?" He takes a deep breath and closes his eyes.

Nkosi: "Maybe the cleaners saw it then reported it and it got repaired, I don't know

Daily new African novels download here

www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT 😊

SEVENTEEN ❤️

CONTINUATION 🌍

NATASHA 🌸

He lifts up my butt a little and something pokes my butt. I touch it and it's so huge that my hand doesn't fit and it's very warm, Nkosi groans and I try to remove it but it slips. I squeeze it and it's soft but it gets hard and becomes more big.

Me: "Nkosi what is this? Why is this thing soft but it gets hard by time?" I touch it again to feel it's length but it moves around. I hold it and it's very long, I touch something at the end of it and it's big. "Nkosiyomuzi what is this thing?" He doesn't answer me but he keeps on groaning, like he feels

pleasure in what I'm doing. I let go of it and he opens his eyes but they are half opened, very small and they are red. "What is that Nkosi?"

Nkosi: "Why did you stop now my love?" He ask in a husky deep whispering voice. I giggle. "UKhabazela loya.(It's Khabazela.)" What!? Did I touch his touch his private part?

Me:"Nkosi, you're trying to say that I touched your... Thiing!!?" He laughs and nods.

Nkosi: "Want to see it?" What does he hear his self?

Me:"No!" I tighten my hold around his neck and cross my legs behind his waist. He laughs.

Nkosi: "But you touched him my love." It pokes my butt again.

Me:"Nkosi tell him to behave! And I touched it because I didn't know what it was!"

Nkosi: "It will only behave when it's inside you." He says with a smirk.

Me:"Nkosi that thing wouldn't fit! It doesn't even fit in my hand, how will it fit in my little cookie?"

Nkosi:"But you didn't see it,how do you know that it won't fit in you?" This guy is unbelievable!

Me:"Nkosi I said it didn't fit in my hand! Do what you're here to do so that we can go."

He chuckles and I hear running water. What!?

"Nkosi are you peeing with me on you!?" He laughs and pecks my lips.

Nkosi:"But you didn't want to get off my love." He rolls a tissue and I assume that he

wipes his hands.

Me: "Nkosi wash your hands! Don't use a tissue."

Nkosi: "I'm wiping uKhabazela Thando." Oh, I hide my self in his shoulder and giggle.

"You're so clueless. You haven't change a little and I love your innocent self but now you're changing, like you're being attached or clingy." I pout and look at him.

Me: "Nkosi am I annoying you with being clingy on you?"

Nkosi: "No my love, I didn't mean if like that, you're a baby now, in the past 3 months you were not a baby. I guess it's because you're getting used and comfortable to be your self around me."

Me: "Nkosiyomuzi put me down." He walks to

the sink and washes his hands then puts me down. I wash my face and brush my teeth and go to the ward. The pizza is on top of the table, I take it and eat. I finish it and take the straws and drink the juice. I finish eating with Nkosi looking at me while eating his food, we're eating in silence. I put the juice down and climb into bed.

Nkosi: "Won't you say goodnight?" I tuck myself and try to sleep. I hear some shuffling around and I suddenly feel weight on the bed then Nkosi's cologne hits my nostrils.

Me: "Please sleep on the couch."

Nkosi: "Since when do I sleep on the couch?"

Me: "Since I don't want to be clingy and too attached."

Nkosi: "Baby I didn't mean it the bad way."

It's the first time he calls me 'baby' and I suddenly melt. "I'm sorry my baby for hurting you okay? I didn't mean to hurt your feelings. It was a good and innocent compliment because it meant that I've been doing great at making you happy and secured. I'm sorry, okay?" I nod. "You know me better than that Thando." I turn to face him and he slides in bed then pulls me to sleep in his chest.

Me:"I forgive you." He kisses my forehead.
"What time is it?"

Nkosi:"01:44, let's sleep. I have to wake up early."

Me:"Can we chat all night then you'll leave when it's time to leave? You'll sleep in the flight, please Nkosi. "

Nkosi: "That will be a bit impossible my love."

Me: "But Nkosi you didn't even promise me that you'll visit me. Nkosi am I being a burden?"

Nkosi:"No my love, of course not." I should stop fussing, maybe I'm too much for him and I demand a lot of time and attention unlike the other girlfriends he had.

Me:"Okay,sleep." I turn my back on him and move away.

Nkosi:"Are you angry at me?" I love him very much, I'm scared that this little distance between us will make him fall out of love. I feel tears falling down my cheeks. "Thando are you crying?" He looks at me and pulls me to him then turn me to face him. "I'm sorry Thando. We'll chat all-night ,okay?I'll even

visit you on weekends but don't cry." So he pities me,he's saying all of this because I'm crying. It's fine,I guess that I should give him a space to breath.

Me: "No don't come. Let's not talk. Let's sleep,you already said that you have to wake up early."

Nkosi:"But I changed my mind Thando. "

Me:"I'm sorry for being a brat,I'm sure you're tired of my complaining and ungrateful self. But no, don't go to KZN to visit me and let's sleep and drop the chat."

Nkosi: "You're very stubborn Thando. I won't sleep with you being mad at me. It's better to talk the senses back in your system."

Me: "Nkosi I said let's drop the chat."

Nkosi: "No I won't, I said I'll not sleep with you being mad at me."

Me: "You're so stubborn Nkosi, very stubborn."
"

Nkosi: "You're also stubborn but you love me like that and I love you like that too."

Me: "Well I don't and who said that I love you?" He chuckles.

Nkosi: "I'm glad that you're no longer mad at me."

Me: "Who can he mad at a cute yet scary face like yours?" He laughs.

Nkosi: "I love you with every fibre of my body."

Me: "And I love you with every cell in my body." He kisses my forehead. "What time is

it now?"

Nkosi:"02:15, drink your meds."

Me:"Okay." I get up and take the meds and drink them then slide in bed, Nkosi pulls Mr to him and I feel drowsy.

Nkosi:"I might go while you're asleep,okay? Don't get angry when you don't find me next to you. I love you, now sleep." I fall asleep.

I'm woken up by kisses on my face. I smile and think that it's Nkosi but a women's perfume hits my nostrils. I open my eyes and see my smiling mother, I return the smile.

"You loved being woken up by face kisses and I guess you haven't changed. Get up and get ready,by 07:30 we should be at the airport.

Me:" What time is it?" I yawn and sit up then stretch my body. I look besides me but I

don't see him, instead there's a letter. I get off the bed, take the letter and put in the bag that has my clothes.

Mommy: "06:18 sweetheart." I nod and walk to the bathroom. I guess Nkosi woke up early in the morning. I take a shower and when I'm done, I switch it off and step out to dry my body. I lotion and walk to the room with a towel wrapped around my body. I open the bag that has the clothes Nkosi brought for me. I take out a pair of Sissy Boy jeans, a white t-shirt and shirt then walk back to the bathroom. I wear the clothes and brush my hair, I've gained weight because my thighs and butt are little big, I should buy a weave because I'm ugly in this short hair. I walk back to the room and pack my pyjamas, morning shoes, gown and a nurse comes in

with papers. I sign them and mommy takes the bag and I take my Teddy bear and flowers then we leave the ward, it's a private ward. No wonder Nkosi used to sleep with me in bed, because if it wasn't, he would have slept on the couch, I miss him, well I guess it's because I'm used to having him around and I should give him a space to breath now. I think he has suffered enough because of my behavior. Well the flowers are still intact, I always watered and treated them. I hug my bear and think of being held by Nkosi, I'll still long to be in his arms. I should ask daddy for a cellphone. We walk to the family car and Utha steps out and pulls me in for a bear hug.

Utha:"Hello Beautiful Sis😊." She says with a warm beautiful smile, I hug her back and pull

out.

Me: "Hello Pretty 😊." She screams and jumps up and down.

Daddy: "Baby what's going on?" Utha grins and hugs daddy and he hugs him back. I guess that we all have a good beautiful bond with our father because everyone adores him.

Utha: "She called me Pretty dad, she remembered." He grins and hugs me.

Daddy: "Your memory is slowly coming back, I'm glad." The family is already out of the car and they all pull me in for a hug. "A group hug my lovely family." We all group hug and daddy breaks it by time and we hop into the car, daddy sticks out his hand and mommy takes it. Daddy smiles and mommy blushes, it's a beautiful moment to watch, he kisses

Mommy's hand and she blushes more and she brushes daddy hands. Daddy mouths 'I love you' and Mommy mouths 'me too'. Daddy stares mommy and I giggle, thinking of Nkosi, he also does the staring when I don't say what's more meaningful. Mommy giggles and removes his hand from daddy's hand.

Me: "Daddy, when did you meet mommy?"

They look at each other and laugh.

Utha: "We also want to know because you never shares your story." They stop laughing and they smile at each other.

Mommy: "Your father was the most annoying guy at school. We were not classmates but schoolmates, he (she giggles and shakes her head.) He used to take my lunch box, runaway with it and say that I should follow him."

Daddy chuckles and shakes his head.

Daddy: "And you were also annoying because you would never follow my orders, you would just sulk and walk away and I would be left with a broken heart."

Mommy: "There's this day, on the 21 of October, you took my backpack and school jersey and never gave them back to me until I followed you, my father was arriving that day and I was so scared because he'd ask me that, why did I arrive late from school. I followed you and you went to stand near the big trunk at school, we stayed there until afternoon and I got home late then got the bidding of my life." Sadness displayed in her expression and she looked daddy.

Daddy: "The next day, I saw your beautiful

thick yellow legs with green marks, you were limping and I was very afraid, scared, I was (he shakes his head looking a bit sad.) I don't know how I felt, my heart stopped beating for a moment and I ran towards you then asked that what happened to you but you slapped me with tears glittering in your beautiful eyes." Daddy looks at mommy like he's hurt or something.

Mommy: "That's because it was your fault! "

Daddy: "And I cared less about that, I still ran after you and hug you, you cries, it was good having you in my arms, even though it was under bad circumstances. I made a decision that day that, no one will ever lay a hand on you, even your father and I confessed my love for you. You played hard

to get for hours of begging you, I've never begged anyone in my life but I told my self that, I'm never letting you go and you agreed to be my partner. I loved you from the first moment I saw you getting into your grade 8 classroom."

Mommy: "I don't even know what you saw in a grade 8 learner while you were a matriculant." Daddy smiles and pulls mommy for a side hug.

Daddy:"I saw my life partner,my wife and future." He kisses mommy's forehead and they stay in each others arms. I envy mommy, she has the love of her life,they are married and mommy gave him children, they even share their moments with us-their children. I would never get a chance to share mine with

any of my babies, well I can't have them but I won't share my story with my own, I hold my tummy and think that I should remove my womb, it's already damaged and I'll only hurt my self by thinking that I'll ever bear children. Someone wipes my cheeks, I look up and it's Lomso, I didn't even notice that I shed tears. He pulls me in for a hug and I sit on top of him and burry my self in his arms and sleep.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT 😊

EIGHTEEN ❤️

NKOSIYOMUZI ❀

I decided to call Lungelo.

Lungelo: "King."

Me: "Kunjani Bafo?(How are you?)"

Lungelo: "Kuhle King, asikhali ngalutho. Kunjani ngalapho kini?(It's good King, no complaints. How are things that side?)"

Me: "It's good, it's just that I hurt Thando but it's sorted now."

Lungelo: "We'll talk about that when you're at this side. Mother wants to see her daughter in-law."

Me: "Cha Lungelo, akukwazi.(No Lungelo, it can't be)"

Lungelo: "And mother said that you should visit her, it's been months since you haven't

visited her."

Me:"Tell her that I can't visit her,not now because I'll be busy with the company right now and about Thando,tell her that she can't,she's facing a lot right now."

Lungelo: "Talk to your mother bro, why is it like you're distancing yourself from her? You know exactly the way mom loves you so call her and explain everything to her."

Me:"I can't, I'll be very busy for calls and family matters Lungelo. "

Lungelo: "King, you know exactly how mom loves you,she'll think that she did something wrong so call her."

Me:"Hey awukahle Lungelo! Yhini indaba! Kungani ukhuluma nami ingathi ukhulumisa ingane?(Hey just stop Lungelo! What's the

problem? Why are you talking to me like you're reprimanding a child?)

Lungelo: "It's because you're stubborn Nkosiyomuzi! I would say you're childish and selfish-"

Me: "Voetsek Bloody fool!"

Lungelo: "King, I didn't mean to shout, I'm sorry but th-" I just end the call, I don't know why he won't listen to me, he just loves to challenge me. I hear my flight being called, I stand up and leave. I enter the airplane and switch my cellphone to airplane mode. I take out my laptop and try to come up with solutions about the crisis we're facing at work. While catching up, I get disturbed by a voice. "What will you have sir?" I look up and see an attendant.

Me:"Whisky on the rocks."

Att:"Sorry Sir,we don't serve that here." I shake my head and think that this is not my jet.

Me:"A juice, Mango juice and English breakfast" I look back at the laptop and work. I forgot to ask Lungelo to fetch me tomorrow evening. The breakfast comes work till I can't and I decide to close my laptop and eyes.

N A T A S H A ❀

Days passed and tomorrow is my ceremony, well mine and Utha's ceremony. I'm not nervous or anything, my family said that I'll stay here in KZN for a while, even if I regain my memory and Zulu said that I'd never drive again, I fought with him until he said

that he's word is final. About Nkosi, I decided to give him a break, I haven't talked with him since we were in Switzerland. To say that I miss him would be an understatement, if I knew another for missing him I would have used it. I sometimes cry and sulk all day, I ended up not buying the cellphone because I wanted to buy it so that I can call him. I sometimes wonder if he misses me like I do or he's just busy with whatever he's busy with. "Penny of thoughts, I see." I look at the door and see a smiling Lomso. I return the smile and he comes in.

Me: "They cost dollars." He chuckles and sits next to me. I lay my head on his shoulder.

Lomso: "What are you thinking about? Talk to your friend." I sigh and he brushes my hair.

Me: "Nkosiyomuzi. I thought that he would contact or visit me but I guess, he meant his words."

Lomso: "What were his words?"

Me: "He said that he'll be busy with his company, catching up because missed work for 3/4 months."

Lomso: "You understand right?" I don't respond. "Tasha, Muzi has to catch up with his work. He gave you his undivided attention when you needed it, when you were not well, even when you were fine. He spent nights in hospital, sleeping with you in that uncomfortable hospital bed instead of sleeping in a comfortable one at the hotel. He sacrificed a lot for you, now just understand this at once. Be grateful of the

little things he did for you okay."

Me:"I am grateful of the things he did for me."

Lomso: "Does he know? Did you tell him? Do your actions show what you're saying?"

Me:"I decided to give him a space to breath, a break from my self , that's why I agreed when the parents said that I'll stay here for a while."

Lomso:"For how many months exactly?"

Me:"Maybe this month and the next one."

Lomso: "That might be a bit too much though Tasha."

Me:" No it's not, maybe it will take him a month to get back on track with his work."
He nods. "What were you doing outside?"

Lomso:" Slaughtering a cows and sheep's. Are you ready for tomorrow? And why aren't you sleeping? Don't you need your beauty sleep?"
I laugh and shake my head.

Me:"There's no need for that and I'm not sleepy yet. Tell Tina to come and sleep with me tonight, I miss her."

Lomso:" Alright Little Sis. "

Me:"Little sis is Tina, not me!" He chuckles and stands up and walks to the door.

Lomso:"It's the same." He walks out and closes the door. I stand up and change to night dress. "You're slowly getting back to your old self. I see your big ass and hips are growing."

Me:"I guess granny feeds me well and when are you also gaining weight?"

Utha: "Well Tina is dieting." She says also changing to a sleepwear.

Me:"I'd never do such thing. Imagine me,eating greens everyday. I'd rather chose a green tea." We hop into bed and we talk all night long until we sleep.

NARRATED 

The following day, the ceremonies were both done for Uthandiwe and Natasha but Natasha fainted right after the Umemulo was done. Her mother and brothers were worried about her but the family Sangoma assured them that it was nothing bad. The brothers wanted to wake her up but the Sangoma said that they shouldn't. She should wake up when she's fine. The day continued and everything went well but

Ndoniyamanzi was worried about her daughter's health. She thought about the time when she was lying in the hospital for months. She went to the hut and found the Sangoma cleaning his room.

Ndoni: "Bab'njongo, when will she wake up? I'm starting to get worried, it's been hours now and it's starting to be dark outside but she hasn't woken up."

Bab'njongo: "Uyophaphama uma ephilile Makoti. (She'll wake up when she's fine." She nods and looks at Natasha who was lying in a grass mat.

Ndoni: "I know this might be a bit too much but can I sleep with her, I want to watch her until she wakes up." Bab'njongo keeps quiet for a short period.

Bab'njongo: "You can watch her but don't sleep with her." She nods and removes her shoes, she sits on the grass mat and brush Natasha's face and weave. She sings for her but Bab'njongo stops her. "Don't sing for her Makoti, you're disturbing her peace. She nods and continues to brush her weave.

Nkosenye asks his mother about Ndoni's whereabouts and his mother says that he should go to the hut. He walks to the hut and removes his shoes before he enters the hut. He finds Ndoni brushing Natasha's face with tears streaming down her face. He walks to her and scoops her up causing her to be frightened. He sits in a bench that's inside the hut and place Ndoni on top of his lap.

Nkosenye:" Sorry to frighten you Mkami(My

Wife). Don't cry okay, she'll wake up."

Ndoni: "But what if she doesn't? What if she stays here for months without waking up? I can't survive another months without her Mageba." She says sniffing. Nkosenye hugs her tightly.

Nkosenye: "She'll wake up Ndoni, let's let her rest for a while okay? Come let's go and sleep, I'm sure you're tired."

Ndoni: "No I'll stay here and wait for her to wake up."

Nkosenye: "It's okay but let's go and get you freshen up okay?" She nods and stands up. She walks to Natasha and bend down to her level and she kisses her forehead. They both walk out and close the hut, when they're outside, they wear their shoes and it starts

to rain. Nkosenye takes Ndoni's hand and runs with her to the house.

IN THE MEANTIME 🌍

Nkosiyomuzi is drowning in work, he never gets time to meet with his friends nor check up on her daughter, family or Natasha. He's friends decided to visit him because they know that Nkosiyomuzi is a workaholic. He was busy going through paperwork when his friends invaded his office.

Lwazi: "No man, just take a break for a hour, I'm sure your eyes are tired." Nkosi looks up and he sees his friends. He removes his reading spectacles and sits back on the chair. He looks at them with a blank expression. His friends sit down on the couch and some on the table chairs.

Nkosi: "What are you doing here? In fact, why are you invading my working space?"

Bongani: "King, we're your friends, that's why we're here. Ever since you came back from Switzerland you've been drowning yourself in work."

Nkosi: "I was busy settling a deal Bongani and I have paper work to do."

Sibulele: "I'm sure you've settled the deal now and you've a PA, she can do it for you or even the COO."

Me: "I want to do it my self Sbu."

Ayabonga: "We all know that we won't win the battle. Nkosi will argue with us until midnight so let's eat and loosen up."

Bongani: "That's the only reason that made

you come here, 'food'.

Ayabonga:" And if there was a pussy, I would have come but you'll have dicks. But don't worry I had a pussy before coming here."

Sibulele:"And I also did."

Lwazi:"I'm sure we all did. Nkosi,when did you last have a pussy?" Nkosi shifts his attention to Lwazi and suddenly thinks of Natasha. He thinks that ever since he left her in the hospital bed at Switzerland,they never talked. He didn't even check whether they arrived safe or not and today is the day for her ceremony. He didn't even call her to ask how it went.

Ayabonga: "It's clear that he didn't have a pussy because he's thinking." Nkosi snaps out of his thoughts and looks at Ayabonga.

Nkosiyomuzi: "What are you'll talking about?"

Ayabonga: "When did you last release?"

Nkosi looks at them blankly and they'll burst out laughing loud. "Dude! You don't remember!? Well it means it's been a while. Doesn't your girlfriend give to you?"

Sibulele: "How does she even look like?"

Nkosi: "The past 4months and her looks don't concern you." They all laugh and Nkosi throws them a death stare and they muffle their laugh then again, Ayabonga laughs out loud.

Ayabonga: "Sorry King but did you say 4months? What are you waiting for? Because it's not like it will be her first time and I'm sure that there are no virgins that are left

now."

Nkosiyomuzi: "Yes that's what I said, 4 months and for your information, she's a virgin and I'm not rushing into anything."

Sibulele: "Nigga is whipped! Who knew that Nkosiyomuzi Mkhize would finally fall in love! I should definitely see her."

Bongani: "Lwazi, I'm sure you know how her girlfriend looks like so described her for us."

Lwazi: "She's beautiful, very beautiful and I bet that she looks more beautiful when she's natural. She has a banging b-"

Nkosi: "I dare you to finish that word, you'll meet my mean punch, I see you miss it."

Ayabonga: "King let Lwazi finish the sentence dude, so Lwazi, you say that she has a

banging body! 😊" Nkosi looks at Ayabonga with a death stare and he quickly looks down and keeps quiet. Nkosi's stares have that effect, they are very scary and unusual, he always keeps his straight face and he hardly smiles.

Bongani: "King don't look at my brother like that dude, it's like you'll kill him."

Nkosi: "And I'll kill him if he keeps on asking about my women."

Lwazi: "Speaking of your women, Lungelo called me the other day, he was worried about you and he said that you hurt Natasha. What did you do?"

Nkosi: "She slapp-" He doesn't even finish his sentence, Ayabonga jumps in.

Ayabonga: "Sorry to disturb you dude while

you're talking. I know you hate it but I have to ask you. Did you just say that, you've been slapped?!

Nkosi:" I'm sure that my voice is not that deep that you'd miss my words. And yes I did!

"Finally someone slaps King for me!" They all say in unison and they all laugh,including Nkosi.

Lwazi:"I did think that your women is feisty."
"

Sibulele: "We should meet her. I'll even buy her the latest BMW just to thank her for slapping this dude here."

Nkosi:"You'll disturbing me. As I was saying, she slapped me because I looked at some horny flirting nurse. She said that I looked

at the nurse with lustful eyes but I didn't. I didn't have any sort of attraction or lust towards her so after Thando slapped me..."

He keeps quiet for a short period of time and stands up and walks towards the big glass wall. "I fingerfucked her with four fingers." His friends all say what!?

Lwazi: "King! Were you trying to kill the poor virgin? I know you were trying to punish her, for sure but 4 fingers Nkosi? To a virgin?"

Sibulele: "Did you find out that she's a virgin while you were punishing her?"

Nkosi: "I knew that long before I fingered her."

Bongani: "Nkosi! What made you stop? Because I know for a fact that you didn't

stop your self."

Nkosi:"I stopped when I saw blood. "

Lwazi:"Nkosiyomuzi are you crazy!?" Nkosi quickly turn and glares Lwazi. Nkosi hates being insulted and disrespected. "No, you won't give me that look and you won't do anything! What were you thinking Nkosi?"

Nkosi:"I don't know that happened man! It just happened! You should have seen the way she looked at me,the way she was scared. "

Sibulele: "Of course she should have been scared because we're also scared of you!

Nkosi do you know how powerful you're and how big your hands are? Do you know how long your fingers are? I wonder how she felt and what did she do afterwards."

Nkosi:"She-"

Sibulele: "No! I don't want to know! I'm out of here." He takes his keys and cellphone on top of the table and storms out.

Bongani: "I think you should go back to the anger management classes Nkosi."

Lwazi: "Bonga he tried, you also know that but that didn't help, instead it made him worse. I don't know what Nkosi needs really." They'll keep quiet and look at Nkosi. He takes his cellphone and disappears into the black shiny door leaving his friends shocked.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

I N S E R T 😊

NINETEEN♥

NKOSIYOMUZI✿

I walked into the bathroom and stood before the mirror. I look at my reflection and ask my self that 'what went wrong?', I sigh and wash my face and dry it with the towel. I sit on top of the toilet seat and make a call.

Smart: "Skhulu(Boss)."

Me:"Send me Lizwilezulu Zulu's cellphone number. Now." After my words, I end the call and wait for the number. I look at my cellphone's screen and see my sleeping beaut. I suddenly long to feel her touch and touch her, to feel her soft,smooth, flawless skin. My heart yearns to see her. I'm disturbed by a message, I look at it and it's Zulu's number and home address. I stand up and open the

door, when I step out of the bathroom, it quickly closes. Lwazi, Bongani and Ayabonga are still here, they quickly look at me when they hear my footsteps. "You're still here."

Lwazi: "We wanted to leave after we saw you." I nod and take my car keys and my blazer.

Me: "Let's leave." We all go out and we step into my PA's office. "Clear every meeting I have, schedule it for next week."

Sphesihle: "If I may ask sir, where are you going? "

Me: "KZN." I say moving to the door, Bongani opens it and we walk to the elevator.

Bongani: "You're going to visit your family?"

Me: "No, I'm going to Thando. Forgive me for

what happened at the office and how our lunch went because of my behavior."

Lwazi: " Trust Nkosi to never say 'sorry' ,
Bafo, does is hurt to say sorry?"

Ayabonga: "Maybe his dick will never rise again when he says 'sorry' ." We all laugh at his statement, trust Ayabonga to say stupid things.

Me:"Why do you say that? "

Ayabonga: "Because you always have a bulge dude! Or is it that huge?" I look at him awkwardly and look at my dick, I don't have a bulge moss, I look at them and they're all looking at it.

Me:"Heey! Why are you're all checking my dick? You're all awkward damn!" They chuckle and shake their heads.

Bongani: "Dude, twin is telling the truth here. You always have a bulge, is it because you haven't been shagging?" We all laugh. And the elevator drops us in the parking lot. I step out and they follow.

Me: "Fuck off. See you when I see you." I step into my car.

Lwazi: "Sure man." I close the door and call Zulu.

Zulu: "Zulu speaking."

Me: "Zulu, can you give Thando the phone." He chuckles.

Zulu: "You're going to annoy me with your demands Muzi. Why didn't you introduce yourself at least? If you don't care about my health."

Me: "You already know me. Where's Thando?"
"

Zulu: "In some room sleeping."

Me: "Wake her up and give her the phone."

Zulu: "She can't be woken up. I was given an instruction not to."

Me: "By whom? Her?"

Zulu: "No by the elders."

Me: "Why?"

Zulu: "It does not concern you. It's family matters."

Me: "Well it does because she's my family. "

Zulu: "You claim to be her family but you didn't check up on her ever since she left the hospital." Zulu is so stubborn, he'll drag

this conversation to when am i going to marry her sister. I decide to drop the call because it's useless to have a char with his stubborn head. I drive to my house and pack few clothes and toiletries for the road. I call my pilot and tell him to get the jet ready. I take a quick shower and warm yesterday's pizza and I eat. After I'm done, I take my bag and run to the jet and hop in. It takes off and I take a nap.

N A T A S H A ❀

I slowly open my eyes but sun rays quickly blind me. I rub my eyes and open them then look at my surroundings, I'm in Bab'njongo's hut. I sit up and I see my mother sleeping next to me on her own grass mat and a throw around her. I stretch my arms and I moan

and I get a quickly experience a terrible headache. The door opens and bab'njongo comes in. "Ntandokazi kaBaba." I smile and reply.

Me:"Baba." I feel something squeezing me and I close my eyes and I'm quickly showered by face kisses. I open my eyes and see my smiling mother.

Mommy:"Baby you're awake." I smile back .

Me:"Yes I am."

Mommy:"I thought that you'll wake up after months. "

Me:"History won't repeat itself mommy. I love you." Bab'njongo clears his throat and we look at him.

Bab'njongo: "Drink here." I take the mug and

drink it. This drink is very sour. I immediately frown after finishing it. I give him back the mug and wipe my lips. "I believe you're now good and healed." I nod. "What do remember that happened before the accident.

Me: "That I'm a medical doctor, I worked at JHB's biggest hospital. I'm in a relationship with a Mkhize."

Bab'njongo: "I'm sure you knew that after the accident."

Me: "I remember being awarded 7 certificates in grade 10 and my mother and father promised to buy me a house and a car when I reach 28 years without a baby."

Bab'njongo: "Is it true Makoti?" I look at my mother and she's silently crying with tears

streaming down her cheeks and a smile that's formed in her lips.

Mommy: "Yes, it's true. She used to remind us mostly on her birthdays. She said that, she'll never forget our promise even though she's 15 years. Baby, is your memory back?" I smile and nod. She quickly pulls me in for a tight heartfelt hug and sobs. "I thought you'd never remember me, us, your family. I thought you'd never remember the promises I made to you." I rub her back.

Me: "The doctors said that I'll regain my memory back eventually. "

Mommy: "You were taking too much time to regain it."

Bab'njongo: "Let's all go to the main house."

Mommy pulls out and stands up. She takes my

hands and helps me to also stand up. My legs get wobbly like I'm going to fall and mommy quickly support's me. "Mlethe lana kimi,ngiyom'beletha. (Give her to me, I'll carry her on my back.)" Mommy nods and bab'njongo carries me and we walk to the house. Mommy opens the main door and every one is watching morning news. They all turn and jlook at us and daddy quickly stands up and walks to me.

Daddy: "What's wrong with my daughter bab'njongo?" He carries me and walks to a 3seater couch that is occupied by my brothers. They quickly stand up and daddy's puts me, Bhut'Zulu feels my temperature.

Me:"What do you know about feeling temperatures because last I checked you

didn't know how to."

Zulu:"How do you know that? Wait, Tasha?"

He says with hopeful expression.

Me:"Yes, I've regain my memory." Utha screams and Bhut'Zulu crashes me. "Bhuti you're killing me!" Daddy quickly removes Zulu and hugs me.

Daddy:"Oh my baby, you don't know how much I missed yourself. "I hug him back and pull out.

Mommy:" You're killing my child Mageba."

Daddy: "How could I? I missed her and I even missed it when she used to sit on my lap and say 'Daddy feed me'." They all laugh and I pout my lips and sulk.

Lomso: "She's such a baby😊.."

Lizwi: "More especially when mom shouts at her and she hides behind dad-crying and holding his waist from behind." I also laugh because that's what a baby does when it's hiding.

Mommy: "And her father be like- 'Mkami yeka ingane, thula baby, ngiyomshaya uMa uyezwa? (My wife leave the child, be quiet baby, I'll beat mommy okay?'" Mommy says imitating Daddy's voice and he looks at me laughing.

Me: "Mommy daddy doesn't talk like that."

Daddy: "It's good to see you all smiling and laughing. The past few months have been hard for us but I'm glad that we remained strong even though it was also hard. I love you all." We smile and I hug him.

Me: "I love you too daddy. "

Utha: "I swear, the way dad and Tasha love each other, it's like mommy comes second to dad and dad's favorite is Tasha."

Daddy: "Your mother is my first love and you are all my favourite. "

Lomso: "No dad, we'll know that Tasha is your favourite."

Daddy: "But that doesn't mean that I don't love you."

Me: "Don't steal my spotlight Lomso." They all laugh and Grandma appears and tells us to come and eat. I quickly jump up and engulf her in a hug and we chat a storm.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT 😊

TWENTY ❤️

NKOSIYOMUZI 🌸

I arrived here in Durban last night and I didn't go to see Natasha because it was late and I thought that she may be asleep so I drove to my house and slept. And yes, I have a house here in Durban, well my parents don't know that I own one because father is hell bent to let his children stay in their own houses, he says he wants his family together. So I woke up early in the morning, it's 06:53 and went to take a shower. After showering, I brushed my teeth and went to my closet and took my bleached blue denim jean and a white tee. I combed my hair and wore my secret

socks and a black Nike takkie. I took my car keys and went to buy somethings for Thando then drove back to my house and placed everything in place. The time is 08:23 and I'm driving to her home, while driving, I get a call from Luyanda-My brother. At home, I'm the first born, followed by Lungelo, Lilitha, Luyanda, Lelethu, Lwandile and the last born is my daughter-Lolwethu. I take the call and he quickly greets.

Luyanda: "Bhut' omdala."

Me: "Yanda, how are you? "

Yanda: "I'm good, how are you?"

Me: "I'm fine. I'm sure you didn't call me to ask about my health so what is it?"

Yanda: "It's nothing much bro, I just called to check up you and chat because it's been a

long time since we last did."

Me:"Forgive me to forget about you. How are you? Like really."

Yanda:"I'm stressed bhuti. I'm in love with someone, I really love her but-(he sighs) she has a kid and I'm not ready to be some stepfather to some kid."

Me:"What did I teach you Luyanda? The second thing I taught you?"

Luyanda: "Except to compromise, it's to take responsibly."

Me:"Responsibility for what? "

Yanda: "For my actions, but I didn't make her pregnant."

Me:"Is she your responsibility? "

Yanda: "Yes she is."

Me: "Her responsibility is also your?"

Yanda: "My responsibility. But bro-" I cut him off.

Me: "Don't make things hard for yourself Luyanda and end up hurting the poor girl. If you can't take care of her, leave her alone because if you're involved with a woman that has a child, first-love her child then love her because you love a person with her all.

Mistake, behavior, responsibilities and etc. Now if you can't, leave her alone. You also wouldn't want your girlfriend to behave like you do when it comes to your child. Now sit down and think straight about your woman and her responsibility. "

Yanda: "Now you're making things very hard for me King." I chuckle.

Me:"There's nothing hard here. Compromise and take responsibility. That's all. Look I have to go, we'll talk later." I hung up, I know he'll say thank you and drag the conversation, that's why I hung up. I'm 3houses away from Thando's home. I'm thinking of going inside but I don't want to disrespect her father because that would be a total disrespect. I look around and I see a young lady walking down the road. I hoot and she looks at my car, I signal her to come and she does. She's not even hesitating to come, I guess she's not scared of being kidnapped. She walks to my side and I lower the window. "Hey" she says with a huge smile on her face. I just look at her blankly.

Me:"Go to that house and call Natasha for me." I take out my cellphone and search for

her clear picture. "This is her, tell her that, I ask her to come to me."

Lady: "And who are you?"

Me: "Her man. Now go and here." I give her a R200 she thanks me and I close the window. A message comes through and it's from my mother.

~•Why did you abandon your Dear? Your love of your life? You know that I've never sent you a text, but today I do because I fear that you'll see my call and reject it like you always do. Your mother loves you and misses her son.~ I didn't notice that I rejected my mother, I never did and it's the first time she sends me a text because she usually calls me and we would chat for hours. I quickly call her back and she immediately answers.

Dear:"Elethu." My hear melts when she calls me like that but what I notice is that, her voice sounds like she has been crying. I quickly panic.

Me:"Dear what's wrong? Why are you crying? Did father done something that hurt you? But why? He has never hurt you? Mom tell me what's wrong? What's happening? You know if you don't answer me I'll drive right now and come to you. Dear t-" I stop when I hear her laughing and I suddenly stop panicking and my heart becomes warm.

Dear:"How will I answer you if you keep on throwing bombing questions? I'm glad that you called, I was so worried and hurt that you haven't been checking up on me, more especially your daughter. We even

considered to get in a jet and come to you but your father stopped me. Why did you abandon us Lathelthu?"

Me: "I'm sorry Dear, I didn't notice that I did, I was so caught up in work and forgot about my loved ones. Please forgive me my love of my life."

Dear: "I will but on one condition."

Me: "I'll come to you Dear but it's going to be a surprise."

Dear: "How di-" I see Thando walking towards my car, she's so beautiful. She's more thick and light in complexion. She has beautiful walks, it's like she walks on roses or something beautiful that she doesn't want to ruin. She comes close to my car and I see that she's not smiling or anything.

"Lathelethu! I'm talking to you! Why don't you answer me?" I even forgot that I was talking to my mother.

Me: "Dear, I'll call you again later. " I hung up before she utters another word and I step out of the car. Thando steps back and looks at me with an emotionless expression, okay, what's wrong? Because she would have jumped on me the minute I stepped out of my car. "Baby come and give your man some love." I say with a huge smile on my face. I'll finally feel her touch and hold against my stiff body.

Thando: "What are you doing here Nkosiyomuzi and why are you here? I'm not going to give you love nor anything because you'll get love from where you come from and

I don't want to. Now tell me, what are you here for?" What the fuck!?

Me: "What kind of question is that? I'm here to see you and talk to you Thando."

Thando: "Well I don't and I'm here to tell you that." With that said she turns her back on me and starts to walk away but I quickly hold her hand to stop her from going but she yanks her hand and slaps me with the back of her hand.

Me: "What the fuck?!" She quickly turns to look at me with fear all over her eyes.

Thando: "Nkosi I'm sorry." She says with tears glittering in her eyes, I mean I should be the one with tears because I'm the One who got a slap. A tear falls from her eye and when I walk towards her, she quickly cries.

"Please Nkosi don't, I said I'm sorry." With that said, she runs away from me with tears all over her eyes, so much that I could say they're blinding her. Why is she crying? I quickly think of the day that she slapped me and I hurt her, she's scared and she thinks that I'll do it again. I quickly run after her and when she's about to fall, I quickly grab her waist and she crushes into me. I look at her and she's crying with her eyes tightly closed and her hands on her lips, she's so beautiful, why did I hurt her in the first place?. "Nkosi please don't, I promise, I'll never slap you again, I'm sorry, please don't hurt me." Her body is tense against mine, what did I do to Thando? Why did I hurt her? Will she always be scared of me?

Me: "Thando I won't hurt you, I'm sorry, I'm

sorry my love." I wrap my arms around her body and she tenses more. I want to let go of her but I don't want to, I want her in my arms. I brush her back until she stops crying and tensing. "Ngiyaxolisa Thandolwami, bengingaqondile ukukwethusa. Angisobe ngiphinde ngikuLimaze Sithandwa sami. Ngiyaxolisa. (I'm sorry Thandolwam, I didn't mean to frighten you. I'll never ever hurt you again my love. I'm sorry.)" I kiss her forehead and let her stay in my arms for a while. I squeeze her to ensure her that I mean what I say and for her to relax and she relaxes and snakes her hands around my waist and holds me tightly. I kiss the top of her head. "I'm sorry and I love you okay?" She nods, even though it's not the answer I expected, I settle for it. "Come, let's go to

my car." I let go of her waist and she also let's go of mine, I look at her and she looks down, I raise my hand to wipe off her tears but she tightly closes her eyes and bites her bottom lips, she thinks that I'll slap her. I so want to cry loud and groan out loud right now to release the anger that I'm feeling right now but I don't want to scare her away. How am I going to make her not to be scared of me again? I put my hands in my pockets. "Thando open your eyes, I said I won't hurt you. I wanted to wipe off your tears." She slowly opens her eyes and wipes her tears, still looking down. "Thando do you still want to come with me?" She keeps quiet and nods after seconds. The way she's so mute, it's like I said she must not utter a word. I also nod and she walks to my car, I follow her and

she opens the passengers door and hops in then closes the door. I also walk to my side and do the same. I stick out my hand for her to touch it and she does, it's so soft and small. I hold her hand with my hands, close my eyes and blow it then kiss it. I open my eyes and look at her and she's looking at me with shiny eyes, she moves from her seat and sits on top of me then wipes my cheeks, I didn't even feel my self shedding tears. She smiles faintly and kisses my lips. How I longed to feel her lips against mine. I kiss her back and she kisses me slowly, passionate and I pour my love to her. She pulls out slowly and she smiles. "Thank you." And by that, I know that she forgave me. She wraps her arms around my waist and puts her head on top of my chest then looks outside. I start the engine

and drive to my house with her on top of me.

Daily new African novels download here

www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT 😊

TWENTY ONE ❤️

NATASHA 🌸

"Baby." I turn my head and look in another direction. "Baby." I slowly open my eyes and see a smiling Nkosi. "Baby wake up." I smile and sit up straight then rub my eyes. I look at my surroundings and we are in front of a beautiful house.

Me: "Where are we?"

Nkosi:"Our home." Our home? I look at him with a confused expression. "Still in Durban my love but not in my parents house." I nod and open his door, I remove my legs around him and step out of the car. I stretch my body and a fresh breeze fans my face. The atmosphere is so good here. "You like it?" I look at Nkosi and smile.

Me:"Yes, I do." He comes next to me, I'm still scared of him. Even when he comes to me, I feel like he'll hurt me or something. I look down because I don't want him to see that I'm still scared of him. He holds my hand and I try by my all to relax, he lets go of my hand and I look at him and he's looking down. I really want to get over this little fear that I have because it hurts him and it's visible. I touch his hand and he looks at

me. "Come, let's go and show me our home."
He nods and he shows me around. The interior designs are beautiful, touch of white, brown and gold but here and there. We walk in a patio, I look around and I see a garden, it's beautiful. "You have a beautiful house Khabazela." I say with a careless smile, hoping that he relaxes because he looks like he's walking in eggshells. His lips form a small smile

Nkosi: "Thank you MaNdaba." I grin and walk to him, I hold his hands and look at him, straight in the eye.

Me:"I love you Nkosiyomuzi Lathelethu Mkhize. I still do and I'll never stop because I developed feelings for you the day your cologne was all over my white blouse. I'll not

leave you, don't be scared." He smiles and his smile is beautiful but his grin is so bad.

Nkosi: "I love you too Milisuthando, I loved you the first day you stepped in Lwazi's office, your small, calm, soft voice captured my heart before I set my eyes on your beautiful face and when I did, your beautiful smile made me feel weak as it still does. I can't help but be scared that you'll leave me because I see that you're still afraid of me Thando and I don't know how I'll make you trust me again. I'm sorry that I broke the little trust you have on the stranger that is me. Wait, Thando, how do you remember- Thando! You regained your memory!" He grins so hard and spins me around.

Me: "Nkosi put me down, you'll make me

dizzy." He puts me down and the grin that he has is priceless.

Nkosi: "I'm sorry my love. It's just that I'm very happy. Thando!" He coops my face and kiss me very slowly, gently and very passionate. I melt and I feel my knees failing me. He lifts me up and holds my but and I wrap my legs around his waist then hold the back of his head and kiss him back. We kiss each other deep and slowly, very gentle.

Nkosi is a very very good kisser! And I'm falling hard for him. He pulls out slowly and smiles very sexy. I return the smile and he pecks my lips. "You're going to make fall if you smile so beautifully because my knees are getting weak." I blush and look down. "You're so beautiful when you blush." I giggle and hide my face on his chest.

Me: "Nkosi stop making me blush. "

Nkosi: "I'm sorry but I can't, I'm happy when I see you smiling and laughing." I look at him and smile then peck his lips.

Me: "Put me down know." He puts me down and we walk to the table, he pull out a chair for me, I smile and thank him. He opens the lids that are on top of each plate that's in this table and I smile very hard when he reveals goodies. "Nkosi!" I squeal in excitement and clap my hands. Nkosi chuckles and he dishes up for me then gives me the plate and sits down. I quickly take the cupcake and eat. Oh my god! They're so good and smell great! I moan and close my eyes. The person who made these cupcakes deserves an award!

Nkosi: "Baby stop moaning." I open my eyes

and see Nkosi looking at me with a smile, its good to see him smiling. "You're so beautiful." I blow him a kiss and continue eating. I finish all of them and pour my self a drink. I gulp it down and burp. I giggle and apologize. "I guess you're full now."

Me:"Very full!" I say with a smile

Nkosi: "Good to hear, now come and thank me." I walk to him and straddle him. I look at him straight in the eye and brush his cheeks. "I love you." He says looking me straight in the eye.

Me:"I love you too." I kiss him and he holds my small wait. His hands roam around my body until they land in my butt. He grabs it and I moan then my hands roam around his back. He pulls out and kisses my neck while

removing my crop top. After removing he kisses my breasts and sucks my nipples. I moan out and tilt my head. He stands up and I hold his neck and he walks to his room. He kicks the door and puts me on top of the bed. He lyes on top of me and I remove his tee. He stops sucking my breast and removes my tight short pant with an underwear. He looks at my cookie and thighs. He bits his bottom lip and kisses my cookie.

Nkosi: "You're very sexy with those stretch marks Thando." He kisses my hips and thighs lightly and licks my cookie. I moan and he opens my legs, I hide my face and he chuckles. "You're very shy Thando." He spreads them a little wide and licks my clit. I moan and put my leg on top of his shoulder, he chuckles and nibbles my clit, I shove his

head on my cookie and lift up my waist so that he can lick my cookie and he does. He shoves his tounge in my cookie and holds my waist, he eats me up until I start to shake and reach an orgasm leaving me breathless. He let's go of my waist and it hits the bed,he looks at me and smiles. "Your moans are so sexy and you're more sexy when you reach your orgasm."

Me:"Nkosi, I'm ready, take my innocence. " I say after I have catches my breath.

INSERT 😊

TWENTYONE ❤️

CONTINUATION 🌐

NKOSIYOMUZI 🌸

Me: "I can't Thando." I say as I try to move away from her. But she pins me on top of the bed and gets on top of me. She unbuttons my jean and I hold her hand. "Thando no, don't." She kisses my lips continuing to unzip my jean. "Thando no." I try to sit up but she pushes me down. She pulls my jean down and sits on top of Khabazela and kisses me. Why is she so eager about me taking her innocence? I try to remove her but she holds my neck and starts to grind her virgina on top of my bulge. She's so warm against it and I fall for her trick, I hold her small waist and help her. My bulge becomes more hard and it starts to hurt. I move Thando's butt a little as I try to remove my bulge on my boxer pant but I stop and quickly remove her and put her on top of the bed and I sit on

the edge of the bed with my back against her.

Thando: "Nkosi why don't you take my innocence?"

Me: "Thando I can't please understand. "

Thando: "Nkosi why? Because I'm ready."

Me: "No, you're not, it's just that you're sexually aroused." I stand up and wear my jean.

Thando: "Yes I am sexually aroused but I'm ready Nkosi. Nkosi kungani ungala?" I zip my jean and button it then look at her. She's still naked. "It's been months since we've been together but you still don't want to have sex with me. Why Nkosi?"

Me: "I can't Thando. I'll take your innocence

when we're married but not now."

Thando: "Nkosi! You want me to wait for a marriage?" Me: "Thando, there's no need for us to rush into sex, we still have time too and I won't take your innocence while you're not married. If you were not a virgin, I would have slept with you but now you're a virgin and I can't. I respect your father. Come, let's get you cleaned up." She just looks at me and walks to the bathroom and bangs the door. And just like that, I know that she's angry at me. I decide to go and set a picnic lunch for us in the garden but first I check the time and it's 10:39. I take all the necessary things that I'll need for the lunch and go outside. I lay down a sheet and pillows then put the goodies in a basket and take Ferrero Rocher chocolate and throw them on top of the

sheet. After I'm done, I go back to the house and I find Thando descending the stairs wearing my grey VQ vest and Adidas flip-flops. I walk to her and try to hold her but she changes her direction and walks to the kitchen. I sigh and decide to go and take a shower. I shower and when I'm done, I lotion and wear my black short and white tee with black push-ins. I leave the room and go to the kitchen, I see Thando eating a cold sandwich, looking outside near the window. I sneak and hold her waist from behind and kiss her neck.

Thando: "Leave me alone Nkosi." She says trying to break free from my hold but I tighten it and press my bulge on her butt but since she's short, it pokes her back. "Nkosi your thing is poking my back."

Me: "Now it's a thing but you wanted it."

Thando: "And you deprived me it so tell it to back off." I turn her around, lift her up and put her on top of the counter. I kiss her lips and pull her close to me and she holds my neck pulling me down. I pull out and smile with my charming smile. She smiles back and looks down.

Me: "You forgive me right?" She shakes her head. "What do you want me to do then?" She looks at me and blushes and it's like she's shy. "Tell me what is it baby and I'll give it to you on a silver plate." She looks down and plays with her hands. "My baby is shy but don't worry, I know exactly what she wants." I lift her chin up with my index finger and kiss her hungrily. She returns the

favour and it's like she was never shy. I make her lie on the kitchen counter and lift up her vest revealing her small cookie. She has no undergarment on. I lick and flick her clit while fingerfucking her and she moans so sexily and loud. I muff her until she reaches her orgasm, leaving her breathless. Her eyes are closed and her mouth is opened, I slip in my tongue on her open mouth and suck her tongue. She pulls out, gasping for air and I let go of her tongue.

Thando: "Lathi!" I chuckles and leave her alone, I take cleaning chemicals and tell her to move. She removes and tries to stand on her feet but her knees fail her and I catch her. I laugh at her and put her on the couch and walk back to the kitchen and clean the counter. After I'm done, I look for a towel

and go to wipe her.

Me: "Open your sexy legs my love." She opens them and I wipe her then kiss her inner thighs and she moans. I close her legs and chuckle. "You get horny so easily Thando."

Thando: "It's because of you." I pick her up and walk to the garden. "Where are you taking me?" I look at her and peck her lips.

Me: "To our picnic lunch." She nods with a smile and I put her on the sheet.

Thando: "Thank you baby, it's very beautiful."

Me: "My pleasure love." We eat while chatting. After finishing the food, I lie down and she lies on top of me and I let her. We talk more while getting to know each other deep. It's almost sunset when we pack every thing and

go inside. We walk to our bedroom and I give her my hoodie, underwear and my gymtights to wear. She takes them and we go out. I open the door for her and she steps in and buckles the sitbelt and I do the same. I drive to her home and she's very silent. I look at her and it's like she's sad. I hold her hand. "Baby what's wrong?" She looks at me and I park aside and kill the engine then turn to look at her.

Thando: "It's just that, I know that I'll see you for a very long time and I'll miss very much since I don't know when we'll see each other and when I'll go back to Jo'burg."

Me: "I'll also miss you baby but don't be sad okay. I'll still come and visit you. I'll come and take you out tonight okay?"

Thando: "Okay." She looks like she's not convinced and I know the reason.

Me: "I promise Thandolwami." She smiles and I lean in for a kiss and we kiss, I'll miss her kisses, she's a good kisser for someone who didn't know how to. "You're a good kisser." She smiles and pecks my lips.

Thando: "That's because I was taught by a very good experienced kisser." I laugh and she joins me.

"You have a beautiful laugh and it's good to see you laughing." We say in unison and we look into each other's eyes with a smile on our faces. "I love you." We say in unison and she blushes while I grin.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT 😊

TWENTY TWO ❤️

NATASHA 🌸

Me: "So what should I wear?" He sits up straight and starts the engine.

Nkosi: "Anything you're comfortable at." He says as he drives off.

Me: "Okay, that's easy. "

Nkosi: "My love."

Me: "Baby." He chuckles and shakes his head.

Nkosi: "I told you countless times to not use that name because I use it to you since you're a baby but let's leave that aside. My

mother wants to see you." Okay, I didn't expect that. He looks at me, probably wanting to see my reaction.

Me:"It's okay, we can meet. She'll pick up a place and I'll be there."

Nkosi: "Okay. What if my whole family wants to see you or she invites you for dinner?"

Me:"I'll tell her that I'll have to first ask for permission to my father and focus on the road now, I don't want to be involved in an accident again." I say looking outside and it starts drizzling.

Nkosi:"Seems like you got everything covered and no, you'll never be involved again." He says turning on the heat and focusing back on the road. "Do you sometimes get cold?"

Me:"Uhm nope, I don't."

Nkosi: "Do you keep your self warm though?"

Me:"No I don't because the operation healed."

Nkosi:"Even if it did Thando, you have to keep yourself warm at time and especially at night. I'll have to remind you every night. Do you have a cellphone? "

Me:"No, I don't. I was going to buy it but I decided to not because I said that I'll give you space to breath because I was nagging you at the hospital. "

Nkosi:"Who said that you were nagging me?"

Me:"No one, I just thought that I did since I was always complaining, sulking and questioning every move you made and never

giving you a space to breath, relax and just be yourself without always answering my questions and dealing with my complaints." He stops the car and that's when I notice that he's two houses away from home. He unbuckles his belt and looks at my direction, stretching his arms towards me.

Nkosi: "Come here." I unbuckle my belt and move from my seat and he holds me then makes me straddle him.

Me:"Nkosi I'm sorry for being a baby the past few weeks. I'm sorry for always complaining, sulking at you, questioning every move and everything you do and say. I know that I don't have an explanation to tell you why I did that but I'm sorry and I guess that I was just being clingy and getting too

comfortable. I'm sorry for being ungrateful while you spent your money and paid for my operation, while you dropped your work for me and decided to be with me, while you waited for me for months, while you supported me, fed me, clothed me and loved me. I'm now very grateful for everything you have done for me and I promise you that, I'll be supportive, I'll trust you and stop questioning you, I'll respect you and forever love you Mumbomhlophe. "I say my words while looking him straight in the eye and holding his hands.

Nkosi:" You don't know how I waited for you to say those words and how I longed to hear them coming out of your mouth. I'm grateful that you acknowledge your faults and apologise for them but it was and it's still my

responsibility to do everything for you. I know it's been 4 months since we've been together but I'm free and safe to say that, I'll be with you for the rest of my life while loving you and taking care of your self." He seals his words with a passionate kiss and he pulls out after few minutes and I hug him. I don't want to go and let go of him, I love Nkosi very much and I'll be very broken if we would separate. He hugs me back and I hold his waist tightly and lay my head on top of his chest while taking in his scent, his cologne is the very same one that smelt my white blouse. He snuggles his face on my neck.

Me: "I missed being in your arms and sleeping in your chest while you wrapped your arms around my body."

Nkosi: "I missed your touch, your voice, I missed feeling your skin against mine and I missed having you in my arms and you sleeping in my arms while I get to see you drifting to sleep but more especially, I missed you." He squeezes me and we stay in that position for what seemed like 10 minutes. "Baby you have to go back home, I'm sure you're parents are worried about your whereabouts and safety."

Me: "I don't want to let you go and I told my father that I'm going to you. I'll ask him to let me have a sleepover to your house."

Nkosi: "If he doesn't allow you to come, don't pressure him okay?"

Me: "Yes I'll not pressurize him."

Nkosi: "Good, now move, I'll walk you to your

gate." I open the door and get off and he follows me and closes the door. "I don't know why you don't cover your head with the hoodie's hat." He says covering my head with it and scoops me up.

Me:"Nkosi there's no need for that."

Nkosi: "No, there is. You'll get a cold." I huff and hold his back with m hands and hide my face on his chest. He walks until he stops and puts me down and I let go of his back. "How will I get hold of you?"

Me:"I'll call you with the landline."

Nkosi: "It's okay. Come here." I move close to him and he bends his back and I stood on tiptoe to reach his lips and I do. We kiss and he lifts me up. After few minutes, I pull out because he seemed like he won't and he puts

me down. "I'll see you in few." I smile and turn to open the gate, it does and I could feel his eyes on my back when I walk to the main door. I turn and wave my hand and blow him a kiss.

I open the door and I find everyone amused. I get in and they all keep quiet and look at me. I look at my father and he's looking at me like he's angry- I don't know and I turn to look at Bhut'Zulu, he chuckles and shakes his head then look aside. I look down and fiddle with my hands. "Is this the time to arrive at home Natasha?" My father says with a stern voice. I shake my head.

Mommy: "But Mageba it's not even 7 o'clock."
I look at the wall watch and the time is 18:48.

Daddy: "Cha Mkami, akusisokhathi sokuthi ingane ingabuya ngaso ekhaya lesi. (No my wife, it's not the time whereby a child can come back home.)" He says with a dismissive voice and my mother keeps quiet. "Zikuphi impahla zakho Natasha? Usunephunga lendoda. (Where are your clothes Natasha? You even smell a man.)" I keep quiet and he bangs the table causing me to scream and move to the door. "Phendula Milisuthando!! Ngangikuthengele impahla zamadoda Milisuthando?!(Answer me Milisuthando!! Did I buy you man's clothes Milisuthando?!)" I shake my head with tears streaming down my cheeks. "Pho ukhalelani Milisuthando? Uyazi uyangicasula Milisuthando! Ungenza ngifune ukushaya!(Then why are you crying Milisuthando? You know you make me angry

Milisuthando! You make me want to beat you up!)" I shake with fear and I try to wipe my tears but they keep on falling.

Mommy: "Cha Mageba, isibuyile phela ingane manje futhi iphephile.(No Mageba, the child is back now and she's safe.) " She stands up and embraces me. I cry and she walks me to my bedroom.

Daddy:"Uyisakuphi lengane Mkami?(Where are you taking this child my wife?)" I freeze and we look at him. "I'm still talking to her." I thought that he'll say that I should go to where I came from.

Mommy: "But you're not talking to her, you're shouting her and you know how she is when she gets shouted. Please calm down, you'll talk to her tomorrow when you're no

longer angry."

Zulu: "Inkinga yakho Ma hileyo, uyamutetemisa. Umenza ingane uNatasha. (That's your problem Ma, you're spoiling her. You're making her a child.) "

Mommy: "I won't be told by you Lizwilezulu on how I should raise my child." She says suddenly like she's angry or offended.

Daddy: "Zulu, don't talk like that to your mother." He looks at me. "I'll deal with you tomorrow." With that said, he leaves the sitting room and my mother goes to the kitchen and comes back with pills and water.

Mommy: "Come, let's go." We go to the room and she sits on top of the bed. "Did you eat?" I nod. "Here, drink them and sleep. We'll talk tomorrow when I come here and check you up.

Need anything?"

Me: "Please tell Bhut'Zulu to call Nkosi and tell him that, I'm not making it for the date."

Mommy: "My poor baby, I'll call him by myself baby because I doubt that your brother will. I love you and sleep tight." I take the pills with water and drink them and she tucks me in bed then I sleep, I guess I won't go out with Nkosi anymore. She kisses my forehead and I drift off.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

INSERT 😊

TWENTY THREE ❤️

NARRATED

Nkosiyomuzi drove back to his house to get ready for tonight's dinner date with his love. He freshened up and wore a bleached blue jean and navy tee with his jean jacket. He brushed his haircut and sprayed himself with his cologne. He takes his carkeys and cellphone then leaves the house. He gets into his car and drives off to Natasha's home. He looks at his watch and the time is 19:57. He hopes that Natasha's father will let her sleepover his house and he arrives at Natasha's home and parks at the road, opposite the gate. He looks at his cellphone and he sees no missed call and the time is now 20:15. He stares his phone for minutes and looks at the gate hoping to see Natasha but he doesn't. He calls Zulu but Zulu

rejects his calls and Nkosi gets pissed off. He lyes back at the carseat and stares the roof of his car. His phone rings and he takes it and looks at the number and he doesn't recognise it, he decides to answer it and keeps quiet. "Hello." A womans voice says on the other line.

Nkosi:"Talk." He says annoyed because he expected the woman to say her name but she doesn't.

Woman:"It's Natasha's mother. I'm calling you to let you know that she's no longer making it for the date." Nkosi sits up worried about Thando.

Nkosi:"Why? What's wrong with her? Is she okay?"

Ndoni:"She had an argument with her

father,so she's no longer coming. "

Nkosi: "Why did she insist on having a sleepover while I told her to not pressurize her father?"

Ndoni:"A sleepover? She didn't tell me about sleepovers, she just told me about the date and she didn't have that kind of fight,she got shouted by her father for coming late that's all."

Nkosi: "Oh okay. Can you give her the phone?"

Ndoni:"No I can't, she's sleeping, I gave her sleeping pills." Nkosi sighs feeling useless but mostly regrets for taking her home late.

Nkosi: "Fine. Thank you." Just when he's about to hang up, Ndoni speaks.

Ndoni:"Call me in the morning, I'll give her the phone." He hangs up and drives back to his house. He gets there and walks straight to bed, he's hungry but he's too stressed to eat. Before he sleeps, he cancels off his dinner arrangement and sleeps.

N A T A S H A ❁

I'm woken up by a vibrating cellphone, I don't know how my mom's phone ended up below my pillow. I moan and search for it, I find and answer it.

Me:"Why are you me waking up early in the morning? "

Voice: "Sorry to wake you up my love, I thought that you'd be awake right now. How are you and why is your voice like that?" I smile as I hear his voice, I sit up and open my

eyes.

Me: "I'm fine now. Sorry for last night Nkosi, I know I-"

Nkosi: "Baby, I don't care about that. Why is your voice sounding like that?" I clear my throat.

Me: "It's because I just woke up."

Nkosi: "I slept next to you countless times to not know how your voice sounds like when you just woke up." I sigh because there's no way he's letting this go.

Me: "I was crying." I say as I look down playing with the blanket, he sighs.

Nkosi: "I'm sorry for dropping you off late yesterday Thando."

Me: "No, don't be sorry because I didn't want

to go and I can't wait to go back to Jo'burg.
I should go now."

Nkosi: "Why?"

Me: "Because I want to be with you
Nkosi, without my father telling me to come
back before 6 o'clock and I miss you. "

Nkosi: "I miss you too baby but don't go back
to Jo'burg if your parents don't want you to
go ,okay."

Me: "Why? I'm old enough to do what I want
Nkosi. I'm close to 30 years and I've always
stayed under their roof and obeying their
rules. I have never disappointed them for
once in my life now they want me to not do
what I want and-"

Nkosi: "Baby, whoah, calm down. Breath my
love, breath." I breath and I didn't even

notice that I held back my breath. "Where do you get such energy in the morning? Listen, the reason why you parents are behaving the way they do is because you're the apple of their eyes, you said it your self that you've never disappointed them and that causes them to be more overprotective of you because you're a baby in their eyes and you're growing now. So please understand my love." I chuckle.

Me:"Understand Nkosi? Understand? Why don't they understand that I'm grown up and I have my own life?"

Nkosi: "Baby, don't let your love for me change who you are okay? I don't want to see you changing."

Me:"Kahle kahle Nkosi who are you

supporting? "

Nkosi: "I'm supporting you my love but now, it's like you're changing. I've never heard you speaking like that about your parents. Just calm down okay. Go and take a soothing long bath then eat and we'll continue our conversation okay?" I chuckle.

Me: "Nkosi, am I annoying you?"

Nkosi: "No you're not, if you did, I wouldn't have called you. It's just that you're angry right now Thando and your stubborn self isn't helping."

Me: "Nkosi am I stubborn?" He laughs carelessly and I imagine his smile. "I miss you Nkosi. My heart yearns for your presence."

Nkosi: "I yearn for your presence too my love and yes, you're stubborn." I smile and

think of him and a tear falls from my eye. I close my eyes and wipe them. "Baby, are you crying?" Tears streaming down my cheeks and I cry and roll my self like a child.

Me:"I terribly miss you Lathi and my heart hurts. "

Nkosi: "Baby don't cry. I'll be there in few minutes okay?" I hear shuffling on the background.

Me:"Baby no, you can't and I doubt that dad will let me out of the yard."

Nkosi: "Then I'll come inside and take you out my self because you're now crying." I quickly wipe my tears and muffle my cries.

Me:"I've stopped crying Nkosi. Please don't come." A part of me wants him to come but another part of me doesn't because I'm

scared of my father.

Nkosi: "I know you're not, I'm coming." I hear him shutting a door.

Me: "Nkosi I'm begging you, please baby, please don't come."

Nkosi: "I'm coming." And just like that, he hangs up. Me: "Nkosi!!" I look at the phone and he really hung up. Oh my God, why did I cry? I hate my self sometimes for crying too much. I quickly get off the bed and strip naked then run to the shower. I take a quick shower and I dry my body, lotion it then wear my white short dress and morning shoes and take the phone. I run down the stair and go to the dining room, no one is there, I run to the sitting room and no one is there. I run to the garden, patio and I find no one. I stop

running when I hear the phone ringing, it's Nkosi.

Nkosi: "Get out or I'm coming in." Just as I'm about to reply, he hangs up. God! He was busy telling me that I'm stubborn yet he is. I run to the gate and open it. Luckily it does and Nkosi is standing right next to the gate, wearing pyjama pants, morning shoes and naked on top. Hayibona! Kanti yhini inkinga yendoda yomZulu?

Me: "Nkosi! What-" he shuts me up with a kiss while lifting me up and I reply. He grabs my butt and I moan then wrap my legs around his waist. I pull out when he sneaks his hand under my dress because I didn't wear an underwear. "Nkosi put me down." I say breathing heavily as he does. He closes the

gate while carrying me and he crosses the road and gets inside the car. His door was even opened. He makes me straddle him.

"Nkosi did you really have to come in? And why did you arrive here quickly? Because you're far from here."

Nkosi:"Driving at 270 up to 360 doesn't kill me and why aren't you wearing an underwear?"

Me:"Driving at a high speed kills Nkosi! You know very well that I had an accident but you're still driving at a high speed! Nkosi do you want me to go through what you went through? "

Nkosi:"No baby, I'm sorry, I won't drive at a high speed again okay?"

Me:"Mxm" I say trying to move to another

seat but Nkosi hold my waist.

Nkosi: "And where do you think you're going?"
I look at him with a death stare. "Did you say that your heart yearns for my presence and it hurts?" I giggle and think about how I'm behaving but I said I miss him. I suddenly think about the promise I made yesterday. I'm ungrateful that he drove at high a speed just because he wanted me to stop crying and to ease my hurting and yearning heart. I look down and play with my fingers.

Me: "I'm sorry. Thank you for driving at high speeds that could kill you just to see me and ease my hurting and yearning heart." He lifts my chin up.

Nkosi: "I said I'll take care of you and that meant that I'll take care of your heart, body

and soul. Even your spirit and mind if possible." I smile and kiss him. He crushes my body against his and grabs my butt but my dress is lifted up and he takes that chance to caress my butt. I moan when I get a tingling sensation on my clit. He closes the car and lifts up my butt then I feel something poking my butt and I think it's his erected thing. It rubs my clit and I moan in his mouth. The pleasure kicks in and I pull out of the kiss and moan loud.

Me: "Umm! Baby!" I lye my back on the steering wheel and spread my legs. He rubs my cookie jar and clit with his thing and it feels so good! "Nkosi what are-" I scream and move up and down when I fell something on the pit of my stomach burning and a wave of heat showering me. I start to shake when his

thing rubs my clit vigorously and slapping my cookie. I scream out his name and I climax. I open my eyes slowly but they want to close and I close them. I feel Nkosi wiping me and I open my eyes, he's smiling at me.

Nkosi: "You can scream Thando, you even forgot that we're in a car but you scream sexily and you're more sexy when you reach your climax." I blush and hide my face with my hands and try to close my legs but Nkosi's upper body gets between them and he removes my hands and kisses my lips. I reply and hold the back of his head while brushing it. He pulls out after a while and moves me away from the steering wheel and puts a pillow at the steering wheel and I lie back. He lies on top of my breasts. Well chest because I have small breasts. He

moves his head to sleep on right breast and he takes out my left breast from the dress and massages it while slowly pinching my nipples. "I love your breasts, especially your nipples, they're very small."

Me: "But what you're doing is slowly, you know."

Nkosi: "It's slowly doing what? I know nothing. I'm very innocent." He says laughing.

Me: "You're even laughing at yourself because you're know very well that you're not innocent."

Nkosi: "Just imagine me, being innocent my love." I laugh at him while I try to imagine him and when I finally have his full imagination of him being innocent, I laugh at him very loud that I even remove his body to

turn on the aircon. "Baby stop laughing now please. " I look at him and start all over again laughing. "Baby if you don't stop, you'll get off my car now." I laugh out loud very hard . "okay, that's it. Leave." He takes mom's phone and give it to me then opens the door and I step out still laughing. I close the door and cross the road and turn to look at him and he's looking at me with an amused expression. I blow him a kiss and he catches it. I shout I love you and he replies with "I love your butt." I giggle and open the gate then step inside my father's homestead.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

TWENTY FOUR ♥

NKOSIYOMUZI ❁

I drive back to my house with a smile on my face. I arrive and go upstairs to my bedroom and take a shower. I step out of the shower humming and I dry my body, lotion then were a black chino, black golf t-shirt and black ankle boot. I brush my teeth and my hair. I go out and lock my house then drive off to my home. It takes me 30minutes to get there and I open my door and step out, I walk straight to the patio because I know that everyone is there. "Mom, when is Baba coming home? I miss him now." Says my loving daughter. I decide to listen their conversation.

Dear:"He said that he'll come and it's going to be a surprise." My father chuckles.

Baba:"What if he's coming with Milisa?"
That's how they call Thando 'Milisa'.

Dear:"Then I'll be very happy! I always wanted to see her, one day I told Lolwethu to search her on social media but she didn't find her."

Me:"That's because she isn't social." They all look at me, Olo and Dear beam with excitement and Olo throws herself in my arms. I hug her tight and kiss the top of her head. "I'm home now sweetheart." Dear comes to me and as I try to side hug her, she says.

Dear:"Lolwethu, move, I want my son now."
My daughter moves and it's like she's hurt,

dear hugs me, well it's not even a hug, it's a squeeze.

Me: "Dear you're killing me." She laughs and pulls out.

Dear: "I just missed my son." I get an unexpected hug while I'm looking at my mother.

Lelethu: "I missed you so much Bhuti." I hug her back and smile.

Me: "I'm glad that I was missed by my family."
"

Luyanda: "We have our own family bro, get your own family since you abandoned us." I walk to my father's side and greet him.

Me: "Sawubona Baba." He looks at me and nods, and just like that, I know that I'll have

a long session with him. I sigh and sit down next to Lilitha. "You're old enough to not greet your brother." She lifts up her head and smiles a little.

Lilly: "I'm sorry. Hi." She looks at her plate and plays with the food.

Me: "Lilitha, what is wrong?" She doesn't reply, she just zoned out. I sigh and Olo gives me water to wash my hands. I wash and wipe them then take the plate with food and eat. We are all chatting and laughing but Lilitha is on her planet and no one is noticing that. We all finish eating and I help my mother by taking the plates to the kitchen. She follows me and starts washing them and I wipe them. "Thando agreed to meet with you. She said that you'll chose the place and

she'll be there." She smiles revealing her teeth.

Dear:"I want to cook dinner for her. Tell her to come here. Finally I get to meet her!" She says beaming with excitement. "Is she beautiful? Of cause she is. I have to go to the shops and buy a new recipe book and grocery! Oh my god! I have to buy an outfit and-"

Me:"Whooah stop Dear, breath for a minute. You're not meeting a president or a Queen here and besides, she has to ask for permission to her father first but I doubt he'll agree because he's very strict."

Dear: "But I'm meeting a Queen and a president of your heart Elethu! Oh, she's also well mannered! No lady would ask for

permission these days. I hope her father agreed you know but I'm still going to shop."

Me: "Yes she is well mannered Dear and her father is strict so she's bound to be mannered."

Dear: "No she's not! Daughters of strict fathers are very ill mannered! Well some of them but-" I cut her off and chuckle.

Me: "When you say some of them you mean by your daughters." She laughs.

Dear: "No I don't and your father is not strict."

Me: "Well if you say so."

Dear: "Please show me her picture. Please my love."

Baba: "I don't have her picture Mkami." He

appears smiling, Dear looks at him and giggles while throwing a dishcloth to him.

Dear: "No, you're not my love. Elethu is my love."

Baba: "Nkosi you're going to irritate me by taking my lovers." I laugh at him.

Me: "Me taking your lovers means that you've lost your charm old man." He chuckles.

Baba: "Well I haven't lost my charm, ask my wife. She'll tell you. Right My Love?"

Dear: "Finish these dishes, I'm going for shopping. Lolwethu! Olo!" She says calling Lolwethu.

Olo: "Mom." She says appearing from the stairs.

Dear: "Let's go for shopping, tell Elly and Lilly

to get ready. We're leaving right now."

Me:"But Dear I told you that her father might not agree." Baba looks at me confused. "Dear invited Thando for dinner and Thando said that if she's invited for dinner, she'll have to ask permission to her father and I doubt that he'll agree." Baba looks at Dear.

Baba:"Don't be disappointed if her father declines." He looks at me. "Let her be my son, she'll see her self. Now leave the dishes, Sara will finish them. Let's go and have a talk." I clear my throat.

Me:"Baba before we talk, I'd like to have a chat with Lilly first." I say looking at him and I look at Dear. "I ask for Lilly to not go for shopping mother." She nods and leaves. Father looks at me.

Baba:"Why?" I take the plates and put them in their rightful places.

Me:"She's not her self."

Baba:"Her mother will talk to her Nkosi."

Me:"I want to talk with her first Baba." He nods and leaves the kitchen. Elly, Olo and Lilly descend the stairs making noise. "Lilly, come here."

Lilly:"But I have to go Bhuti."

Me:"Lilitha." I say with an authoritative voice. She looks down and walks to me. "Come let's go to the garden." She puts her cellphone on the table and I take her hand and we walk to the garden. "What's wrong with you?"

Lilly: "Nothing."

Me:"I take it as there's something. Now tell

me."

Lilly: "I'm unemployed. My working contract ended last month and I have debts, I'm drowning. I bought a car now I don't have money to release it and I bought myself a house in LaLucia now, I don't have money to finalise it. I'm so stressed Bhuti." She cries and I stop and hold her.

Me: "Why didn't you call me? "

Lilly: "I wanted to but I heard mom and dad saying that you paid millions for Milisa's operation so I didn't."

Me: "You have Lungelo Lilitha, you know very well that he's there for you." She holds my waist and lays her head on my chest.

Lilly: "He was very busy."

Me:"That's not an excuse Lilitha. You know very well that we would drop everything just for you to be happy and well. I will transfer 1million in your account tonight okay, and you'll send me your CV, I'll take it to my friends company. "

Lilly: "But 1 million is too much."

Me:"No it's not, you know houses in LaLucia are very expensive and you'll need money for grocery or maybe change the co-interior designs, plust you have to pay for your car and I'm sure that its very expensive. I'm starting to think that a 1 million is little."
She let's go of my waist and I let go of her.

Lilly:"I already said that I have paid for them Bhuti."

Me:"Fine, I won't add it."

Lilly: "Thank you."

Me: "If I didn't notice that you're not okay, would you have told me that you're drowning in debts?" She looks down and shakes her head. "Never do what you did again okay?"

Lilly: "Yes Bhuti. "

Me: "Now go and take my car keys and join your mother and siblings for shopping." She beams with excitement.

Lilly: "And I finally get to drive your car!" She pecks my lips and runs away.

Me: "Those lips are not yours Lilly! You don't get to kiss them!" She laughs and stops running.

Lilitha: "I hope that you're a good kisser! With your big lips!" We laugh and she runs to

the patio. I take out my phone and when I'm about to call Thando, I remember that she doesn't have a cellphone. What a bummer, I decide to call my mother.

Dear: "Love of my life."

Me: "Dear can you please buy Thando a cellphone. She doesn't have it and I was going to call her but I remembered that she hasn't one."

Dear: "It's okay my love. I'll buy it and you don't have to pay me. It comes from the goodness of my heart."

Me: "Thank you Dear." I hung up and when I turn, I see my father looking at me. "Oh, I didn't notice that you're here." I sit down on the garden chair and he joins me.

Baba: "How are you?" I sigh and put my

elbows on my thighs and looks at my hands.

Me: "I'm good now, the past few months have been bad but I'm glad that I made it. But what I haven't been thinking through is Thando's condition. I haven't made peace with it and I won't believe some medical things to say that she can't bear children."

Baba: "I see you still believe in our ancestors, Jo'burg didn't change you. Have you slept with her?" I look at him.

Me: "No I haven't and I'm a Zulu man, Jo'burg would never change my beliefs. "

Baba: "Good to hear. Remind me, how many months you've been together? "

Me: "It's been 4 months. "

Baba: "Why haven't you slept with her?"

Doesn't she trust you enough to sleep with you?"

Me:"She does but I don't want. I don't want to take her purity while we're not married. "

Baba: "You took a good decision. But I can't believe that you had blue balls for 4 months. Now when are you going to marry her?"

Me:"I don't think about umthondo (penis)baba. If I do, I'll hurt her and I don't want to. You'll here from me about marriage but get your cows ready."

Baba: "You're a real man Nkosiyumuzi. I'm proud of you and don't disappoint me when you're married. Just because she'll have to listen to you don't cheat on her, don't hit her, disrespect or mistreat her. You haven't witnessed me doing that to your mother so

don't and you don't have to pay for them you know Nkosi, no. You won't pay for them, when you wan them, I'll give them to you."

Me: "Ngiyabonga Gcwabe. (Thank you Gcwabe.)"

Baba: "Kubonga mina Khabazela. (It's my pleasure Khabazela.)" I stand up.

Me: "Asambe xhego, siyodlal' igaluva. (Let's go old man, we'll play golf. "

Baba: "Let's bet. R10 000." I laugh out loud.

Me: "Indoda yomZulu ngothanda imali. (Zulu man with loving money." We walk to the court. "Where is Lungelo and Lwandile?"

Baba: "Lungelo went to work and Lwandile said he has to go." I nod. "Now you're dismissing me." I chuckle.

Me: "I was just asking and I had nothing else to say."

Baba: "You could have said 'okay.'" I shake my head.

Me: "I was lazy." We laugh and play.

N A T A S H A ❀

I went to the kitchen and made my self a big lunch because the time is now 13:33 and I guess that I woke up at 12 something. I make a tenderized steak with fries, Greek salad, burger and a juice then eat. No one is at home and I guess they went to town for lunch. I won't sulk just they left me, no I won't. After eating I watch The River. It ends and I get hungry, I go to the kitchen and cut 2 slices of chocolate cake, pour ultramel in another bowl and make a fruit

salad and take a litch juice. I eat and when I'm done, I rinse the dishes and the phone rings. "Yes."

Voice: "Mam please open the gate, I have a delivery for you." Okay, I open the gate and a scooter stand's by the porch. I go out and meet him halfway. "Delivery for Thando Zulu."

Me: "It's me."

D.Man: "Please sign here." I sign and I take the gift bag. I close the door and go to my room. I take out a box that's wrapped with pink cover. I open it and it's a iPhone, it's very beautiful and it looks expensive, it's the latest. I switch it on and I see a message.

•~A gift from your mother in-law to her daughter in-law. I invite you to my home for

a dinner. Please come. Can't wait to see you.
~• and I'm left in awe. I open another box
and there is a very beautiful simple red
dress with red heels that have a black strap.
There's a letter in the box, it says.

•~I thought that you'd be very confused on
what to wear so I figured out that I should
buy you a dress and heels. Hope you like them.
From your Mother in Law.~• I hope dad will
agree for me to go to the dinner. Oh my god,
I don't have a weave. My hair is still short
and I doubt that I can plait nor do braids. I
don't even have money! I so want to cry right
now, I want to call Nkosi but___no, I can't. I
go to my parents bedroom and go to my
mom's sideboard. I open her drawer and I
see a stack of money. I take it and count it,
it's R10 000. I'm scared to steal it because

I've never done this before. I sit on top of her bed and think of what should I do. I go downstairs and call her using the landline because if I call her using the cellphone, she'll ask where did I get it. It rings and she answers.

Mommy: "Hello."

Me: "Mom, please go somewhere private. " I hear her saying that she's going to the bathroom.

Mommy: "What's wrong baby?"

Me: "Mommy can you please borrow money, I'm sorry that I invaded your space, I went to your drawers and found R10 000. I wanted to take it and replace it later but I couldn't. I'm sorry. "

Mommy: "It's okay baby, no need to be

scared. Take all of it, it's yours now."

Me: "Thank you mommy." I end the call and go to her bedroom and take the money. I go out and close her bedroom door then go to my room and wear an underwear and go out. I ask a uber and it arrives and drops me at the mall, i buy a perfume and go to a hair salon and do my nails first then do a weave. Well they glue it so you know. I pay and request a uber again and it arrives and drops me off at home. The time is now 17:20 and every one is home.

Mommy: "Oh you're back baby, you're so beautiful."

Me: "Thank you mommy. Where is dad?"

Mommy: "To her office." I nod and go to him. I know and he says come in. I go in and sit on

the couch. He looks at me and closes his laptop.

Daddy: "What do you want Natasha?" My dad has never spoke to me like that, I look down and fiddle with my fingers.

Me: "Daddy, Nkosi's mother invited me for dinner to his house. Can I please go? "

Daddy: "You do as you please right Natasha? You no longer come back at home before 6 o'clock and now you want to go out for dinners at night. You can go Natasha, do as you please, you can even sleepover or you can even come back next year. I don't care. Go and leave my office." By the time he finishes talking, I'm crying.

Me: "Daddy please, don't talk like that. Daddy please, forgive me." I say going on my knees

next to him. He looks at me and pushes me aside and I fall on my butt. He turns back to his laptop. "Daddy please I'm begging you." He looks at me like abominable.

Daddy: "I SAID LEAVE MY OFFICE MILISUTHANDO! GET OUT!" He roars and I sob. My mother barges in and lifts me up. She looks at my father and shakes her head.

Mommy: "Come here baby, let's go." We go out and go to my bedroom. "What happened baby?" I tell her what happened while she brushes my back. "Go baby okay, go and sleepover. I'll talk to your father. By the time you come home, everything will be fine okay?" I nod. Go and take a bath. I'll call Muzi to come and fetch you. Go." I stand up and take a long bath. Maybe I disappointed

my father yesterday and upset him. Maybe If I didn't leave with Nkosi, none of this would have happened, but I don't regret going with Nkosi because I missed him and I love him. I step out of the bath, drain the water, clean the bathtub and dry my body. I lotion and wear my lacy undergarments and the dress. I brush my weave, wear the heels then puff my perfume , take my cellphone and go out. I open the gate and see Nkosi standing next to it. I smile and he closes the gate and hugs me.

Nkosi: "You're so beautiful my love." He pecks my lips. "I should be kissing you now but you have a lipstick and I don't want to smudge it so I'll peck you countless times." I giggle and he pecks my lips. He stops and we cross the road holding hands. "Didn't you

miss me?"

Me: "No I didn't. "

Nkosi: "Oh, I see. You miss me when you have salt, if you don't, you don't miss me. I feel so used right now." I giggle and shake my head, he opens a door for me and I step in. "Why are you thick today? It's like you have big legs and thighs, especially your bum." I laugh at him.

Me: "Stop drooling, maybe it's this dress." He closes the door and jogs to his side and steps in then closes the door.

Nkosi: "Then you should wear it more often." He turns on the music and it's the soft love songs. We drive in comfortable silence listening to the songs until we stop in front of a huge beautiful house, it's breathtaking.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

TWENTY FIVE ❤️

NARRATED 🌍

Nkosi's mother heard Nkosi's car driving in.

Nobuhle: "Oh my! They have arrived! Lungelo!
Luyanda! Lwandile! Come down! They have
arrived! "

Kumkani: "Mkami calm down. You've been like
this the whole day."

Lungelo: "She's just happy that she gets to
see one of her sons girlfriend. "

Kumkani: "Well I heard that, she might not be a girlfriend. "

Nobuhle: "Myenami please, don't be scary and intimidating. Just for today my love please. I don't want Milisa to be scared and uncomfortable. "

Kumkani: "I'm not promising anything." A knock comes through and Nobuhle grins.

Nobuhle: "Please relax, all of you and make her comfortable please good people." Thando is outside with Nkosi. She's is starting to sweat.

Thando: "Nkosi I'm scared."

Nkosi: "But baby I have told you countless times to not panic and be scared." She nods and blinks away her tears. The door opens and Nobuhle grins hard.

Nobuhle: "Oh my god! You're here! Come, come in., you're so beautiful Milisa. This dress is more beautiful on your body." She says opening the door very wide. Thando releases a warm smile and nods. They get in and go to the dining room. Thando is mesmerized by the beauty of this house. She can't keep off her eyes on the interior designs. They find everyone looking at them, they are very quiet. Thando starts to get scared again, she looks at Nkosi and Nkosi is looking straight at his father. His father nods and they sit down. "No don't sit down." Thando quickly jumps off from her chair. "Let's first introduce our selves."

Lilitha: "But mom we can introduce ourselves while sitting down." She says looking at her mother.

Nobuhle: "Okay then, sit down Dear."

Nkosi: "So you're giving away the name I gave you. "

Nobuhle: "Not now my love." Thando looks at Nkosi and his mother, she looks at Nkosi and sees the love she has for her mother. She thought that they're not tight since he never talks about her. Well the whole family except Lolwethu.

Nkosi: "My love, there is my father-Kumkani, my mother-Nobuhle, my brothers-Lungelo, Luyanda and Lwandile. My sisters-Lilitha, Lelethu and Lolwethu." Nkosi says pointing them, Thando is surprised about how their names start with L, even Nkosi's name starts with L. "Family, here is Milisuthando Natasha Zulu." Thando looks at

Kumkani.

Thando: "Sawubona Bab' Mkhize." She quickly looks at Kumkani's chest to avoid eye contact because she knows that it's disrespectful.

Kumkani looks at her.

Kumkani: "Mazulu omncane." Thando quickly looks at Kumkani, surprised by how his voice is deep and demands respect, just like Nkosi's voice. She quickly looks at Nkosi and looks down. "How are you Mazulu." Natasha shifts on her chair uncomfortable and Nkosi holds Thando's hand and brushes it under the table.

Thando: "Ngiyaphila Bab' Mkhize." Nobuhle throws a death stare at his husband but he avoids it.

Kumkani: "What do you want from

Nkosiyomuzi?" Kumkani looks at Nkosi and nods indicating that he must let go of Natasha's hand and he does. Natasha looks at Nkosi with weak eyes and Nkosi looks away, she looks down and fiddles with her fingers.

Thando: "Akukho lutho Bab' Mkhize engikufunayo.(There's nothing that I want Bab' Mkhize.)"

Kumkani: "If there's nothing that you want from him, then why are you with him?"

Thando: "I'm with Lathi because I love him."
Nobuhle smiles because she believes that she really does and she's surprised that she knows Nkosi's second name since he hates it meanwhile Kumkani looked at Nkosi wanting to see Nkosi's reaction when Thando said 'Lathi' and Nkosi smiled then looked.

Kumkani loved Thando's straight answers but he saw that Thando is weak, he saw that she is too weak for Nkosi because Nkosi needs a person that will be strong for him and when Kumkani looked at Thando, he didn't see that. He nods and Nobuhle calls Thando.

Nobuhle: "Milisa." Thando looks at Nkosi's mother. "What do you do for a living?"

Thando: "I'm an oral and maxillofacial surgeon and I'm doing a Finance Director course." Nkosi looks at her.

Nkosi: "A what!?" Thando looks at Nkosi and giggles.

Thando: "I'm a dentist but I operate mouth, jaws, gums, teeth, neck and head."

Kumkani: "Where do you get time to attend Finance?" Thando looks at Kumkani's chest.

Thando: "I'm an online student Bab' Mkh-"

Kumkani: "Baba is fine. When did you start doing it and what subjects did you do in high school?"

Thando: "I did Finance when I was 23 years old and I did Physical Sciences, Mathematics, Accounting and Commerce and I decided to also do Biology by recruiting Life Orientation."
"

Lolwethu: "What!? Where do you get brains to do such hard subjects!?" Thando looks at her.

Thando: "From my mother. And I was a nerd."

Lilitha: "Who dated a nerd? I mean who wanted you?"

Thando: "I never got time to be with boys. I

knew what I wanted and I wanted to be successful and I'm going to be successful."

Kumkani: "How old are you Mazulu and what does your mother do?" She giggles and looks down then smiles before looking at him.

Thando: "26 years Baba and she's a marketing accountant and a tax manager." Kumkani looks at her like he's trying to know something.

Kumkani: "I guess you and Nkosi have brains and they decided to meet because Nkosi is an architecture and quantity surveyor. I wonder how your children will be like."

Thando looks down a bit sad and Nkosi, Nobuhle, Kumkani notice it.

Nobuhle: "Why are you sad Love?"

Thando: "I-" Nkosi cuts her off.

Nkosi: "People when are we going to eat because I'm starving and this chicken is even drooling at me." They laugh and Nkosi holds Thando's hand and squeeze it. They all eat and chat but Thando doesn't eat nor chat much.

Thando: "Where is the bathroom?" She says whispering to Nkosi.

Nkosi: "Come, I'll take you to it." The both stand up and everyone looks at them.

Nobuhle: "Where are you going?"

Nkosi: "To the bathroom."

Luyanda: "Don't make babies there." They go to Nkosi's bedroom and Nkosi locks the door.

Nkosi: "Thando are you fine?"

Thando: "Nkosi why didn't you tell your

family that I'm a barren?" She says looking at Nkosi with eyes full of tears. Nkosi steps closer to her and holds her shoulders.

Nkosi: "I didn't want them to look at you different my love." He says wiping the falling tears.

Thando: "They'll still look at me different Nkosi! And they're busy joking about us making babies and how our babies will be like. Nkosi do you know how much that hurts? Do you know how much it hurts to not have babies?" She says with breaking voice. Nkosi hugs her and Thando let's her tears fall.

Nkosi: "I'm sorry my love. I'm sorry, I wish you could believe that you'll have children Thando."

Thando: "How Nkosi?! How!? Because I'll

miscarry every child we'll have before I get to see her/him. I'm even thinking of removing my womb." Nkosi quickly pulls out of the hug ,tries to compose his self and holds Thando's face.

Nkosi: "You will not, I say you will not remove your womb Milisuthando." He says with a stern voice. Thando looks down. "Look at me Natasha. " she looks at him. "Where do you think my babies will stay if you remove their home?"

Thando:"I want to go Nkosi." She says removing Nkosi's hand.

Nkosi: "We'll talk about this at home. Do what you're here to do so that we can leave." Thando pees with Nkosi looking at her, she wipes her self and when she's about to wear

her undergarment, Nkosi pulls Thando to him and smashes his lips on hers. They kiss and Nkosi squeeze Thando's butt ,making her moan. "Even though I'm angry at you, I can't keep my eyes and hands off you ." he says in between the kiss. He lifts Thando up,wraps Thando's legs around his waist and her lacy undergarment gets tore apart. "Oh fuck!" He hisses and kiss Thando hungrily and she moans then pulls out.

Thando: "Nkosi no. We have to go and we're in your father's house." He sulks.

Nkosi: "But baby I'm hungry for you. You know what. Let's leave." He puts Thando down and the tore red lacy undergarment falls.

Thando:"What am I going to do with this?"

She says looking at the undergarment. Nkosi picks it up and puts it inside his pocket.

Nkosi: "Let's go now Thando."

Thando: "Let me wash my hands first." Nkosi groans and hits his forehead with the palm of his hand.

Nkosi: "Hurry up then." Thando walks to the sink and washes her hands. Nkosi walk to her and removes his erected penis from his briefs, he lifts up Thando's dress then rubs his erected penis on Thando's closed thighs.

Thando: "What are you doing Nkosi!?" Nkosi bends Natasha and inserts his erected penis near Thando's virgina between her thighs.

Nkosi moves his waist forward and backwards and the head of his penis keeps rubbing Natasha's clit. She releases

un-audible while Nkosi releases low groans. They walk to the bedroom and Thando gets on top of the bed and bends with Nkosi behind her while moving his waist. "Baby." Thando bends her back more and her ass is out, Nkosi moves his waist fast holding Thando's waist.

Nkosi: "Mmmh baby." He closes his eyes moving more fast, slapping Thando's butt. Thando moans loud and Nkosi also groans loud. Thando shakes and reaches her orgasm while Nkosi holds Thando's waist tight moving more faster making Thando's butt clap with his thighs. He groans deep loud like a beast and for few minutes he releases and falls on top of Thando. His seed trails down Thando's libia.

Thando: "Nkosi you're heavy." He rolls on bed and Thando falls on top of Nkosi and his penis pokes Thando's stomach, it's still erected. Thando doesn't know Nkosi's penis, she never saw it. "Nkosi can you please control your thing." He shakes his head.

Nkosi: "It's uncontrollable baby." Thando holds Nkosi's erected penis and Nkosi groans.

Thando: "Yho! It's still hard and big." Nkosi chuckles and groans, Thando keeps on squeezing his erected penis not knowing that what she's doing is making Nkosi more aroused. "I wish to see how it looks like."

Nkosi: "Look at it baby." He says hissing and groaning low. Thando shakes her head.

Thando: "I'm scared, what if it's more big

and hard when I see it and what's if it's scary?"

Nkosi: "Baby, do you know how a penis looks like?"

Thando: "I've never saw it face to face well no, I don't know what it looks like. Well I do, I saw it on a book. It was long ago though, while I was in high school. In grade 9." Nkosi laughs and Thando squeezes Nkosi's penis and stretches it. "Nkosi this thing is long!"

Nkosi: "How do you think it reached your clit if it was short? And research about a penis my love. You have don't have knowledge about it."

Thando: "I don't need to know about it because I won't do anything to it. My career deals with mouth, head and neck only."

Nkosi: "Why do you call a penis 'it' or a 'thing'? Say penis Thando." She shakes her head.

Thando: "No, I don't want to." Nkosi rolls on the bed and he gets on top of Thando.

Nkosi: "Say penis Thando." She giggles and shakes her head.

Thando: "No I won't and if you think of threatening me, I'll pull this thing of yours and scream loud."

Nkosi: "Baby, this room is soundproofed."

Nkosi kisses Thando's lips and she replies.

She let's go of Nkosi's penis and holds his back while spreading her legs. They kiss for a while and Nkosi pulls out. "Let's sleep baby."

Thando nods and when Nkosi is about to stand up, Thando quickly closes her eyes and

Nkosi laughs at her. "Thando you won't die if you look at it?"

Thando: "What if it's black? What if it has popping veins just like your arms? What if I faint when I look at it? No thank you, I'll pass."

Nkosi: "You know 'what if' delays a person? Baby you'll see my penis and the day you will, is the day that it will be huge and very long!"

Thando: "You can scare me all you want but I'll still not look at it." She turns around and opens her eyes then removes her dress and heels. She removes the covers and gets in bed.

Nkosi: "Baby, you'll sleep naked?"

Thando: "Nkosi it's hot for wearing clothes now." She turns her back on Nkosi and he

also sleeps naked. He pulls Thando to him.

"Nkosi why are you not wearing your briefs?"

Nkosi: "It's hot for wearing briefs."

Thando: "Your thing better not poke my butt or I'll remove it."

Nkosi: "And you'll get to see it." She laughs and shakes her head. "I love you My love."

Thando: "I love you too my love. Good night."

Nkosi: "My kiss Thando." She turns and kisses Nkosi then pull out. Nkosi puts Natasha's head on his chest. "You were beautiful on the dinner."

Thando: "Thank you. You were also handsome." After then, they drifted to sleep

Daily new African novels download here

www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

TWENTY SIX ❤️

NARRATED 🌍

IN THE MORNING 💕

IN KUMKANI'S BEDROOM

Nobuhle woke up very early, she wanted to make a big breakfast for Thando. She did her morning routine and when she was about to open the door, her husband spoke.

Kumkani: "Mkami uyakuphi?(My wife, where are you going?)" She turns and walks to her husband. She sits on top of the bed and kiss him.

Nobuhle : "I'm going to prepare breakfast for Milisa." Kumkani checks the time and sits up.

Kumkani: "It's still early Mkhosi, it's not even 6 o'clock. Just come to bed."

Nobuhle: "No, we have a guest, a very special guest." Kumkani chuckles and stands up and walks towards the bathroom.

Kumkani: "The very same guest that left us at the dinner and went to sleep with Nkosi. How rude."

Nobuhle: "Mkhosi don't you like Nkosi's girlfriend?" Kumkani stops walking, turns and looks at Nobuhle.

Kumkani: "I like her but not for my son."

Nobuhle: "What!? Why?"

Kumkani: "She's too weak for Nkosi Nobuhle."

Nkosi needs a strong woman for him and that girl is young for Nkosi. Nkosi needs a matured woman, not a baby. She won't handle Nkosi the way he needs to be, that girl looks like when things get tough, hard, she'll run away." Nobuhle chuckles and stands up.

Nobuhle: "You hardly know Milisa Kumkani but you're already judging her. She was weak at the dinner just because you scared her."

Kumkani: "If she gets weak by seeing a person, how weak will she be when she faces a tough situation? "

Nobuhle: "Just give Milisa a chance Kumkani!"
She stomps out of the room and prepares breakfast.

IN NKOSIYOMUZ'S BEDROOM

Nkosi wakes up because he's bothered by his

penis. It was erected so hard that it hurt all night and Thando's butt in front of it didn't help. He decides to slip it between Thando's thighs, right below her virgana and hold her waist and moves closer to her. He plants kisses on her shoulder, going up to her neck. Thando sticks out her butt to Nkosi and moves her upper body forward, avoiding Nkosi's movements. Nkosi groans and wipes his face looking at Thando butt. He caresses it and squeeze it, he moves his hand to Thando's clit but she moves her leg forward, hiding it. Nkosi doesn't give up, he makes Thando lye with her back and he gets on top of her, spreads her legs and gets in between her thighs while kissing her lips. His still hard penis pokes Thando's virgina and Thando finally wakes up and pushes Nkosi.

Thando: "Nkosi huh uh." She says removing Nkosi on top of her but he lyes on top of Thando still kissing her lips while grabbing her butt. "Nkosi you're heavy! Move and I want to sleep." She says after pulling out but Nkosi kisses her lips again and rolls on bed making Thando on top of his body while holding her tight. Thando pulls out of the kiss. "Nkosi what is wrong with you? Let go of me, I want to sleep."

Nkosi: "Sleep on top of me baby."

Thando: "Then stop kissing me, I can't sleep you're kissing me." Nkosi sigh and pecks her lips.

Nkosi: "Okay baby, I won't, don't be angry." Thando looks away and sleeps. "But baby it's in the morning. We have to wake up and get

ready so that we can go downstairs to eat."
Thando wakes up and looks Nkosi wanting to cry .

Thando:"Then why did you wake me up early in the morning in the first place Nkosiyomuzi?!" She quickly gets up from Nkosi with tears falling from her cheeks and walks to the bathroom and showers. Nkosi also wakes up and walks to the shower. He opens the door and sees Thando's back. He gets in and closes the door. "Get out Nkosi."

Nkosi: "But baby I want to take a shower."
Thando doesn't reply, she continues to wash her body. "Baby are you angry at me?" She ignores Nkosi and stops washing her body, she let's the hot water hit her skin. Nkosi takes the sponge and washes his body, after

he's done, he puts down the sponge and he steps closer to Thando and holds her waist. She removes Nkosi's hands and turns, she opens the door and step out then close it. She takes the towel and wipes her body then takes Nkosi's body lotion and lotions her body. Nkosi steps out of the shower after showering and takes another towel and dries his body. Thando leaves the bathroom and wears Nkosi's Calvin Klein brief, her dress and heels then walks out of the bedroom and walks to the kitchen. She finds Nobuhle making breakfast. Nobuhle turns and sees Thando.

Nobuhle: "Love, why did you wake up early?"

Thando: "Nkosi woke me up and said I should get ready for breakfast. What should I help

you with?"

Nobuhle: "The Vienna's Love. "

Thando: "I'm sorry for leaving the dinner early. I know it was rude and I apologize for being rude."

Nobuhle: "It's okay love, you had your reasons." Lolwethu steps into the kitchen.

Lolwethu: "Morning Mothers."

Nobuhle: "Morning cupcake."

Thando: "Morning Olo but I'm not a mother because I don't have a child." She says smiling and Olo returns it.

Lolwethu: "Well your man is my father so practical, I'm your daughter and your my mother."

Thando: "Well Good morning baby." Lilitha

also steps in the kitchen.

Lilitha: "Morning family.

Nobuhle: " Morning Lilly."

Lolwethu: "Morning Sis."

Thando: "Good morning flower." She says with a warm beautiful smile and Lelethu involuntary smiles.

Lilitha: "Flower?"

Thando: "Yes Lily Flower"

Lilitha: "Oh thank you. I'll set up the table. Olo, come and help." Nobuhle smiles.

Nobuhle: "That's why I love you."

Lelethu: "What about me?" She says opening the fridge.

Nobuhle: "A good morning wouldn't hurt

Lelethu."

Lelethu: "Sorry, Good morning beautiful people." They all greet her and everyone walks to the dining and sees the brothers talking with their father.

Kumkani: "Good morning My beautiful family."

"Good morning dad." The sisters say in unison and sit down. Thando looks at his chest and greets back then her and Nobuhle sit down.

Thando: "I apologize for leaving dinner early yesterday, it was rude of me to disappear during dinner time, especially since I was a guest. I humbly apologize." They'll look at her and Nkosi holds her hand and puts it ontop of the table and Thando lets him be.

Nkosi:"We apologize. Thando wasn't feeling well yesterday and I'm sure some of you

noticed it so I had to be there for her and leave the dinner. I apologize also for not coming down and telling you the reason of not coming back ."

"All is forgiven and forgotten." They say in unison while dishing up and eating. "And I'm leaving today family. Right after this breakfast." Thando looks at Nkosi and looks down, she doesn't want to show any emotions on Nkosi's statement.

Lolwethu: "But couldn't you stay a bit long Baba? I mean you just arrived yesterday."

Nkosi: "Unfortunately I can't my daughter."

Kumkani: "When are you coming back?"

Nkosi: "In October." The ladies gasp.

Lilitha: "But a month doesn't end without you

visiting us Bhuti. I guess Milisa is keeping you busy then."

Lungelo: "We have lives Lilly, we can't keep on coming back home and I understand Nkosi. He has to make a family with Milisa and he can't while he keeps on visiting here." Thando clears her throat.

Thando: "I can't have a family with Nkosi." Everyone drops utensils and looks at her waiting for an explanation. "When I had a car accident, my womb became damaged so I can't have children." Nobuhle jumps out of her chair and walks to Thando and embrace her.

Nobuhle: "I'm sorry love. I'm very sorry, what you've just shared shouldn't make you feel less of a woman okay? And it doesn't

change how I see you. I'm sorry."

Thando: "No, don't be sorry, it wasn't your fault, it was God's will to not give me children." She says pulling out of the hug. Nobuhle wipes her own tears.

Nobuhle: "I'm sorry." She says walking back to her chair and sits down. Kumkani holds her hand under the table but Nobuhle removes it. "How did you fe-" Nkosi cuts her off.

Nkosi: "Let's not talk about it Mother."
Nobuhle quickly shuts up and eats.

Lolwethu: "Mami you still take me as your baby right?" She says looking at Thando with hopeful eyes because she developed a soft spot for Thando. Thando looks at her and smiles warmly.

Thando: "Yes you're still my daughter baby."

Lolwethu smiles and stands up then walks to her and give her a heartfelt hug. She pulls out and smiles.

Lolwethu: "I love you mami." Thando grins.

Thando: "I love you too baby." Everyone is looking at them smiling and Nkosi is looking at them smiling like a tirade.

Lelethu: "You're too cute guys." She says giggling and clapping hands. They all laugh at her and Olo kisses Thando's cheeks and walks to her chair.

Nobuhle: "That was beautiful guys." Nkosi kisses Thando's hand and Thando stares her and she quickly remembers that they're with his family so she fakes a smile and Nkosi sees that it's fake so he lets go of her hand. They continue to chat until it's time for

Thando and Nkosi to leave.

Nobuhle: "Please visit us again Milisa."

Lolwethu: "Please say you will mami." She says with pleading eyes looking at Thando.

Thando: "Can't say I will baby, it'll depend okay?" She nods. "I'm sorry baby." She says hugging her and she ends up hugging all the ladies.

Luyanda: "Don't we also get a hug Milisa?" She giggles and hugs him. "You smell great." He says whispering in her ears and she giggles, Nkosi gets jealous and he quickly removes Thando from Luyanda making everyone laugh.

Thando: "Thank you for the compliment Luyanda."

Lungelo: "Already possessive Nkosi?"

Nkosi: "No, I'm not. Just that we have to go."

Lungelo: "Okay then, if you're not, Lisa can I get a warm hug from you? I really need it to mend my heart." He says walking towards her and he sneaks his around Thando's waist and hugs her tightly. Nkosi removes Lungelo from Thando and he holds her waist pulling her close to him. Everyone laughs at his move.

Nkosi: "We're going. I see you get too comfortable around Thando." With that said, he walks away pulling Thando's hand.

Nobuhle: "Now you made my son angry Lungelo." She says irritated and walking away.

Kumkani: "And you're making my wife angry."

Lungelo: "But I just wanted to see Nkosi's reaction since he said that he's not jealous."

Kumkani: "And you knew that he's jealous Lungelo and you saw it. Stop provoking your brother because you know exactly what he'll do to you and I won't stop him." With that said, he walks back to the house and they all followed him.

Lilitha: "Lungelo stop what you're doing to Nkosi, you know exactly what he's capable of, you better listen to your father. "

N A T A S H A ❁

Nkosi pulled my hand while marching to his car.

Me: "Nkosi stop pulling my hand!" He stops and turns to look at me. He's angry, it's visible.

Nkosi: " Then hurry up Milisuthando and stop fancying my brothers because I have to be at the airport in an hour." He says very harsh and he means that I want or I'm trying to seduce his brothers. I keep quiet and walk to the car and open the door then step in and close it. He stays for few minutes outside and steps inside the car and close the door. "I'm sorry Thando. I didn't mean to talk to you like that." He tries to hold my hand but I fold my arms and look outside the window. "Baby I'm sorry." I keep quiet and we drive to my home silently. He stops near the gate and when I open the door, it's closed. When I'm about to press the button to open doors, he quickly covers it with his hand. "You won't leave this car if you're still mad at me." I sit up straight and look outside the window.

"Thando I'm sorry for what I said. I know it was uncalled to say that you're-" He doesn't say the word, he just sighs. "Thando I'm sorry, this silent treatment is eating me away. You've been giving it to since early in the morning, please Thando talk to me." Still I don't reply. "Thando am I going to leave with you giving me a cold shoulder?" I keep quiet. "Okay then, please give me a kiss. I didn't get it the whole morning and when I kissed you when you were waking up you didn't reply." I don't even bother my self to look at him. "Thando please. Oh fuck! I've never been this frustrated in my life. Thando please talk to me." He tries to hold my thigh but I cross my legs. I could feel his eyes on me. I won't even look at him, what he said really hurt me but I didn't show it to him since he was

angry. He introduces me to his family and when his brothers asks for hugs I'm supposed to do what? Decline? No I wouldn't have done it because they were trying to be friendly and to make me more comfortable and it would have seemed like I'm being rude. We sat in silence for minutes with his eyes piercing through my skin. I hear a beep and unlocking doors. I open the door and take my phone and when I'm about to close the door, he says. "Thandolwami Ngiyakuthanda. Please forgive me for what I've said. Ngiyakucenga Sithandwa sami." He says with sadness and pain visible in his voice. I close the door and walk to the gate and open it unbothered by his words. I walk to the porch and I open the main door see my mother cleaning.

Me:"Hello mommy." She looks up and I walk

to her and give her a hug and kisses on both cheeks.

Mommy: "Hello sweetheart, how are you?"

Me: "I'm fine mommy and you?"

Mommy: "I'm good, your father said that when you arrive, you should go to his office." I nod and go to his office then knock.

Daddy: "Come in." I go in and he's sitting on the couch eating. I stand next to the door. "Come and sit next to daddy." Why the sudden change in behavior? I go and sit on the armrest of the couch. "Tasha the couch is too big for you to sit there, even if you're chubby you'll fit here." He laughs and quickly keeps quiet when he sees that I'm not laughing. "Tasha I'm sorry about the way I've treated you the past few days. It's just

that you're growing Tasha, very quickly and you're even dating with an old man Tasha. When you got here late, I just felt disrespected Tasha because you disobeyed my rule. You're the apple of my eye Tasha, my pride and joy, seeing you changing right in front of my eyes, it didn't sit well. You might have asked your self why I gave Nkosi my blessings if I'll not accept your outgoings, I gave him my blessings because I accepted your relationship and he treated you good but I didn't accept the fact that you'll change. I thought you'll still be my princess Thando. Are you still a virgin though Natasha?" I look at him.

Me:"Yes, I'm still a virgin father. I almost lost it that day but Nkosi said that we should wait for a marriage and he's not an old man

father, he's a young man and I forgive you."

Daddy: "He is a old man, if he wasn't, he would have been 28 or 28years. Now come and give daddy a hug and stop calling me father." I laugh and go to sit on his lap then hug him. "I love you, my beautiful daughter."

Me:"I love you my handsome daddy."

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER😊

TWENTY SEVEN♥

NKOSIYOMUZI❁

I've never been so frustrated and stressed

like this in life. I never knew that silent treatment hurts like this. I didn't mean what I said to Thando and I regret taking out my anger to her. I was hurt more when I told her that I love her and she shut the door without even answering, one of the things that I'm scared of is rejection, especially from her. I watched her as she walked to the gate unbothered and not giving a care about what I said. She closed the gate and I pulled my self together and drove straight to the airport because I was very late already. I arrived just as they were calling my flight, I went to it and it took off. I already called Luyanda to take my car so I just slept through the flight even thou it was hard because I was busy thinking about Thando. The plane landed and I went to my guard and

told him to go straight to my house, I was going to go to work but my mind can't function. We arrived in my house and I called Thandob 10times but she wasn't answering my calls so I went straight to the shower, I just stood in the shower and let the cold water hit my body, still I was thinking about Thando. I got disturbed by a call and I jumped out of the shower thinking that it's her but I got the disappointment of my life, it was Lwazi. I answered.

Lwazi: "King where are you? We've been waiting for you here in your office but you're not arriving."

Me: "In my house. "

Lwazi: "Nkosi you know you don't have a house, you have houses but still you say

house. The one in Sandton or Houghton?"

Me: "Houghton." I then ended the call and threw myself on the bed and I landed with my chest. I lie there very stressed, I called Thando again and hoping that she answers but she doesn't. I throw the phone across the room but Lwazi opens the door and it hits him.

Lwazi: "Dude! Are you planning on killing me? And why are you naked?" I don't answer him, I just stare him as he gives me my phone. "Hey, don't look at me like that, I did nothing and get dressed." I sigh and when I'm about to turn and sit up he shouts. "No man Nkosi! You want to show me your dick now?!" I chuckle and he throws me a towel. I take and wrap it around my waist while he

turned his back on me.

Me:"I'm done now." He turns and sits ontop of the bed.

Lwazi:" Now tell me what's up. "

Me:"It's Thando. She's giving me a silent treatment because I said some hurtful words since I was angry at my brothers for getting too comfortable, well it's Lungelo. He hugged her inappropriate and I just got angry and I pulled her hand while walking to my car. She couldn't catch up with me because I was walking too fast and I-" I wipe my face with my hands looking down. "I shouted at her and said that she must hurry up and stop fancying my brothers and she just looked at me defeated and little hurt. She didn't even backchat me like she usually does or cry, she

just walked to the car and kept quiet. She hasn't talked to me even now and she's not answering my calls."

Lwazi: "Nkosi you were wrong about saying that she's fancying your brothers, I understand that you were jealous but it was uncalled for to insult her because it was an insult. You say it your self that Lungelo hugged her but you say she's fancying your brothers, you forget that it's you that introduced her to your brothers. And her fancying your brothers meant to her that you don't trust her around your brothers, you doubted her worth and self so I don't blame her for giving you silent treatment and you shouldn't have taken out your anger to her, you should have taken out your anger to your brothers. Here, call her and go downstairs

afterwards, dressed." I take his phone and dial Thando's number it rings and she speaks.

Thando: "Hello."

Me: "Thando. I'm s-" Tweet tweet.

"Thando?" I remove the phone from my ear and look at it. She ended the call. I try and call it again but she rejects it. I stand up and wear my Vanquish shorts and vest the go downstairs. I give Lwazi his cellphone.

Lwazi: "And?" I take the box that has meat and eat.

Me: "She hung up before I could even say sorry. "

Ayabonga: "Dude please stand up. I want to see if you have your bulge." We laugh at him and I take a cushion and throw it to him. He dodges it and laughs. "It's just that you said

sorry bro."

Bongani: "Aya you love disturbing Nkosi when he's talking you realise that right?"

Ayabonga: "I know. It's just I love him."

Me: "Dude I'm taken and I'm not a gay."

Ayabonga: "Well your girlfriend doesn't answer your calls so you might just be a gay. And I'm sure you're single according to herself." That cuts deep. "I'm sorry King, I did-"

Me: "No need to explain, I know you were joking. "

Ayabonga: "But I-"

Me: "Pass me the beer Ayabonga."

Sibulele: "No don't, go and take out a juice in the fridge."

Me: "Why a juice. "

Sibulele: "You'll say a beer is weak, you need something strong and you're in no position to."

Me: "Fine. Go and make a juice for me honey."

Lwazi: "Dude you sound so weird!" They laugh at me and Ayabonga stands up and walks to the kitchen and comes out with my favourite.

Me: "Thank you h-"

Ayabonga: "No King. Don't say it." We laugh and chat till we go to sleep.

N A T A S H A ❁

It's been a week since I've been ignoring Nkosi and he keeps on calling me since the day he went to Jo'burg and I left KZN three days ago. I'm in my apartment in Jo'burg and

today I'm going to ask for my job again but first I'll go to Nkosi's workplace. Well I'm already ready, I just need to eat first then I hit the road. My brothers hired me a driver since they don't want me to drive and I'm so bored by him. He never talks it's like he's a statue. I eat and tell him to drive to Nkosi's workplace. He drives very slow and I'm bored because I have to be at the hospital by 10 o'clock.

Me:"Bhuti please hurry up, I need to be at the hospital by 10 o'clock." He looks at me on the review mirror and continues to drive. I'll just call a cab when I go to the hospital. It's 8 o'clock now and we're about to arrive at his workplace, I keep checking the time and it's passing but the driver drives slowly. We finally reach his workplace at 08:13 and I

walk to his private elevator. I step in and it stops, I walk out and the stares I'm getting are just too much. I walk to his office and open the door without knocking. He's focused on his laptop. "Get out and knock." He says with a powerful authoritative voice. Me: "I'll get out and never come back then." He quickly looks up and grins when he sees me. He jumps up from his chair and runs towards me. He lifts me up and kisses sooo goooood! I missed his lips. I reply and he holds very tight while we're still kissing. He deepens the kiss and it becomes gentle, slow and heartfelt passionate! I wrap my legs around his waist and holds my butt. Just as I'm about to pull out because he's been kissing me for a very long time, he bites my lips. "Ouch Nkosi!" He slips his tounge in and

devours my mouth. He walks to the couch and he lays me down, just as he's about to get on top of me, I pull out and look aside. "Nkosi whoah, let's talk first." He gets between my legs and lays on top of me holding my waist.

Nkosi: "I missed you Thando. Were you trying to kill me when you didn't answer my calls for a week?"

Me: "Yes. Now get off. I want us to talk."

Nkosi: "No I won't, we'll talk like this."

Me: "Nkosi why did you insult me? Don't you trust me?"

Nkosi: "I didn't mean to baby, I'm sorry I took out my anger to you. I was jealous and you were also not making things easy for me by your giggles. I trust you Thando, I trust you with my life. I'm sorry Baby, please

forgive me." He's genuine, I can see it in his eyes and how they got soft. "Ngicela ungixolele MaNdaba. Ngiyak'khumbula Sithandwa sami.(Please forgive me MaNdaba. I miss you My love.) Please." I smile and peck his lips. He smiles softly and I fall deeper in his love.

Me:"Ngiyakuxolela Mumbomhlophe." He kisses me and I kiss him back, closing my eyes while my hands roam around his back under his blazer. He takes it off and removes mine, I'm wearing a red suit with a black lacy bodysuit. He leaves my lips and kisses my neck and I give him access to it. He slips in his hands on my pant and holds my butt and I unbutton his shirt. I quickly think that I have to go and pass by the hospital and we're in his workplace. "Nkosi stop." He doesn't, he

just flicks my nipples ontop of this bodysuit.
"Nkosi huh uh." I push him and he stops then looks at me with his small redblood eyes. I giggle and quickly peck his lips.

Nkosi:"Why are you stopping me Thando?"
He says with a lazy husky low deep voice.

Me:"I have to go and I'm already late." He kisses me. "Nkosi!" He pulls out and goes to my neck.

Nkosi:"Where?" He says licking it, sending tingling sensations down there.

Me:"Somewhere." He holds my small nipple and pinches it. I moan out of pleasure because somehow it turns me on. "Nkosi stop, I have to go. Really."

Nkosi: "I said where?" I try to remove his body but it's hard. "Answer my question

Thando." I don't want to tell him that I'm going to the hospital because he can pull strings at the hospital for me to be hired back and I don't want that, I want to be accepted again because of my qualifications.

Me:"To the Mall. I want to buy grocery. "He stops pinching my nipple, he looks at me.

Nkosi:" You don't have to because tonight you're sleeping over." He pecks my lips. How will I go to the hospital then if he's coming up with solutions to my every lie. I sigh and try to remove him again but his body is still hard. He looks deep in my eyes and I look at him then quickly away. "Thando why does it seem like you don't want to be here anymore?" How do I answer that? Do I continue to lie or tell him the truth?

Me: "Nkosi I said that I have to go and I'm late already!"

Nkosi: "Where are you going because you don't have to be early or late for shopping? Thando why are you lying? What is it that you're not telling me?"

Me: "Nkosi there's nothing that I'm lying about. I have an appointment at the salon for my hair and nails. "

Nkosi: "Them why didn't you say that in the first place? Because you kept on saying you're late? Thando you're lying, I know. Tell me the truth, where are you going? "

Me: "Nkosi I'm not lying, stop making something out of nothing." He's still looking at me, three inches away from my face and I'm looking away.

Nkosi:"Milisuthando I know when you're telling me the truth. Are you going to stick to your lie?"

Me:"Nkosi there's no lie here." He looks at me chuckling and shaking his head.

Nkosi:"Okay." He stops holding my waist and stands up, he walks to his table and takes his phone then texts someone and his expression is very serious. I stand up and take my blazer and wear it. He also takes his blazer and wear it and looks at me "Let's go. I'll drive you." Why is he so persistent?

Me:"My chauffeur is waiting for me in the packing lot."

Nkosi: "Since when do you have a chauffeur?"

Me:"Since I came back. "

Nkosi: "When did you come back?"

Me: "Three days ago." He chuckles.

Nkosi: "And you're only seeing me today. Okay." I look at him. "Go. I will no longer drive you to wherever you're going." My body becomes relieved. "And suddenly relieve showers your face." He chuckles and shakes his head. "Come, I'll drop you in the packing lot." He walks to me and takes my hand and I take my bag then we go out. People are busy with their work and I suddenly think of that receptionist that was rude to me.

Me: "Where's that receptionist that didn't want me to go to your office?" He looks at me and opens the lift.

Nkosi: "I fired it on that day remember? "We get in.

Me:" But she said she has a grandmother to support Nkosi." It closes and it moves to the packing lot.

Nkosi:"I don't care. I told her that, she should have thought about her grandmother before making you wait in the reception chairs." I shake my head and keep quiet. It stops moving and it opens then we step out. We walk to the car and he sees the chauffeur. "Is this your chauffeur? Who hired this guy?" He suddenly becomes angry. I look at him confused.

Me: "My brothers." He removes his hand from mine and marches to the chauffeur. He holds him roughly by his blazer and shakes him.

Nkosi:"What to you want from her? Why did

you take the job?" He shakes him violently and the chauffeur is very calm.

Chauffeur: "I'm hired to drive her and I took the job because I need it. I don't even owe you an explanation." Nkosi punches him hard on the nose and it makes that craking sound and he bleeds, I'm sure his nose is broke, when he's about to punch him again I stop him because he'll hurt him and some of his employees are watching him. The chauffeur grunts and groans out of pain.

Me: "Lathi Stop! You're hurting him!" I run to the chauffeur but Nkosi holds my hand.

Nkosi: "Where do you think you're going? Because you'll not help him." I look at him unbelievably.

Me: "Nkosi he's hurt." He takes out his car

keys and gives them to me.

Nkosi: "Drive my car. I'd rather let have another accident than to let him drive you. Leave."

Me: "What about the car?"

Nkosi: "I'll drive it. I don't even know why you're still here asking me questions while you said you're late." I take them and click on the unlock button, a gold Audi beeps and I look at Nkosi. "Open it Thando." What!? He owns it? I didn't know that he owns it, I just know his BMW Coupe. This Audi is a beast! I jump up and down and run to it and open. I get in and Nkosi's cologne hits my nostrils, this car smells him. I close it and buckle safety belt. I start the engine and it roars! I scream out of excitement and I'm

startled by a knock in the window, I look and it's Nkosi. I open the door. "Don't make me regret giving you my car Thando. Drive safely and don't speed." I nod and close the door and drive to the hospital. I arrive by 10:48 and the stares I get when I come out of MY MAN'S CAR! I hold my head up high and go to the reception and see Nandi, she's busy. I clear my throat and she doesn't look at me. I clear it again and she talks.

Nandi: "Say it if you want Screpils, I'll give them to you." I laugh and she looks at me. "NATASHA!" She says screaming more like shouting my name and that draws more attention. She engulfs me in a hug and I hug her back, she sniffs and I pull out, she's crying. "I thought I lost you Natasha." I hug her again and I hear someone dropping

something and screams, I pull out and look at her and it's Zenande! She runs to me and engulfs me in a hug! So heartfelt hug!"

Zena:"I thought I lost you Tash! And to think that we talked about yourself yesterday just makes me want to cry!" I group hug her and Nandi.

Me:"I'd never leave my ladies and go to hell."

Nandi:"I doubt that you would have gone to hell because you're very innocent! "We laugh and pull out.

Me:" I love you Ladies."

"We also love you baby." They say in unison. They call me baby because I'm the youngest. Nandi is years and Zenande is years.

Me:"Have to meet Mr Mabutho ladies, sorry."

Nandi:"Such a bummer! You'd swear you never missed us." She says sad, they're both sad.

Me:"I want to ask for my job back guys, please let me."

Zena:"We'll let you go just because you want your job back." She says smiling. I love her personality- it's warm and Nandi's personality is wild, I also love hers.

Me:"See you after it." I catwalk to his office and I get in because he said come in. Our meeting starts.

**Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com**

CHAPTER 😊

TWENTY EIGHT ♥

NATASHA ❁

I went out of Mr Mabutho's office with a huge grin on my face. I was happy, more than happy, he gave me back the job and he said that I'm starting on the 3rd of September which is next week! I'm so happy! I missed my clients, especially my kids, I missed work and the harmony and peace it brought to my heart. I catwalked to the Cafeteria because I know that I'll find the ladies eating and I did. They were only chatting and they stopped when they saw me. I opened my arms and they screamed and hugged me.

Nandi: "And I already know that you got the job."

Me: "I am Natasha Zulu🌍 so I'm bound to get it back! and lunch is on me, take your bags and follow me to my car! "I catwalk to the exit door and walk to my Mans Car. I open it and it opens, I open the door and they scream jumping up and down.

Zena: " Oh my God! Can't believe I'm riding in this Car! Oh Jesus!" We laugh at her.

Nandi: "I wonder how you moan if you call i and God just because you'll be riding in it. Well I'm taking the front seat!"

Zena: "No you can't Nandi! Not after you have insulted me." I put my bag inside the car.

Nandi: "No Zena, I wasn't insulting you, I was wondering. Don't be offended please." Zena just walks to me and I look at her and look

back at Nandi. "I'm sorry Zena. You can take the front seat." Zena giggles and runs to the passengers door and gets in. Nandi also gets in and we drive to Spur. We arrive and order. My cellphone beeps and I take it out, it's a message from Nkosi. It says.

~•Drive to this address when you want to go to my house. 1448 Houghton Residence. I love you♥•~ I don't even know where's Houghton, I'll just put it on the GPS. "Tasha where did you get this iPhone?"

Me:"Nkosi's mom brought it for me."

Nandi: "Who is Nkosi?" I look at her.

Me:"My man."

Zena:"Man! As in your boyfriend?"

Me:"Yes and he doesn't like to be called like

that."

Zena:"How old is he?" I look down.

Me:"35 years."

Zena:"And how old are you?"

Me:"Hawu! You know moss how old I am. I'm 26 years."

I look to see her expression and it's like she's disappointed or angry. "What?"

Zena:"Thando he is old for you. You can't date someone who's 35 years, at least if he was 30years."

Me:"But I love him."

Nandi:"Do I know your man?" I look at her and nod.

Me:"You have saw him, he's the guy that you

saw me with when you went to me to give me a file, and he took it and you ran away because of his look and voice." She looks at me like she's thinking and her eyes pop out.

Nandi:"Thando! That Guy! OMG! He's talking about Nkosiyomuzi Mkhize Zena." What?

Me:"How do you know him?" She chuckles.

Nandi: "That guy is my crush and he's one of the successful business man in South Africa. He's more like a celebrity because he's always in newspapers and magazines. You see this thing of yours of not being a social media person is making you miss out on your man." Her crush?

Me:"But you ran away from him, how can you run away from your crush?" She Laughs.

Nandi:"Baby, that guy is scary! It was like

I'm gonna shit on my self when he looked at me. "We laugh at her. " It's not even funny Tash, tell me how do you deal with his scary personality? "

Zena:"Nandi is telling the truth Tash, that guy is scary. I saw him one day in the parking lot, at the hospital. I mean like, that guy's walk says "look at me! Respect!" His look can kill a person Girl!" I laugh at her.

Nandi: "You should hear his voice. Cha baba,it will make you kneel down. That guy's voice carries so much power, demand respect and authority! Yho! It's very deep! I have never heard a voice so deep like that. I don't know how you deal with that Tash because cha, I couldn't."

Me:"Stop talking like that about my man and

he's not like that when he's with me although I will agree with the walk and voice. And you should hear his father's voice! It will make you feel be very scared and uncomfortable." We eat, catch up and leave. I drive them back to work and I drive to the salon to make a new weave and nails. By 17:12 I'm done. I walk around the mall and my eyes land on a very gorgeous watch. I get into the shop and walk to it. I look at its price and it's R48 000. I'm buying it for Nkosi. An assistant comes to me smiling.

Assist:"Good evening. How can I help you?"

Me:"Evening, I'm taking this watch." She takes it and we walk to the till.

Assist: "Will you buy it cash or on credit?"

Me:"Cash. I'll use my credit card." She nods

and walks behind the till. I look around.

Assist: "Credit card please." I look at her and take out the credit card and give it to her.

We do the necessary things and I take my card back. "Here. Thank you." I nod, take the watch and put it inside my bag then walk out.

I go to Debonair's pizza and buy 2 large pizzas with a juice then go out. I walk to the parking lot and I walk to my car. Well it's mine now, I feel like someone is running after me and I increase my pace. The car is very far and I don't reach it. Someone grabs my arm and I look, it's Bulelani. I yank my arm and he blocks my way. "I see you survived the accident." I look at him confused. "And I see you're still with your boyfriend." I try to walk pass him buy he blocks my way again.

Me: "Bulelani move away from me!" I look around the packing lot and it's quiet.

Bulelani: "You're coming with me." He pulls me to walk with him but I fight him and the pizza, drink falls. "Stop fighting me damnit!" I kick his private part and he bends, letting go of me. I take that chance to runaway. I run to my car while looking for the keys in the bag. I find them and open the car, it beeps. "Come here! Bitch!" I look at him and he's running after me. I increase my pace and I reach my car. I open it and step inside and close the door then press the lock button and the doors lock. I catch my breath and close my eyes, tears fall and someone bangs the window hard. I look and it's Bulelani. "Open this door." He bangs the window like it's going to break. He reveals a

gun and bangs the window with it. "Open this fucken door Natasha!" How does her know my name because I've never told him. I take keys and start the engine. He tries to unlock the door but it doesn't, the engine roars and the car beeps indicating that the fuel is low. I look at Bulelani and he's angry. I look around and I see no car, I reverse and drive off fast. The car doesn't stop beeping. I take out my phone while driving fast, I dial Nkosi's number and it rings. He answers.

Me:"Nkosi please come and take me. "

Nkosi:"Thando what's wrong? Where are you?" By hearing his voice, I'm already crying.

Me:"I'm driving out of the mall." I say between my cries.

Nkosi:"Thando you're driving?! You can't drive in your state of mind Thando! Stop the car and send me the location! I'm coming! Don't hung up! "

Me:"Nkosi I can't stop driving! He'll come after me! "

Nkosi:"Then try to lose him!" I hear him running.

Me:"The fuel is low Nkosi! The car can't stop beeping and I don't know Jo'burg!" I hear him shutting a door.

Nkosi:"What!? Thando stop the car! Now!" I try to stop the car but it doesn't stop.

Me:"Nkosi it doesn't stop!" I say panicking and crying.

Nkosi:"Thando stop crying! Step on the break

and accelerator." He says softly.

Me:"Nkosi there are cars behind me, I'll cause an accident and the fuel indicator is red now. Nkosi I can't be involved in an accident again!" I sob.

Nkosi: "Thando! Thando listen." I bite my lips to stop crying. "Drive to a lane that doesn't have many cars." I drive to it. "Now step on the accelerator and break at the same time." I do it and the car slows down. "Now find somewhere you can stop and send me the location." I stop near the road and send him the location. "Did you the car of that man that came after you?"

Me:"No." I'm shaking right now.

Nkosi: "Did you lock the doors?"

Me:"Yes. Nkosi I'm scared." Tears fall again.

Nkosi: "I'm coming my love. Try to calm down okay. I love you." I'm shaking now, I lye my head on the steering wheel crying. I'm frightened by a knock on the window and I scream. "Baby it's me." I look at the window and I see Nkosi, I quickly open the door and throw my self in his arms. He lifts me up and brushes my back while my legs are wrapped around his waist and I'm crying on his neck. "I'm sorry Baby, I'm sorry." He keeps on rubbing my back until I keep quiet, we walk to my car and he opens the door and puts me inside the car, kisses my forehead and closes the door. I lye down and close my eyes and I slowly drift to sleep.

NKOSIYOMUZI❀

I went back to my car and took Thando's bag

and cellphone then locked the car. I called Lwazi to fetch my car. I walked back to Thando's car , I opened the door and putted the bag inside and closed it, I looked at the backseat and I saw her sleeping, my poor baby. I walk to my side and open the door then hop in and close the door. I turn on the heat so that the car must be warm for the sleeping Thando. I drive off to my house that's in Houghton. It's takes me 45 minutes to get there because I'm driving slowly so that Thando doesn't wake up. I open the window and put my hand on the scanner, the garage opens and I wipe the scanner. I get inside and park near the pool then take out Thando. I walk inside the house and go to my bedroom, put her ontop of the bed and remove her heels, blazer, trouser and tuck

her inside the blankets. I turn on the heater and leave her in the room. I go to my office and lock the door, call Smart.

Smart:"Gabhadiya."

Me:"Talk."

Smart:"She went to the hospital to ask for her job ku Lwazi. After that, she met her friends from the hospital and they went to Spur for lunch. She drove them back to the hospital and went to the Mall to do their stuff and went to The Watches. She went to Debonair and brought pizza, a juice, when she went to the packing lot, she met a guy named Bulelani, then started harassing her until she kicked kwi 4 5 (Penis) and run away and the bursted ran after her with a gun then she called you. He didn't follow her." By

the time he's done talking, I'm already fuming.

Me: "What does Bulelani want from Thando?"

Smart: "He wants Natasha to be his woman and he's Bipolar." Oh hell will have to come if he wants my women. I hung up and walk to my bedroom and go to my closet. I remove all my clothes until I'm left with briefs then wear my gym gears and walk out. I run around my house, when I've finished 3km, I walk to my gym, it's in the house. I gym for a very long time until I remember that I felt Thando alone. I walk to my room, go to the bathroom and take a shower. When I'm done, I lotion and go out stark naked. Thando screams and I look at her, when did she wakeup? She's sitting up with her head on the headboard,

she's closing her eyes with her hands. I go to her and sit on the bed next to her.

Me: "Thando what's wrong?"

Thando: "You're naked Nkosi!"

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

TWENTY NINE ♥

NKOSIYOMUZI ❁

Me: "Then what's wrong about my nakedness?"
"

Thando: "Nkosi I saw your 'thing' and it's very scary. It's huge and long and black. It's

just scary and I'm surprised that I didn't faint."

Me:"But baby it's not huge, maybe you didn't see it right. Just take a look again and touch it." She quickly removes her hands and looks at me straight in the eye. Her expression is very funny, I laugh at her. "You should see yourself right now."

Thando:"You're crazy Nkosi. I'll not look at that anaconda and touch it. No."

Me:"Anaconda? You're exaggerating now Baby. You should look at it and touch it so that you can get used to it and it will enter you very soon." She looks at me and walks to the bathroom, she's still in her lacy bodysuit and it reveals her butt so good because it's kind of huge now and I immediately get a

hard-on and follow her. She stands in the mirror and washes her face and teeth.

Thando:"No anaconda will enter in my small cookie jar." She turns around and quickly closes her eyes again. "Wear a gown Nkosi." How will she get used to my nakedness because I enjoy walking around naked. I take the gown and wear it then walk closer to her and kiss her lips, closing my eyes. She kisses me back and my hands go to her butt cheeks and I caress them. She holds my waist and I also hold hers. I pull out and open my eyes, she still has her eyes closed. I peck her eyes and she smiles and opens them.

Me:"You're very beautiful MaNdaba." She smiles and walks out, I follow her.

Thando:"Let's go to the kitchen and make

something to eat." I walk to her and hold her hand then we leave the room. We walk on the passage. "Baby whose house is this? Because I didn't come here the last time. "

Me:"It's mine baby, you didn't come here because the restaurant we went to is far from here."

Thando:"Okay. Who built it ? Because it's very beautiful and classic simple." We walk to the kitchen and I let her hand go then sit on the kitchen chair.

Me:"I built it. It's for me and my family."

She nods and looks around the drawers.

"What are you looking for?"

Thando: "Something to cook."

Me:"No don't, it's already late for supper, make a sandwich and a juice. The plates are

below that top drawer." She bends her back, revealing her round huge butt, fuck! If she wasn't a virgin, I would have long fucked her and I suddenly here hissing, groaning and cursing sounds. I look at the door and I see the guys. They'll looking at Thando with their jaws dropped. I quickly stand up and run to her and stand behind her back.

Thando: "Nkosi what are you doing behind me?"

Me: "Baby please stand up and put the plates on the counter." She stands up and puts them on the counter. "Please endure anaconda Baby ,okay?" She nods and I untie the gowns and pull her to me then tie it. "I know it's poking baby, please be patient." I turn her around and when she sees my friends, she

becomes very embarrassed and shy, she looks down and I hold her hands and we pass the guys without even greeting. We walk to our bedroom in silence and I open the door. She quickly unties the gown and walks to the closet, I close it and follow her. I find her wearing my yellow Vanquish tracksuits.

Thando: "Did they see my body? Like my behind?" I nod and she walks out. I lotion and also wear a Vanquish black tracksuit and walk to the bedroom. I find her in the covers, sitting up with her head in the headboard.

Me: "Aren't we going downstairs?"

Thando: "No I'm not. I'm embarrassed." I walk to her and sit next to her.

Me: "Then what about the sandwich?"

Thando: "Please make and come here with

them."

Me: "What about my friends?"

Thando: "You'll only bring my sandwich then and stay with your friends." I nod and stand up then walk to the door, I close it and walk to the kitchen. Just the minute I step into the kitchen, they are all on their feet barking me with questions

Ayabonga: "Dude! Is that your chick?! She's so fucken sexy!"

Bongani: "I didn't know that she is this thick! Fuck! Her ass dude! How do you handle such!? You're truly a King! "

Sibulele: "I didn't know she was shy and cute at the same time. But King, isn't she young? Because she looks like a baby although she's beautiful and has a beautiful body. How do

you hurt someone like that?"

Lwazi: "I didn't know she's this thick and hot beyond those suits and long dresses she wears. She knew that she hid a cargo."

Ayabonga: "I didn't know you smash thick chicks now."

Bongani: "I thought that he said, 'I'd never smash nor date a thick chick. I mean she'd kill me by just sitting on my face when I'm trying to muff her. No, thick chicks are not my types.' Or he didn't Lwazi."

Lwazi: "Ask him for yourself. You see he's right here."

Me: "Well she changed that." I answer walking towards the refrigerator and take out the ingredients.

Ayabonga: "King I want to know one thing. How do you sleep with an ass like that in front of your dick? I mean, that chick has an ass for decades! I would fuck her everywhere around the house. I'd never get enough of her." He asks reality fast.

Bongani: "And I'd want to hit it from behind!"

Me: "I also don't know dude. I knew that few weeks ago but now, it's like her butt keeps on growing and I can't keep my eyes and hands off her. But I'm not about her body and I'm not discussing anything about her with you." I make the sandwich and juice.

Sibulele: "What happened to you and the sudden change? I mean, you can't control yourself for at all. I should buy Natasha a

car really because she changed you." I shake my head and put the sandwiches on a tray.

Me: "Boys, I'm going to sleep. Do whatever you're doing. You know your way around this house." I walk out with them shouting that I must keep it low when fucking her. I open the door and close it and I see a smiling Thando. "Who's making my woman smile?" She looks at me and grins, probably because I've got food. I walk towards her and give her the tray and take my own juice and sandwich.

Thando: "Siblings and friends." I nod and we eat in silence. She finishes her sandwich and puts the tray on the sideboard and walks to the bathroom. I also finish and take her plate and go to the kitchen. I put them in the sink and when I pass the lounge, I see the

guys making noise while watching soccer. I pass them and go to my room and I find Thando getting in the covers with her bodysuit/lingerie. I also remove my clothes until I'm left with my brief and I join her.

Me: "Thando are you okay? Are we fine? If it's about the incident I'm sorry that I couldn't protect you. I'm sorry that I fired your chauffeur and risked your safety but I couldn't let him drive you." I ask concerned and really worried. She has been too quiet today.

Thando: "Yes I'm fine and we're also fine. Don't bit your self up for something you couldn't control. You fired him because of your reasons and I believe that it wasn't jealousy. But thank you for showing up." I

don't ask more. I smile and pull her to lie on my chest.

Me: "I'll hire a bodyguard for you and a chauffeur, okay?"

Thando: "A bodyguard is not necessary Nkosi."
"

Me: "Okay then, let's sleep." I kiss her forehead and tilt her face up to me and kiss her lips. "I love you." She smiles, more like blushing.

Thando: "And I love you more." I smile.

Me: "But not like I do." She puts her leg between mine. "Thando what are you trying to do?" She looks at me innocently and smiles.

Thando: "I'm trying to sleep in a comfortable

position." I chuckle and peck her lips.

Me:"Then don't complain when my manhood pokes you."

Thando:"I want to sleep Nkosi. Can we?" I nod. "I didn't mean to hurt you but I'm sleepy Nkosi. "

Me:"But you've just woke up Thando. Maybe a hour ago." She looks at me and smiles.

"Why are you smiling?" She giggles and kisses my lips, slowly sleeping ontop of me and I gently hold her butt and squeeze it. She moans puts her legs on my sides, I slip my tounge in and the kiss quickly turns in to a lustful kiss. I quickly pull out because I don't want what happened at my father's house happen again. I open my eyes and I see her looking at me with a wide smile. I smile back.

Thando: "You're so handsome Nkosi." I grin.
"And you're blushing." I chuckle but it comes out as a giggle.

Me: "Baby what are you doing to me?" She giggles and pecks my lips. "You're slowly changing me into a new man that I've never thought I would be." She smiles.

Thando: "A good new man or a bad new man?"

Me: "A good new man. "

-
-
-

•Decided to give you a little something.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

THIRTY ♥

NATASHA 🌸

I'm woken up by Nkosi kissing my lips. "Nkosi no, my morning breath." He stops kissing me and I slowly open my eyes, it's in the morning.

Nkosi: "I don't care about your morning breath because I'm stuck with it for life." I smile and sit up against the headboard. He gives me a tray with breakfast and I eat. Reason why I'm only complaining about my breath is because his breath smells a mint. I finish eating and he takes the tray and puts

it on the sideboard. He holds my hands slowly pulling me off the bed.

Me: "Where are we going?"

Nkosi: "To take a shower." We walk to the bathroom and he locks the bathroom door. He removes my lingerie and I let him be. He puts it on the couch that's near the wall.

"Remove my brief." He says looking at me straight in the eye. What!? "Yes, you heard correct." I look at him unbelievably.

Me:"Nkosi, I can't. You also know it." He nods and when he's about to remove it, I close my eyes.

Nkosi:"Thando open your eyes and look at me." I shake my head. "Thando." He says with a stern voice and I slowly open my eyes and look at him straight in the eye. "Why do you

always close your eyes when you see me naked? Why don't you look at my manhood?" I want to look down but I'll see his manhood so I look aside.

Me:"I'm not used to seeing a naked man."

Nkosi: "In your life, you've never saw a naked man?"

Me:"No, I haven't. "

Nkosi:"Then you'll get used at seeing me naked." He comes closer and I don't look at him. "Thando look at me." I look at him. "Look at my body." I can't.

Me:"Nkosi I can't." He steps back.

Nkosi:"You can and you will. Look at my body Thando." He says all of this calm. "Look at my face." I look at it and he smiles, I also smile.

"Look at my chest." I look at it and it's big. I chuckle. "Look at my abs." I look at them and I suddenly want to touch them. "Come and touch them." He says as if he read my mind. I walk to him and touch them, he groans softly and I quickly stop.

Me: "Are my hands cold?" I say looking at him.

Nkosi: "No, they're not. It's just that, your touch." He shakes his head like he wants to remove some thoughts. "It's.. No, lets carry on. Look at my abs and continue touching them." I look back at them and continue tracing them. He groans softly and hold my shoulders, I look at him and his eyes are closed. "Stop looking at me." I quickly look back at his abs. "Look at my manhood." I suddenly tense and I feel his eyes on me. "I

won't repeat my self Thando." He says, still calm. I fail to look at it. "Thando." He says with a calm yet stern voice and I close my eyes and breath in and out then open them. I slowly look down at it and I see it looking at me. I release a little scream and quickly close my eyes. He chuckles. "Don't be scared and over think things Thando. It doesn't bite. Relax and look at it." He kisses my forehead and pecks my lips. I relax and try to look at it again. My eyes close again. "Thando relax." I open and try look at it again but I can't. "Thando I can stop what I'm doing if you feel like you're uncomfortable because I'm trying to make you get used to seeing me naked. Should I stop? Because I will, and maybe by time you'll get used to seeing me naked because every time when I'll step out of the

bathroom, I'll step out naked so I don't want to make you uncomfortable around ,okay?"

Me:"Let's take a shower." I step in the shower and he follows then closes the door. I switch on the water and when I try to take the sponge, he takes it and squeezes the shower jell to it. He turns me to look at him and I do, he washes my body very slowly and gently and when he's done, he takes the shower jell again and squeeze it. When he's about to wash his body, I quickly take the sponge and he looks at me confused. "I'll wash your body." He looks at doubtfully and I give him an assuring look and smile. I should1 really get used to seeing Nkosi's body. I mean, when will I stop behaving the way that I do everytime when I see his naked body because I'll definetly see his manhood that

I'm scared of looking at. He nods and I wash his upper body. I wash his waist and hips then move closer to him and wash his butt, I remove the sponge and hold it then squeeze it. Nkosi chuckles and I look at him.

Nkosi:"Baby why are you squeezing my butt?"
I giggle.

Me:"I wanted to feel how hard it is because it looks firm." We laugh together and I step back then kneel down. My heart is beating out of my chest. I look at his manhood and it's pointing North with big veins popping out and I suddenly shiver. I wash his legs and when I reach his manhood area, I hold his manhood with my left hand, even thou it doesn't fit. It looks scary, very scary and it doesn't help that it's huge. I gulp down the

saliva that on my throat and take the sponge then wash it. When I'm satisfied that it's clean, I also wash his testicles and drop the sponge. I touch his testicles and they are slippery and immediately, Nkosi groans like he's feeling pleasure in what I'm doing. I touch his manhood with a frown in my face because it was moving around, I squeeze it and it's hard like a rock and I immediately let go of it and stand up. When I look at Nkosi, his eyes are tightly and he is holding on the wall. I look at him confused. "Nkosi?" He opens his eyes slowly and looks at me. His eyes are very small now and bloodshot.

Nkosi:"Come here." He says in a deep yet low husky voice. I move closer to him and he intertwines our hands and we kiss very slow,gently and deep with his manhood is just

poking my stomach. He slips in his tongue and our tongues roll on each other. I want to touch him, I want to feel his body against mine, I move more to him and our bodies touch. His body is so warm against mine and the steam in the shower is also making it hot here. I try to remove my hands in his but he tightens his hold.

Me: "Nkosi I want to touch you." I say in between the kiss but he doesn't listen to me. He pins me against the wall and kisses fast and more deep, then he slowly pulls out leaving me breathless. I slowly open my eyes and find him looking at me also breathlessly.

Nkosi: "Let's get out of here. It's hot." He says in a husky low voice. He let's go of my hands and I go out and take a towel and go in

our bedroom. I sit on top of the bed and wipe my hair. Nkosi comes in stark naked with his manhood pointing North.

Me: "Please give me the lotion." I clear my throat because my voice is suddenly small and low. He takes it and comes to me and removes the towel and wrap it on my head. He takes another one and dries my body then lotions it. "Please take the grey CK brief." I say as he's looking for a brief.

Nkosi: "What will you wear?"

Me: "The bottle green Vanquish short and vest." Well there's a sun outside so I don't want to wear warm clothes. He comes back with them and dresses me up the brief even thou there was a struggle with it. When he dresses me up the short, it doesn't fit, it

stops below my butt.

Nkosi: "Baby this short doesn't fit you." I remove his hands from it and pull it up while jumping up and down. "Baby you'll tore apart my short." It's his favourite.

Me: "It won't because it will fit." He sighs and sits down while watching me.

Nkosi: "It won't baby and you saw that the brief also doesn't fit you, it's small. I'm starting to think that some of your clothes should stay here because my clothes no longer fit you, well it's because of your butt."

Me: "Nkosi what are you to say about my butt?"

Nkosi: "That it's growing rapidly. Come here." I walk to him and he pulls up the

shorts until they fit. "Huu! Finally it fits in."
I chuckle and take out the clothes he'll wear.
I take the lotion and lotion his body, when
I'm about to dress him the brief he stops me.
"I'll wear the clothes by myself my love. Just
keep your self busy with something." I kiss
him and take the tray then go downstairs. I
step in the kitchen and wash the dishes.

"Good morning." I turn and look at the person
who greets and it's Nkosi's friend. I turn
back and wash the dishes.

Me:"Hi ."

"I'm Sibulele. I suppose you're Thando." He
says.

Me:"Yes. I am but I prefer Natasha. "

Nkosi:"Because I'm the only one who's
supposed to call you My Love." I look at him

as he is walking towards me with a smile plastered on his face. I smile back and continue to wash the dishes. I feel his hands on my waist and he pulls me for a hug from behind.

"Dude you're whipped!" A manly voice says.

Nkosi: "Fuck off Ayabonga." He squeezes me.

"We should have stayed in bed and let these idiots stay here alone. I even miss you." He kisses my neck.

"Nkosi you're very tall. Thando should be with me you know. I mean, I'm not so tall and I'm sure your love for her is not like mine." I think that it's Ayabonga who's speaking.

Nkosi quickly lets go of my waist and turns to him. "King I'm joking!!" He quickly shouts.

Someone laughs and I look at them, it's Mr

Mabutho.

Lwazi: "Nkosi will kill you Ayabonga if you're not careful. He'll squash your little body."

They all laugh. "Good morning Natasha." I look at him.

Me: "Morning Mr-"

Lwazi: "No formalities please. Lwazi is fine."

Ayabonga: "And her voice is sooo soft and calm." I look at Nkosi and he's staring Ayabonga. I wipe the dishes.

Me: "Nkosi, put the dishes in their places." He stops staring Ayabonga. He takes the dishes and puts them in their places.

Nkosi: "You better be out when I come back Ayabonga. Thando let's go to the shops." He says with a hard voice and straight hard face.

He takes my hand and the car keys and we go out. He's walking very fast and his strides are long, well because he is tall and mine are short, well because I'm short.

Me:"Nkosi don't walk too fast. I can't catch up with you." I tell him and he stops and looks at me. Another thing that I notice about Nkosi is that, when he's angry, his eyes are very red, his nose flicks together with his upper lip and he clench his jaws. I look at him and quickly look down.

Nkosi:"I'm sorry." I nod and we walk to the car in silence. We walk to my side and he opens the door for me and I step in and he closes it then walk to his side. He starts the car and he drives with his right hand on the steering wheel and other is ontop of his

thigh.

Me:"Nkosi you know that you don't have to be jealous and entertain other people when they're making comments about me, you know right?" I say looking at him and he looks at me back and looks on the road.

Nkosi:"I can't help my self Thando. I don't want to lose you. They're perfect and I'm not, I'm scared you'll fall in love with them. I trust you but ... I don't want to lose you Thando." He says genuinely and I smile at him because he actually told me his fear. I hold his hand that's on the thigh.

Me:"You don't to be scared. I love you with your imperfections and flaws. I'm sure if there were no imperfections, I wouldn't have loved you so don't be scared. I actually

didn't know that you fear losing me."

Nkosi: "But don't use that to your advantage

Thando. Please." I nod. "Why didn't you tell

me that yesterday you went to visit Lwazi?

Actually, you went to ask for your job back?"

Oh my, how did he know about that? I look

out of the window, not knowing how to answer

him and how the topic changed. "Answer me

Natasha."

Me:"I didn't because I thought you'll do

favours for me and I didn't want that. "

Nkosi: "So you preferred to lie at me?" I

look down and play with my fingers. "One

thing you have to know about me

Milisuthando is that I hate lies and a person

who's not loyal. I asked you many times

yesterday because I saw that you lied to me

but you kept on lying. How would you feel if I lied to you?" I look everywhere except his eyes. "I don't want you to ever lie to me again Milisuthando. No matter what, you hear me?"

Me: "Since you don't want me to lie, I hope you're also honest." I hear him chuckling.

Nkosi: "Have I ever lied to you Milisuthando?" I shake my head. "Then why would I do something that I hate when someone else is doing it? I don't want lies in our relationship Thando. That's all." He says in a final voice and that's when I notice that we're in Mall of Africa. I open the door and step out then close it. Just as I'm about to walk, Nkosi holds my hand, I want to roll my eyes but I don't know how to. We walk to the

entrance in silence and his cellphone rings. I look at him and he answers it. "My love of my life." He says with a smile. I yank my arm and walk fast. I take a trolley and go to an isle that has snacks. I take Mexican Lays, milk chocolate bubble, chocolate covered marshmallows and put them in a trolley. I try to reach for rusks that are at the top but I can't, I jump up and down trying to take them but I can't and I'm startled by a sting on my butt. I touch it and I turn, I see Bulelani smirking. Oh my God, he spanked my ass. Just as I'm about to shout at him, I see him bleeding and groaning. I turn my whole body to look at him and I see Nkosi punching him and he's also groaning. He's punching him non stop and fast until they're on the floor, I quickly shout at him to stop punching him

when I see blood on the floor but he doesn't stop and everyone is watching him. I'm even scared to touch Nkosi because it's like he's fighting an animal.

Me:"LATHI STOP PLEASE!!! YOU'RE HURTING HIM!!!" He doesn't stop.

"NKOSIYOMUZI I SAID STOP!!!" Instead of stopping, he stands up with him and the securities come at rescue and stops Nkosi. They remove him and Bulelani had blood all over his face and t-shirt.

Nkosi: "Let's get out of here." I just look at him and continue shopping my snacks, all he does is to follow me around. We walk to the till and I notice that his hands have blood.

Me:"Nkosi go and wash off the blood." He looks at his hands and shakes his head.

Nkosi: "I won't leave you here alone." I look at him disapprovingly. I pay for the snacks and we leave the mall. We walk to the parking lot in silence with Nkosi carrying the plastic. He opens the door for me when we arrive at the car and I get in then he puts the plastic on the back. He locks the car and walks back to the mall. I sigh and take the lays and start eating. He comes back after a while and gets in then drives off. "Are you okay thou?" I look at him and nod.

Me: "Yes, I am and you didn't have to beat him up Nkosi."

Nkosi: "I had to. I didn't deal with him when he harassed you because I'm with you and I can't leave you alone and deal with that s-." He doesn't finish the word, he just tightens

his hold on the wheel and inhale and exhale.
"You know what, I'm not going to listen to you. I'm going to hire a chauffeur and a bodyguard for you. No discussion." He says with a hard voice and I look at him.

Me:"A bod-" I don't even finish my sentence, he stops me by talking harshly.

Nkosi:"Milisuthando I said I'm hiring a bodyguard and a chauffeur for you end of discussion! I'm not going to have Bulelani hovering around you busy harassing you and touching your body okay! And it's time that I deal with him now before his behavior escalates." He says sternly with a hard voice and face. I didn't know Nkosi can be like this, he's not the gentle Nkosi that I know.

Me:"Nkosi don't change just because of

Bulelani. Please." I don't want him to change.

Nkosi:"I'm not changing. This is who I am, you just don't know me." And he speeds off. If I don't know him, then who is he? I don't like this Nkosi, it's like he's possessed or something.

Me:" Then who are you if I don't know you?"

Nkosi:"You'll know me by time." He says dismissively. I decide to shut up. I curse the day I met Bulelani. If I didn't meet him, I wouldn't witness this Nkosi, the changing Nkosi because right now, he's very unpredictable and I can't read his expression but it's dangerous. His face is straight and hard, I wish that he doesn't kill him because I won't deal with that, I won't know how to handle his death. Well I don't know how to

deal and handle deaths, I just become numb and ignorant. Whoah! Do I think that Nkosi can kill someone? How did I think that? I wish he's not capable of doing that. I'll just ask him, I hope he won't be mad.

Me: "You won't kill him right?" I ask softly as I can. He stops the car and looks at me straight in the eye blankly. Why is he so hard to read!?" He gets out of the car and that's when I notice that we've arrived. I also open my door and get out then take out my plastic. I walk to house and I get in, it's so quiet, I guess his friends are gone. I put the plastic on the kitchen counter and walk to our bedroom and Nkosi is not here. I take off his short, even thou it's a struggle and wear yesterday's clothes. I brush my weave and take my car keys that are on the dressing

table. I walk downstairs and I take the plastic, I won't look for Nkosi. I think he needs space. Just as I open the front door, I see 4 policemen and I look at them confused. One of them speaks

Police: "Good day miss, we're looking for Mr Nkosiyomuzi Mkhize, we believe that this is his house."

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

THIRTY ONE ♥

NATASHA 🌸

Me: "Why do you want him?" Just as the

policeman is about to answer me, Nkosi's deep voice speaks.

Nkosi:"Gentlemen." The policeman that was talking chuckles while his partners are dumbfounded.

Policeman: "Nkosiyomuzi Mkhize, you're under arrest for assaulting Bulelani Zondo public. An-" Nkosi cuts the policeman.

Nkosi:"I know the procedure Mokoena. We can leave." Leave!?! Nkosi goes to a jail?

Me:"Nkosi you can't." I say on the verge of crying, he can't leave. "Police, it's Bulelani who-" the policeman cuts me and signals his partners to cuff Nkosi.

Policeman: "I'm not here about that. If it's Zondo who did something, then you should have reported first. Cuff him man! What?!"

You're scared of him now!? I'll cuff him by my self then." He walks to his partner and grabs the handcuffs and cuffs Nkosi roughly. I look at Nkosi with tears falling on my face and he's clenching jaws while his eyes are tightly closed.

Me:"Nkosi. When are you coming back?" He opens his eyes and just as he's about to talk, the policeman pushes him out. "Nkosi!" I call out his name while sobbing but he doesn't turn. I don't know what to do! I'm confused and I don't want Nkosi sleeping in jail. I just drop the plastic and run to my car with my bag, cellphone and car keys. I start the car and drive to the station. There's no traffic so I arrive and park at the parking lot and take out my bag and I go inside more like running. I run to the door and when I'm

inside, I see Nkosi walking away with that policeman. I quickly call out his name and he quickly turns to look at me, he's uncuffed and I run to him and throw myself in his arms and he quickly holds me. I close my eyes to stop the tears from coming out, he brushes my back and I melt in his embrace. The another policeman clears his throat and I slowly let go of Nkosi.

Me:"Nkosi what should I do?" He looks at me and kisses my forehead.

Nkosi:"Call Lwazi and tell him to come here."

Me:"I'll wait for you." He shakes his head.

Nkosi:"You can't, I might come out tomorrow and I don't want you to sleep here. I'm grateful that you came for me but I didn't want you to step in a police station. So call

Lwazi and go home."

Me:"But Nkosi I don't want you to sleep here. I'll call my father to come here and help you." He chuckles and pulls my chubby cheeks.

Nkosi:"And if you do that, your father will think that I'm a criminal and you shouldn't have a criminal in your life so he'll break us apart."

Me:"Then you'll be my criminal." I say with a faint smile.

Nkosi: "It's okay then. Now please leave." I look down and play with my fingers.

"Sthandwa sami please look at me." When he calls me 'Sthandwa sami' I swear I melted. I smile very wide and looked at him and he was smiling. I involuntarily hug him very tight and

warm and lay my head on his chest while he's laying his head on my shoulder. "I love you, okay?" He says after a squeeze and I nod.

Me: "I love you too." And my heart starts beating fast. He removes his head and I look at him while he's looking at me. I smile warmly and he also smiles very beautifully. My MAN is very handsome people! He lifts my chin bends his back and kisses my lips very slowly. He lifts me up from the ground still kissing me and I hold on his broad shoulders and we kiss very passionately and gentle, he has never kisses me like this. I don't want to pull out of the kiss so I wrap my arms around his neck and he chuckles on my mouth causing me to moan and I messed it by moaning because he quickly pulled out. I hide my face on his neck giggling while he

chuckles.

Nkosi: "Baby you can't moan publicly." He puts me down and I let go of his neck. He pecks my lips and smiles sweetly. "Please go home and don't be sad baby. Please." I look down and nod. "Sithandwa sami." He says like he's pushing me to leave.

Me: "I'll go when I see you walking away."

Nkosi: "Baby you can't. Please." I hug him for the last time and he hugs me very tightly. It lasts more than the other hugs. He slowly pulls away and I let go of his and walk to the door very slowly. I feel like I'm going to cry but I stop myself and tears fall. I stop walking and look at where Nkosi was and he's looking at me. I wipe my tears and run to him again and throw myself in his arms and cry

softly. He holds me tightly while brushing my back.

Me:"Nkosi I can't leave you here. I can't." I say in between the cries.

Nkosi:"You can baby. Yes you can Sithandwa sami." I shake my head disagreeing with him.
"Just call Lwazi-"

Policeman:"Bozza we have to go. Mokoena is coming."

Nkosi:"Thando, go to the toilet. I'll come back when the detective is gone." He pulls away and the policeman cuffs him and they walk to a cell. I walk to the toilet and call Lwazi.

Lwazi: "Hello."

Me"Hi, it's Natasha. Nkosi said I should call

you and tell you that he's in the police station." He curses.

Lwazi: "What did he do?"

Me:"He had a fight at the mall. Now he's arrested. "

Lwazi: "I'm coming." I hang up and close the toilet seat then sit on it. I close my eyes and think about how Nkosi will be in a cell. I used to watch prisoners being abused and I don't want that for Nkosi. "Thando!" I hear his voice calling me out and I quickly take my bag and go out. I find him opening the doors.

Me:"Nkosi." He looks at me and walks to me then pulls my hand out. We walk in some passage that is dark with the policeman following us and again, Nkosi is uncuffed.

"Where are we going?" He looks at me and

signals for me to be quiet and I shut up. We walk to some grey door and the policeman opens it. Nkosi steps in and I follow him. How could a prison have a comfortable bed like this? With white blankets? A couch, a TV and microwave? And fridge!? Hawu!

Nkosi: "Baby sit on the bed." I look at him dumfounded.

Me: "Nkosi? "

Nkosi: "You'll wait for Lwazi here. I'm going to take a shower." INI!? A shower in a jail!? I put the bag down and follow him and I find him removing his gym gears.

Me: "Nkosi, why do you have a shower in your cell and a comfortable bed? Why are you not sharing a cell?"

Nkosi: "Thando. I'm very tired. Please let me

shower in peace then we'll talk." He says stepping in the shower butt naked. I turn back to the room and take off my heels. I sit on the bed and look around the room, as I'm about to stand up. My phone rings and it's Lwazi.

Me: "Hello?"

Lwazi: "Tell Nkosi to come." And he hangs up. I sigh and walk to the bathroom.

Me: "Nkosi Lwazi says go." He turns to look at me while drying his body.

Nkosi: "You're coming with me. Go and wear your shoes." I walk to the room and wear my shoes. Nkosi walks in while wearing a grey vest. He walks to the door and presses a red button. The door opens and he looks at me. "Asambe Thando. (Let's go Thando.)" I take

my bag and we walk out. The same policeman that was accompanying us to that room follows us. We walk to that dark passage in silence until we walk to other cells. The policeman starts cuffing Nkosi and we walk in a dark room, it has a little light that's why I say it's dark. We find Lwazi, The detective and another guy in suits sitting. Lwazi stands up and walks to me.

Lwazi: "Let's go home." I quickly look at Nkosi and he signals me to go. I don't know why he's suddenly cold, maybe it's because he's in jail.

"Won't you introduce me to this beautiful lady King?" That guy speaks, he's light skinned and handsome. Nkosi stares that guy and this guy chuckles. This guy stands up and

walks to me and that's when I see that he's not tall nor short. "I'm Senzo Ngubane, King's lawyer." Who's king? He takes my hand and Nkosi grunts and Senzo chuckles.

Nkosi:"Leave my woman Senzo." He says sternly and Senzo walks to his chair and sits down.

Senzo:"I see you're possessive King. You should calm down." Nkosi look at Lwazi and they communicate without saying words,they're just staring in each others eyes. Lwazi suddenly shakes his head and opens the door. I look at him confused because it's like he wants me to go out.

Lwazi:"I said we're going home Natasha. Let's leave." I walk out and he follows me. I walk to my car and he gets in the drivers sit

while I lie on the backseat. He drives off and I close my eyes and listen to the radio. We're not talking, well it's only the radio making sounds. "Do you want to buy something?"

Me:"No." And we fall in silence again. There's something about Lwazi's voice that's intimidating, he also looks intimidating. I guess being Nkosi's bestfriend made him like that because he also has big muscles like Nkosi and his friends are not, maybe he attends gym with him and he ended up being like him but he's not rude like Nkosi, or even cold like him, maybe It's because- hawu! Why am I comparing Lwazi to Nkosi? "We've arrived." I sit up and look outside, we're in Nkosi's house. I step out and walk to the front door. I open and take the plastic that I

left on the floor and go to the kitchen. I put the yoghurt and ultramel on the fridge and put the snacks on the drawers. I take out a mutton on the fridge and make a stew of it with a pap. I'm just doing it so that the time passes. "Natasha." I look at Lwazi and he's sitting on the kitchen chair.

Me: "Yes?"

Lwazi: "Did you tell Nkosi that you went to ask for your job back?"

Me: "No I didn't. He just asked me why I didn't tell him."

Lwazi: "Next time you should."

Me: "Why?"

Lwazi: "Natasha, Nkosi is a jealous guy, a very jealous guy. If he can find us like this,

he would beat me up."

Me: "But there's no need for him to be jealous Lwae."

Lwazi: "He's like that and overprotective. It's just that he loves you very much Natasha, it's even like his life depends on you and he trusts you very much. Nkosi would do anything to have you safe and happy and him being jealous proves that he's scared of losing you."

Me: "Aren't you saying all of this because you're his friend?" He chuckles and nods.

Lwazi: "I'm saying this because he's my friend and I'm a guy, I know how our minds operates." I nod and continue chopping veges. "Are you ready to go back to work? It's only 2 days left and I suggest that you should be

emotional and spiritually good."

Me: "Yes , I am. I'm more than good." He nods and I suddenly think that I should ask him more about Nkosi since Nkosi is not very open. "What does Nkosi thinks about kids and babies?" He looks at me curiously for a minute before answering me.

Lwazi: "That guy loves children and kids even love him back because I remember last year, we were going to a meeting and he saw some kid crying in the street. He went to that girl and smooth talked her until she stopped crying and me and the child's mother were just watching dumbfounded. I never knew that Nkosi has a soft spot for kids until that day because he's always hard and cold. So he took out the kid together with her mother

and they went to spur. I couldn't believe that Nkosi delayed a meeting just for a kid. That when I found out that he loves kids and it was worse when he found out that you can't conceive, and I'm sorry about that." I nod and I continue cooking until the food is ready and I dish up for him and put Nkosi's food on the microwave and we eat while chatting until I finish then I go to my room to sleep and he's sleeping over because Nkosi told him to. I take a shower when I into the bathroom and when I'm done, I dry my body and lotion,switch off the light then sleep naked and drift to sleep. While sleeping, I feel weight on the bed causing it to move and I quickly wake and look at the bed. I scream when I see a body figure and it quickly closes my mouth .

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

THIRTY TWO ♥

NATASHA 🌸

I look at this person hoping that it's Nkosi but it's not him, this person is wearing a balaclava and I quickly hide my body with the blankets and tears fall from my eyes.

Person: "If you dare make noise and disobey my commands , I'll blow up your brains. No get off the bed." I get off the bed and quickly wrap my naked body with a gown. "Oh, you have a nice ass there. Stil I can't believe

that King is having that." He says lustfully causing me to cringe. "I'll have to taste you but not here, come, let's go out of here. And remember, don't make noise." I suddenly feel a cold steel on my neck and I know that it's a gun. I've never thought that I'd be pointed with a gun in my life. "Move to the door." I walk to the door with trembling lips and I suddenly feel a sting on my neck and I fall down.

NARRATED 

Lwazi woke up because he felt thirsty so he went downstairs to the kitchen to drink water. He drank water and when he exited the kitchen, he noticed that the passage that's upstairs to Nkosi's bedroom it's light is turned on and what he thought of was that,

when he went to sleep, the lights were off. He wants to go to Nkosi's room but, he remembers that Nkosi gave a very strict instruction to not step into a bedroom where there's Thando. He stops on his tracks thinking whether to go upstairs or go to his room because he really doesn't want to defy Nkosi and he finally goes to his room to sleep even though it's hard. He decides to call Nkosi.

Nkosi: "What's wrong?" He asks worriedly because he told Lwazi to call him only if there's an emergency.

Lwazi: "King, I want to go to your room-"
Nkosi quickly cuts Lwazi.

Nkosi: "I strictly told you to not Lwazi! I told you to not go to a room where there's Thando. Why do you want to now?" Lwazi

sighs feeling that this talk will drag.

Lwazi: "King, I was on my way to the kitchen when I noticed that the passage to your room light is on and I remember very well that the lights were off when I went to sleep. Now I want to go and check if everything is fine." Nkosi sighs and shakes his head.

Nkosi: "Go but don't hang up." Lwazi wakes up and walks to Nkosi's room with a gun on his hand. He enters Nkosi's room finding it dark.

Lwazi: "Natasha?" He turns on the lights and doesn't find Thando on bed. "Natasha!?"

Nkosi: "Lwazi what is wrong!?" Lwazi doesn't answer he just runs to the bathroom.

Lwazi: "Natasha!?" Nkosi starts to panic because he hears Lwazi's voice changing and

he starts walking up and down on his cell.

"Nkosi I can't find Natasha."

Nkosi: "Go and look for her at my closet."

Lwazi walks to the closet but doesn't find Natasha.

Lwazi: "NKOSI I DON'T SEE HER!"

Nkosi: "Look at the balcony and if you don't see her there, go and take my laptop on my office, the black one. The password is my mother's full name. Check the footage there and send me the footage. Now Lwazi!" Lwazi walks to Nkosi's office and takes the laptop and unlocks it. He looks for tonight's footage, starting from the drive way but he doesn't see anything. He checks the sitting room, kitchen's footage but he finds nothing. He checks the one leading in Nkosi's room

but it's off. He bangs the table angrily.

Lwazi:"Nkosi I can't find anything here! The footage to your room is off!"

NKOSIYOMUZI ❀

The minute Lwazi said the footage is off, that's when I realized that Thando is abducted. I swear, I wanted to cry and break everything that's in this room but I couldn't, I was defeated. I sat on the floor and closed my eyes, I felt my heart being broken into thousand pieces, whoever took Thando really killed me. He knew that she's my weaknesses. I sit here thinking how her fragile self is, how much she's crying wherever she is. How her lips are trembling with fear and how much she's shaking with fear. "King!" I'm woken up by Lwazi calling my name. I clear my

throat before answering him

Me:"Yeah?"

Lwazi:"What should I do now!?" I just stand up and drop the call. I walk to the bathroom and take a very quick shower. When I'm done, I take out my black tracksuit and wear it then call the security.

Spin:"Bozza?"

Me:" Get me out of here. Right now." I command.

Spin:"Bozza, I have to make calls Bozza, it's a short-"

Me:"SPIN! I SAID GET ME OUT OF HERE NOW IF YOU STILL WANT YOUR JOB AND MONEY! " I shout at him and he quickly nods and I walk out.

Spin:"Mara Bozza-"

Me:"Spin! Don't annoy me!" He nods and shuts up. We walk to another back exit and he talks to another security and we get out of the cells. We walk outside the premises of this police station. "Where's the car?"

Spin:"You have to walk down this passage bozza, it's waiting for you there."

Me:"You can go. You'll fetch me at 5oclock. Here." I walk down the passage and I find Smart there.

Smart:"Ahh, Nkalakatha! Bozza yam! King of kings! The master of all Kings!" That's Smart for you. He always praises me, every time when he sees me.

Me:"Just drive man Smart and be fast." He speeds off to my house and when we're in

the drive way, he parks. "Find Natasha Milisuthando Zulu's location for me. As in tomorrow. She was in my bedroom tonight now we can't find her." I open the door and get out. I put my fingerprints and the door opens, I run to the house. I don't know how Thando was taken out and how the abductor. I run to my study and I find Lwazi drinking my alcohol. "All you know is drinking alcohol. Did you find a piece of evidence in my room?" He looks at me.

Lwazi: "I don't know anything in your room that's strange Nkosi. Just go." I walk to my room looking down trying to find something. I open the door and I see something dark, I kneel down and touch it and it's blood. I feel anger erupting in my core and I immediately look for a weapon that was maybe used on

Thando and I find none. Just as I'm about to give up, I find a syringe needle under a chair that's on the dressing table. I run to the study and I quickly take the laptop and look at the footage that leads to the backdoor and I find a tall man wearing black tracksuits and balaclava walking in the backdoor and that's when the footage becomes blank. I quickly send the footage to Smart so that he can identify that man.

Me:"I've found this on my bedroom and blood. Can you go to the hospital to check what's here?" I say giving him the syringe and needle. "I have to go. Let it not reach many hands and I want fingerprints if possible." I walk out and go to my garage. I take out my beast and drive to headquarters. It takes me a good hour and the time is now 2 o'clock in

the morning. By 4 o'clock I should be out of here. I step out of the car and run inside. When I step in, everyone stops doing their job and looks at and starts praising me. I just tell them to continue to work and I go to my office. Just as I open sit on my chair, Smart comes in with an iPod in his hand and a laptop. "Who's that person and where is Thando?" He clears his throat and sits down. He puts the iPod in front of me and I take it and look at it and I see Siphon Ndlovu, Thando's ex chauffeur. By the time Smart gives me my whisky, I'm already fuming. "Call Fix for me and get the force ready! I'm killing him! Where is he!?" He calls Fix and he gets the force ready.

Fix: "Bozza, we don't have a plan to attack Siphon."

Me: "I don't need a plan man Fix! Call the force me now!" He shakes his head walking away and I takes the bottle of whisky and gulp it down.

Smart: "You need to be sober for this.. Drop the drinking the whisky"

Fix: "Even if he continues drinking, he won't get drunk so let's get going." I stand up and walk where the guys are. I find them and tell them what we'll do and after briefing them, I walk to my car with Smart and Fix. I check the time and 02:48, we're running out of time and we have a hour. Fix speeds off while I close my eyes for a while thinking about Thando. I wish he haven't done any harm to her, I swear if he did. I'll peel him alive. I'll even peel him for the reason he made her

bleed. I'm disturbed from my thoughts by my ring cellphone. I take it out and it's Lwazi. I answer it.

Lwazi:"It's a drug for making her unconscious for 24hours but it's a dangerous one, especially when she can't conceive and it can affect her brain. Let me just say the side effects of the drug are bad for her."

Me:"Xap." I hang up. "Drive faster man Fix!" I'm very pissed right now, I'm fuming and furious.

Smart:"Ha.a Bozza, we don't want to die young."

Me:"Fuck you!" I call my pilot. He answers. "Fly to Limpopo right now. I want to find you at the airport by 04:30" I hang up. "Stop the car Fix, I'll drive. I see you don't want to."

Smart:" Ah nie man Fix! Skai chuna die dang. You know Bozza will kill us. Die man drives like a maniac. (No man Fix! Don't do that. This man -)" Fix stops the car and I step in the drivers seat and speed off. "Ehh ehh eh! UngiBhodisile manje Fix! (You've just killed me now Fix!" Fix laughs at him and I drive by 360. By 03:10 I park 2 houses away from his house , this place is very rural. I take out my gun and step out of the car. I walk yo his house and at least it's stable. Smart opens the gate and we go in. He opens the door and I walk upstairs with him and Fix following me, and 2 guys besides me. Smart opened every door in this house using whatever he used, I don't care. He's my IT guy and very coward. I walk toward a black door, I try to open it but it's closed. I signal

Smart to open it and he takes time to open it but eventually it opens. When I open it, I find Thando lying on the bed on top of a white gown that is covered in blood naked with blood between her legs. I swear I froze right there.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

THIRTY THREE ❤️

NKOSIYOMUZI 🌸

I froze looking at Thando's yellow legs that has blood streaming down. "Bozza." I'm startled by Smart calling me. I quickly walk

to Thando and wake her up.

Me: "Thando!" I shake her face and slap it a little but she doesn't wake up. I remove her on top of the gown and put her on the duvet then wrap it around her body. I scoop her up and take the bloody gown and walk out leaving Fix there to find Sipho. I walk to my car and put Thando at the back with the gown and drive off to the airport. I couldn't leave Thando's bloody clothes there and I hope that she didn't bleed because she was raped , if so. God help me I don't know what I would do. I check the time and it's 04:10, it hurts when I realize that I'll leave Thando here alone and go to jail. I'll just call her parents when I'm at the hospital and I hope her father won't be angry at me. I'm sure you're wondering how I know Sipho and why I

beat him up at the parking lot. Well Sipho is my enemy, I don't know how to explain what happened between us but I'll cut it short and say, he's after power. He wants to be powerful but he won't when I'm still alive and I'm suspecting that he took Thando for so that I'll sign everything I own to him but that didn't happen. I don't even know why he didn't have guards at that that house because he's always surrounded by them if he's not playing undercover. I arrive at the airport and I take Thando with the gown to the jet. I tell another attendant to take my car and drive off to CBH and he does. The jet takes off while I'm looking at the lifeless Thando, she's starting to be pale and I'm very scared at losing her. "Thando please don't leave me." I plead brushing her weave

off her face. I brush her lips and kiss them, they're so cold, she's also cold.

"Ngiyakuthanda Sithandwa sami. Ngicela ungangishiyi, ngiyak'cenga Thandolwami." I say after pulling out and I put my forehead on hers and close my eyes. Tears start to fall as I have tried blinking them away but they couldn't. I wish I could cry and ask her to wake up but I believe, the drug is still in her system.

"Sir,we're about to land." I sit up and wipe my tears then exhale. The jet lands at the hospital and nurses quickly take her from the jet and take her inside. I get off the jet and walk after them. I walk to the reception and sign the forms of her stay and payment. My phone rings and it's Smart, I answer it.

Smart: "Bozza, we're still looking for Sipho, we haven't find him yet and there's a black SUV waiting for you outside, it'll take you to the police station."

Me: "Xo. If you find him, make him unconscious and drive to HQ, put him in the basement and make the temperatures very hot. I want to find him heated and find me 16 guys that will rape him. When they're don't, make the temperatures very cold." I hang up and call Zulu. I know he'll not answer but I'm testing waters. It rings and he answers.

Zulu: "Ufunani?" I would be arguing with him right now if I had the strength to but I don't.

Me: "May you give your father the phone? I

want to talk with him." He chuckles.

Zulu:"Oh, you're finally becoming nice." I see he's provoking me, he loves arguing with me but he doesn't want to bruise his ego by admitting. He notices that I'm not replying him and he says fine. I hear some shuffling and him talking to his father in the background.

Nkosenye: "Mkhize." His father says in a sleepy voice.

Me:"Sawubona Bab'Zulu. Ngiyaxolisa ngokuvusa ekseni. Baba bengicela uze lana esibhedlela, uThando ula. (Greeting Bab'Zulu. I'm sorry to wake you up in the morning. Father please come to the hospital, Thando has been admitted.)" After saying that, I hang up and switch off my phone. I walk to

the car and it takes me to the police station and it drops me down some passage. I get off the car and walk that passage until I'm at the back exit of the police station. I find Spin waiting for me there and he opens then we walk to my cell in silence. I'm overpowered right now. I'm defeated, hurt, scared and most of all, I fear losing Thando. I lie down my bed and look at the roof deep in my thoughts. I wish Thando isn't raped out of all the things that Siphos did to her because she didn't imagine her purity being taken away from her in the most cruel way or else, she'll blame for not taking it the minute she said I should take it. I doubt she might survive being a victim of rape easily if Siphos raped her. I wish there's no damage in her brain nor her womb because I won't survive

another months without her, I won't. I'm brought back from my thoughts by Spin opening my cell. "Ehh Bozza, we should go to the cells now." I nod and I stand up to take a very quick shower to remove Thando's blood and change these bloody clothes then wear the black gym gears I came with. After I'm done I walk out and go to the cell that I'll share. Spin opens and I get in then sit on the chairs and look down.

"Ahh Khabazela Ka Mavovo!" I look up and I see Mokoena. "Stand up and follow me." He unlocks the cell and I stand up and walk towards him. "Your lawyer is waiting for you in the interrogation room." I walk to it and when I get in, I find Senzo busy with the papers. He lifts his head and looks at me. "Ahh, just in time. Come and sign here man.

I'm in hurry." I sit on the chair and take the papers. "You're coming out so sign the papers and be a free man Nkosi." I find read the papers and there's nothing wrong so I sign , give him the papers and we stand up and walk out. We bump to Mokoena and Senzo gives him the papers and we go out. "Bulelani dropped the charges." I nod. "Why are you so quiet man?" I just look at him and get in the car at the back. I'm in no mood to talk, I just want to be at the hospital right now.

Me:"Drop me at the hospital." He nods and drives off. We arrive at the hospital and I get off. "Thanks." I walk to the reception. "Natasha Zulu's Ward?" She looks at me nervously and looks at the papers.

Rec:" Second ward , first door on your left."

She looks like she wants to say something else.

Me:" Woman, I don't have the whole morning. Talk."

Rec:"Uhm, I want to know what happened to Tash." Tash? Who's Tash?

Me:"Tash?" She giggles nervously. "Woman, what's your name." She clears her voice before talking. If I didn't know better, I would say she's flirting.

Rec:"Nandi. I'm Tash's friend. And Tash is Natasha." This woman is just wasting my time. I just look at her and shake my head and go to Thando. When I get in her ward, I see pipes around her body. A nurse comes in to rescue.

Me: "Why are there many pipes around her?"

Nurse:"Oh, we're draining the drug and the other is helping her to breath. "

Me:"To breath? "

Nurse:" She's still unconscious Sir, we don't know when she'll wake up. I'll call her doctor for you." I nod and walk towards Thando and sit on the chair next to her. I hold her hand and lay my head on it then close my eyes.

"Morning Mr Mkhize. I'm Miss Zulu's doctor, Dr Duma. I would first like to ask your relation to her." I lift me head up to answer him. I can't believe Thando's doctor is a male, I'll ask for a female. I can't have men touching my woman, even if it's a doctor.

Me:"I'm his husband and I would also like her doctor to be a female." He looks at me like I have a bizarre body. "But first tell me, what

caused her to bleed?" He looks at the file that's in his hands.

Dr D:"The bleeding was caused by the drug in her system, it didn't cause damage in the brain which I find surprising because she was injected in the neck. It only caused damage in her womb. I'm sure you knew that she can have children but she couldn't give birth to them in full term hence we found out that she can't bear them but now she can't conceive at all."

Me:"But we were told before that she can't bear children doctor." I'm very confused right now. We were told first that she won't bear any children in the future, now the doctor is telling me that she couldn't have given birth to them in full term and she

won't have any.

Dr D:"Mr Mkhize, what you're saying is true. I don't know how things changed and I could say its a miracle. When she had an accident, her womb was damaged by the glasses as you know and because of that, she couldn't conceive. Now what I have found out is that , her womb was damaged but, I could have bear children but the children would have been premature since her womb became weak. Now the drug that's in her system destroyed the womb since it was already weak. In conclusion, there's no possibly for Miss Zulu to have children or even a child, nothing will change." To say that I'm shocked by what he discovered would be an understatement. I'm sure killing Sipho,God will forgive.

Me: "Was there any penetration in her virgina?"

Dr D: "No Mr Mkhize, as I said the bleeding was caused by the womb. Now we're waiting for her to be conscious and we'll discharge her but after the drug has been cleared in her system."

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

THIRTY FOUR ♥

NKOSIYOMUZI ❁

Dr D: " I suggest that you should rest Mr Mkhize. It seems like you're very tired and

stressed." It's true, I'm stressed about Thando and I'm also very tired, I didn't get a sleep since yesterday.

Me:"Please organise a private ward for her." I look at Thando and rest my head on her hand and wait for her to wake up. The doctor gets out and I brush

Natasha's arm, I'm glad I saved her on time because if she was raped, I don't know how I would have explained that to her, even her father and brothers. "Baby please wake up. I miss you Sithandwa sami." I sigh and close my eyes then continue brushing her arm.

Dr D:"We're moving her Mr Mkhize, please step aside." I stand up and walk out to get a coffee. I need to stay waken up. I get and walk to her private ward. I get in and sit on

the chair and drink coffee while holding her hand. The doctor comes in. "She should be awake around 12 o'clock sir, I suggest you go home and sleep." I shake my head and he sighs. "I tired." He walks out and I put the container of the coffee on the side table and close my eyes for a while, they're very heavy.

NARRATED

As Nkosiyomuzi was sleeping, Nkosenye and Ndoniyamanzi barged in the hospital. They went straight to the receptionist to ask for Natasha's ward and they were granted it. Nkosenye literally ran towards Natasha's ward. He was scared and worried but most of all he was angry that ever since her daughter stayed here in Jo'burg, she's always landing

in hospital. He barged in Natasha's ward waking Nkosiyumuzi up.

Nkosenye: "What happened to my daughter Nkosiyumuzi!?" He shouted Nkosi angry and Nkosi stood up and started explaining what happened. By the time he finished explaining, Nkosenye was fuming and he punched Nkosi right on his jaw making Nkosi look at Natasha's direction. That is when Nkosi noticed that Thando has woken up. Just as he was about to touch Thando, Nkosenye quickly stopped him.

Nkosenye: "Leave my daughter alone! You're nothing to her right now! What you both had is over! And you, you're going back to KZN and never coming back here. Ever since you moved here, you've been coming in and out of

this hospital and that ends right now."

Ndoni: "But she doesn't have to stay in KZN forever Manzi. She's old enough to do what she wants Myeni wami." Nkosenye chuckles angrily.

Nkosenye: "She's old enough!? To whom!? My daughter would never be old! She'll always be a child to me! A baby! And to think that MY DAUGHTER was almost raped because of THIS boy makes me even more angry!"

Natasha: "But daddy it wasn't his fault." She replies softly and Nkosi quickly stops her from talking.

Nkosenye: "Whose fault was it Natasha?! You're saying it was Lizwilezulu's fault to make sure that you're always safe by hiring that chauffeur!? Who is your boyfriend's

enemy!?"

Natasha: "Kodwa baba if he didn't hire that chauffeur, none of this would have happened."

Nkosenye: "Milisuthando you even have guts to answer me! You have guts to backchat me! Your father! Ndoniyamanzi ! Call the doctor and ask for discharge forms. Milisuthando! It was your boyfriend's fault that you landed here! Just like last time! His enemy would have made you land here in hospital even if he didn't use this chauffeur role." As Natasha was about to answer her father again, Nkosi stopped her.

Nkosi: "Shh Thando. Don't backchat your father."

Natasha: "But Nkosi's he's-"

Nkosenye: "Wee mfanandini! Uselana namanje!" Ndoniyamanzi comes in with the doctor and Nkosenye signs discharge forms. "Remove those things, Ndoni, take a gown she'll wear."

Natasha: "I'm not going anywhere Baba."

Nkosenye: "Milisuthando! Musukungicasula uyezwa!" Ndoniyamanzi gives Natasha the gown and she wears it. "Take the wheelchair and wheel Natasha out. Nkosiyoumuzi, if you dare. I say if you dare follow my daughter and continue this relationship you have with her. I will kill you." He says very serious and angry making Nkosi scared for a minute. "Asambe Wena." He wheels the crying Natasha out.

Natasha: "But dad you didn't have to break

us up." She says softly crying and wiping her tears.

Nkosenye: "We're going to take all your belongings now and you're never coming back here Milisuthando. And if you dare see that boy again Milisuthando, you'll see my wrath. I can't have you coming in and out of hospitals because of that boy. You almost lost your life because of him, now you were almost raped because of him. What more should happen Milisuthando hee?" Natasha keeps quiet and doesn't reply because she sees that her father is serious, especially when he calls her by her first name. Ndoniyamanzi is walking besides them quiet, she feels sorry for her daughter because she sees that they love each other very much, even Nkosenye sees that they love each other, that's why he

trusted and blessed their relationship because he believed that Nkosiyomuzi will protect her daughter, but he failed him.

They went to the car and Nkosenye scooped Natasha and put her at the backseat and closed the car. Natasha looked at the window and saw Nkosiyomuzi looking down, he looked broke and Thando's heart ached. Tears fell down from Thando's eyes as he saw Nkosi like that and she ended up crying.

Ndoniyamanzi looked at her broken daughter and looked at Nkosenye. Nkosenye just drive off to Sandton with Natasha who's still crying.

Nkosenye: "Where to from here?"

Natasha: "Always turn left until you see a dark cream house." She lyes down with tears

still falling, she even has hiccups now and Ndoni is starting to feel sorry for her. They arrive at Thando's apartment and Nkosenye parks in the driveway.

Nkosenye: "Natasha, let's go." They go out and Nkosenye scoops Natasha. They walk inside and Nkosenye takes Natasha to the bathroom. He puts her in the bathtub. "Ndoni, come and bath Natasha." He walks out and walk in to Natasha's closet. He packs everything that belongs to her in her suitcases and when he's done. He takes out the clothes Natasha will wear and walks in her bedroom. He finds her wearing her undergarments. "Here are the clothes you'll wear." He puts them ontop of the bed and takes everything that's in Thando's drawers and puts them in her suitcase. He takes the

suitcases and puts them in the car. When he's done, he walks to the kitchen and finds her wife dishing up lunch. He sits on the chair and takes eats. Ndoniyamanzi also sits and eats.

Ndoni: "Did you have you have to separate Manzi?" She always calls Nkosenye Manzamahle when she tries to soften him up, it's Nkosenye's second name. Her maiden name was taken out of Nkosenye's second name. Nkosenye ignores her and continues eating and Thando walks in the kitchen and drinks water. "Come and eat sweetheart." Thando shakes her head.

Natasha: "I'm not hungry." She walks out and walks to the car. She gets on the backseat and takes her mother's handbag. She takes

out Ndoni's cellphone and calls Nkosi. It rings twice and he answers it.

Natasha: "Lathi." She says with a breaking voice and tears start falling. Nkosi on his other side sits up on the bed amazed by Thando's call, even though he's broken. He clears his throat before speaking.

Nkosi: "Thandolwami." Nkosi says with a broken voice and a tear falls from his eye. "How did you call me?"

Natasha: "I stole Mommy's cellphone since she has your number. Remember I forgot my cellphone there."

Nkosi: "Where are you now?"

Natasha: "In my apartment." She looks outside and sees her parents. "Nkosi, my parents are coming. Lathi I love you very

much. I'm sure my father won't let us see each other. I don't want to say wait for me because I don't know when we'll see each other but know that I love you Lathi, I'll always do and I'll never forget you."

Nkosi:"You don't have to say that Thando, well still see each other." Natasha shakes her head.

Natasha:"No don't, my father will hurt you Nkosi, you saw how serious he was and he could even kill you. Please don't do anything, just know that I love you. Bye."

Nkosi:"Thando wait. I also love you, I love you very much and I'll wait for you. I don't care how long I'll wait but I'll do." He says with a broken voice with tears falling on his cheeks. "Ngiyakuthanda MaZulu. Uhlezi

ukwazi lokho." And Natasha cries making Nkosi also cry and he hangs up.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

THIRTY FOUR ♥

CONTINUATION ♥♥

NATASHA 🌸

I put the phone back in the bag and I lye down. To say I'm heartbroken would be an understatement. I feel empty inside, I feel like my heart has been robbed, I feel lost. My parents get in the car and we drive off. I wipe my tears and bite my bottom lip to me

from crying. I love my father but right now, I hate him. I hate being his favourite, I hate the treatment he gives me all the time. I know I'm his first daughter but I don't understand why he treats me like I'm his one and only daughter. He should be giving Tinashe the treatment he gives me because she's the last born. I'm curled up in this backseat with a hungry stomach, but I can't eat anything, I lost appetite and I don't want to breath the same air my father breaths or even be in his presence. We arrive at the airport and I walk to the family's jet without my bags. Father will carry them because he's the one who came with them. I get in and walk to the back then lye down and cover my self with a blanket. Just as I am about to close my eyes, my mother speaks.

Ndoni: "Sweetheart you have to eat, you haven't eat since morning and the time is now 10minutes to 12 o'clock. You can't starve yourself my child."

Me: "I said I'm not hungry, now leave me in peace. "

Nkosenye: "You won't talk in that manner to your mother Natasha."

Me: "Mxm." I turn my back to them and cover my head.

Nkosenye: "Natasha uthini?"

Me: "Ungizwile." And I close my eyes. I hear him chuckling and his steps fading.

Ndoni: "You can't talk like that to your father Natasha." She says scolding me and I don't answer her. She sighs and I hear her steps

fading. I close my eyes and sleep.

NKOSIYOMUZI✿

After hanging up, I lie on our bed with tears falling on my cheeks. I've never cried for a woman, I hardly cry, I never cry but today I do. I always find my previous girlfriends dramatic when they cry because I broke up with them, well they were not my girlfriends but it was no strings attached and when they got attached, I'd break whatever was going on between us but now, I understand why they cried. It hurts breaking up with someone you love. I think of all the times I've been with her and it's when I notice that, Thando always cries when she's with me. She's a baby, I love her like that, I don't know how I deal with her crying self. I swear,

that woman can cry. I'm even surprised by how I've been patient with her, I swear, that woman gave me a love potion, she even gave me the plastic that had it. I'm disturbed from my thoughts by a ringing cellphone, I answer it. "Ehh Bozza, sibatholile." Says Fix.

Me: "Put them in the dungeon. I'm coming." I hang up and walk to the shower. I take a shower and when I step out, I notice Thando's underwear. I pick it up and walk to our bedroom and put it in the drawer that has my under wears. I also take my Diesel brief and wear it. It's like my mind is functioning very slowly. I sit on the couch and that's when I realise that there are clothes. I stand up and I find Thando's clothes, her red suit and black lingerie. My heart flips and I feel a hole in my heart, I

miss Thando. I didn't even get a chance to say goodbye to her, to kiss her and have&hold her in my arms. I take her blazer and sniff it, it smells her scent. She smells berries and fresh roses. Thando's father will have to kill me because I can't stay away from her daughter. I love her too much to be separated with her, there is nothing in this world, that could keep me away from her and there's nobody who could ever be compared to her. I'm going after her, I'll die for her, I know she said I shouldn't do anything but I can't. I'm miserable without her, I'm empty. I'm broken. I stand up and wear the brief then lotion my body. I wear my Just Lift hoodie, Vanquish vest and Vanquish trackpant. It's dark red. I take my cellphone and walk downstairs to the kitchen. I open

the drawer and I find Thando's lays, I take them and go out while eating them. I don't want something heavy. I walk to my car and drive off to the Headquarter. It takes 1 $\frac{1}{2}$ hour since I was not in hurry, I park on the driveway and walk inside. I walk straight to the dungeon and I find the temperatures very cold and I see Bulelani shaking, I guess he's cold. I take him out and walk with him to the basement where I find Fix and Smart chatting and laughing while eating and drinking. They turn to the door when they see me and they quickly stand up.

Fix:"(Clears throat.) Ehh Bozza." I just look at him and start punching Bulelani while he's crying, apologising.

Me:"Stand up." I say to Bulelani after

beating him up. He struggles to stand up and when he finally does , I trip him while slapping him and he falls down and tries in agony. "I said stand up, I'm not expecting you to balance on something." He stands up without balancing. "Give me your right hand." He gives me his hand and I take it and break his little finger and he cries very loud. "Shut up, you're making noise." He cries silently while hanging his right hand on the air. "Give me your left hand without hesitations." He gives me his hand while wiping mucus with his right arm. I also break the left little finger and he cries in agony. "I'm breaking your fingers because I see you don't know their use. You harass my woman and you spank her ass in front of me. You should be grateful that I didn't cut your hands but I see, you

don't take medication. Fix, book him in a rehab."

Fix:"Sure sure Bozza."

Me:"Did you hire man to rape Sipho?"

Fix:"Yes Bozza, they raped him."

Me:"Good now bring him here." They walk out with Bulelani and I sit down. I see Sipho limping walking towards me and he's followed by Fix. "Stand on top of that chair Sipho. I don't want any hesitations." I say in a very authoritative dangerous voice. He limps to it and stands on top of it. "Tie his ankles, wrists Fix and put a rope around his neck." Fix ties him. "Remove the chair." He removes the chair and Sipho hangs there while gasping for air and he begins to move around , when I see that he's about to die, I tell Fix to put the

chair back and to untie his neck. Siphon begins to catch the air and he coughs dryly. "Sit on the chair Siphon. I'm not done with you. Fix untie him." I stand up and walk out. I take out my cellphone and I see Lwazi's missed call. I call him back and it rings then he answers.

Lwazi: "King."

Me: "I just saw your missed call. What's up?"

Lwazi: "It's been long since I saw you man, we need to talk and it's been long since you have been busy with Miss Baby. Anyway where is she? I tried to call her but I don't reach her and she needs to sign the work papers man."

Me: "Come to my house with the guys, I'll explain about Thando there."

Lwazi: "Hey man, why do you sound different yet serious?" I clear my throat and shake my head.

Me: "We'll talk later man. Shap." I hang up and I walk back in. I take my chair and sit in front of him. I take out my sharp knife and I dig the knife in his skin. He's naked, I start peeling off his arms and he's not moving, he knows if he does, I'll go deep. I finish peeling his arm and when I'm done, I peel off his whole skin including the skin on his penis and testicles. When I'm done, I stand up and make him stand up then we walk to the dungeon. I lock him there and turn the temperatures to be very hot and I go out. I walk back to the basement and I find Fix and Smart looking at each other in horror.

"What's up with the two of you?"

Smart:"My King, King of all Kings, please always remind me to never mess up with you, please my King." I look at him awkwardly because he's very weird right now, I look up and look at Fix.

Fix:"Eish Bozza(he rubs his hands together nervously.) Eish I'm out." He runs out very fast and Smart follows him. I really thought that Fix is a hardcore but now, he made me doubt his self. I walk out and go to the spare room. I strip naked and I take a shower just to remove the blood and when I'm done, I go out and find clothes on the bed, I lotion and wear them then walk out. I drive to my house and when I get there, I find my guys.

Me:"Mehlomadala." They look at him and start commenting.

Bongani: "You call us mehlomadala but you're the one who's scarce."

Me: "Yheah man, I was busy." They all cheer up.

Ayabonga: "Busy with Mrs King, oh I see."

Lwazi: "Yheah, speaking of her, where is she?" I sigh and sit down then take a Corona and sip it.

Me: "She's in KZN?"

Ayabonga: "Ehh, why?"

Me: "Her father broke us up after he found out that Thando is in the hospital and that she was almost raped. That's when he got all angry and said that Thando will never come back here. She's living in KZN for good and if I dare see her or try to be with her, he'll

kill me. I was scared for a minute there because that man was very serious and he said every word carefully yet stern. I'm so confused right now. I can't let Thando go, I love that woman, I swear she gave me a love potion." The atmosphere changes.

Sibulele: "So what are you going to do man?" I sigh and drink the whole corona and take another one.

Me:"I wanted to fly down to KZN and see her. I so fucken miss her, I just want her in my arms and ..." I sigh and shake my head and just drink the beer. Talking about her just makes me miss her more.

Lwazi:"King is soo whipped that it's not even funny anymore. I didn't know you love her that much, I mean she's not your type and

she's worse than she's a cry baby. I mean you hate people like that yet you deal with her every day."

Me: "I know I hated a type like her but she's different. "

Ayabonga: "Is it because of her body?" I shake my head.

Me: "It's not. Her body is a bonus. I love her, I don't know how to explain but I love her. She's everything I wanted in a woman."

Sibulele: "So you wanted a cry baby." We laugh.

Me: "No, but being a cry baby fits perfectly in her. I love how she's strong and tries to stand up for herself but ends up crying because she's angry and defeated yet she becomes stubborn and true. I love how she

makes everything looks easy yet it's not.
She's just all I want."

Ayabonga: "We all know here that you're rough and dirty minded and freaky sexually, how do you behave in front of her, I mean she looks very very innocent." They all nod and agree with each other .

Me:"Fuck off. I won't talk about my sexual life with you. And how do you know that?"
Lwazi jumps in.

Lwazi:"I've seen you countless times dude and you're very careless, that's why I caught you in the action most of the time, you sometimes leave the door open or not locked."

Ayabonga: "And he's like Christian Grey in the bedroom." Bongani laughs and shakes his

head.

Bongani: "No! You're mistaken! He's like a Beast! Especially when he's about to come, dude's groan are freaken loud and scary."
What the fuck!?

Me:"Ho-" He cuts me off.

Sibulele: "Don't even ask how. You're too loud with your deep voice."

Me:"Fuck you all man! You're too weird for your selves." They all laugh and I actually can't believe their comments. I mean, I'm not like that right? I just shake my head and we continue talking until I go to sleep.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

THIRTY FIVE ♥

NATASHA 🌸

I'm woken up by my mother and I look out the window, I see we have landed. I stand up and stretch my body then fold the blanket I slept with and put it neatly on the sit. I walk out of the jet and out of the airport. Just as I'm at the gate, I see Lizwilezulu standing in front of my father's Dodge. I walk towards him and he opens his arms for a hug but I just look at him and walk to the backdoor. I open it and sit in the backseat then look out of the window. Parents get inside and Zulu drives off. After a hour, he parks in the

garage and I get out of the car and walk to the poolside. I take off my shoes and dip my feet inside then close my eyes. I feel a breeze hitting me and I calm down, it's so good, I inhale and exhale the fresh air and my soul is in peace. I wish I could fly and see my self wrapped in Nkosi's strong protective arms. I shouldn't think about him you know, I don't want to find my self crying for him and having him not being my shoulder to cry on because he's not here. "Tasha." I open my eyes and I find Tinashe looking at me smiling and I return the smile.

Me:"Hey Pretty." She joins me and dips her feet .

Tinashe: "Why are you back? Not that I don't want you here, I'm just wondering." I

sigh before telling her.

Me: "My father broke me and Nkosi up and said that I'll stay here in KZN forever. I'm never going back to Jo'burg. He found faults in Nkosi and now I am here. "

Tinashe: "Have you talked to him?"

Me: "No, I haven't. I'll talk to him tomorrow, right now I want to catch up with my Pretty."

Tinashe: "Okay, so nothing has changed except that I applied for a job of being a designer."

Me: "Aren't you dating?" She giggles.

Tinashe: "Nope. I am not, I'm not ready yet besides the fact that I'm always busy and I'll be caught up with work if they give me the job."

Me: "Okay, I understand. "

Tinashe: "How did you date with Bhut' Muzi? How do you feel about him?" I've never told her about that.

Me: "Well we met at my working place, I was late so my boss summoned me at his office and I went there. When I got out, I did my rounds and I suddenly bumped into his hard chest. It was very very hard that I almost fell but luckily, he caught me. We stared into each others eyes until I got out of his hold and told each other our names. He has a very strong cologne that smelled very nice! He looked beautiful but manly beautiful and I fell in love with him there. We started dating on the 16th of May while I met him on the 9th of May. He was a very good boyfriend.

He never wanted to be referred as a "boyfriend", he preferred being called a man. We have never fought. I don't remember fighting with him so we have no first fight. All we ever do is argue and we would fix it right there, he never wanted me to sleep if I'm angry at him. I love him very much and I hope he waits for me, even though I'm scared he'll find a woman that will satisfy his needs. I mean, I've never had sex with him so, he might take this chance to cheat and blame it on my father. I'm scared that he'll do that." She pulls me to her and I lie my head on her thighs and she starts brushing my weave and cheeks.

Tinashe: "When you were in hospital for three months, did he cheat on you?"

Me: "No, he didn't."

Tinashe: "Didn't what?"

Me: "He didn't cheat on me Tina."

Tinashe: "Then what makes you think that he'll cheat on you right now?"

Me: "I'm just being insecure."

Tinashe: "There's nothing wrong by being insecure Sis. I mean Bhut' Muzi's looks are very good, women will throw themselves to him. There's nothing wrong with that but, do you trust Bhut' Muzi?"

Me: "I do. I trust him with my life."

Tinashe: "Then stop being insecure, you will make him feel like you don't trust him around ladies or anywhere."

Me: "When did you start being matured?"

What do you even know about relationships?"
She giggles.

Tinashe: "A couch doesn't play big sis." We share a laugh and she smiles. "I love you Sis and it hurts seeing you this broken. I'll talk with Bhut'Lizwi and convince him to talk to dad. I know that he looves Bhut'Muzi."

Me:"I love you too Pretty, maybe this is just a test."

Tinashe: "But I hope you're not angry at our dad."

Me:"He doesn't behave like mine." I get up and take my shoes, when I look up, I see father seating in the chair that's here listening to us. I just look at him and walk away.

Dad:"Natasha." He calls my name but I don't

look back at him, I continue to walk until I reach my bedroom. I email Nkosi and tell him to courier my bag that has my cellphone and cards and when he comes here in KZN, he must take my car and drop it in town. I need to move out. After I'm done, I try to find an apartment that I'll use when I move out and I find it, it's in Scottburgh. I close my laptop and strip naked then take a long bubble bath with my eyes closed. When the water is lukewarm, I step out and drain the water then clean the bathtub. I wrap a towel around my body and head then walk to my bedroom and I find Tinashe smiling at her cellphone. I shake my head and lotion my body and wear my pyjamas then dry my weave. When I'm done, I walk to my bed and tuck my self in and that's when Tinashe

raises her head and also gets in bed.

Me:"You do know that you have a bedroom right?"

Tina:"What's wrong with sleeping with my Sis? I missed you." I chuckle and shake my head.

Me:"Please take me out tomorrow."

Tina:"Hawu! You're working, you should be the one that takes me out."

Me:"I would Pretty, it's just that I left my bag in Nkosi's house and it has my cards and cellphone. Even my car is at his house."

Tina:"How will you take them?"

Me:"I asked him yo courier them. Let's sleep now. I'm tired." She kisses my forehead and cheek.

Tina:"Goodnight Sis."

Me: "Goodnight Pretty." We sleep with the lights on.

We're woken up by a loud knock and mom yelling. "Girls wake up! Breakfast is ready!" I wake up and leave Tina in bed then I take a shower. When I'm done, I wear my yellow long dress and sandals then brush my weave. I wake Tina up and she wakes up then walks to her bedroom while I tidy up in my room. When I'm done, I walk downstairs and I find everyone there. I greet only Lizwi and Lomso. Zulu: "Why don't you greet us?" I ignore him and dish up for my self. "Natasha I'm speaking." He says sternly and firm but I still ignore him. When I'm done dishing up, I take a spoon and eat. As I'm about to eat for the second time, he slaps my spoon and shouts at

me. "NATASHA I'M SPEAKING WITH YOU! PAY ATTENTION WHEN I'M SPEAKING TO YOU!" I just click my tongue and stand up, he pulls me down by my weave and Lomso stops him.

Lomso: "Zulu whoah, stop." He says removing Zulu's hand from my weave and when I'm free from him, I stand up and leave the table.

Dad: "Natasha where are you going?" I walk to the door. "Natasha!" He warns and I don't dare giving him my attention. I open the door and walk to the gate. I hear Tinashe calling my name and I look back. She runs to me with a bag in her hand and I wait for her.

Tina: "Why did you leave me? Come, let's go to my car." We walk to her car in silence And

drive in silence. "Where should I take you?" I look at her.

Me:"Wimpy. I want breakfast." She squeeze my hand and goes back to driving.

Tina:"What happened during breakfast? "

Me:"Sorry, don't want to talk about it."

Tina:"Should I give you my phone and call Bhut' Muzi?" I smile and nod, it's strange that I didn't even think about him since I woke up, I usually think about him first thing in the morning. She gives me her phone and I dial Nkosi's number and call him. His phone rings until it goes straight in voicemail and the insecurities come back. I look down and send him a message.

"~•Hey, it's me, Thando. I called to check up on you but you didn't answer my call. I guess

you're busy with whatever you're busy with in the morning. Please check your email. Bye.
•~" I give Tina her phone back. "He didn't answer?" I nod.

Me:"It went straight to voicemail but I left him a message. "

Tina:"Why don't you call him again?"

Me:"No, I don't want to."

Tina:"Tasha put your pride aside if you're in a relationship. Call Bhut' Muzi again."

Me:"Maybe he's busy Tinashe or he's in a meeting. That guy runs a business. So." I say and shrug my shoulder. She sighs and nods then we park. We get out of the car and walk inside. We sit and a waiter comes and we place our orders.

Tina:"Have you applied for a job here?" I look up to her.

Me:"No, I haven't. I was thinking of opening my own surgery."

Tina:"You know that will cost you right?"

Me:"Yeah, I know and I have some money in my account. "

Tina:"Does Bhut' Muzi give you money to spoil yourself? "

Me:"Yes, he created a card for me, he sends money to it every 2 weeks but I never use it. And I won't use it, I want to use my own money."

Tina:"How much does he send you?"

Me:"Sometimes R50 00 or R65 000. He changes it but , I don't want to use it. I'm

not used to being spoiled by him except for my brothers and parents."

Tina:"Tasha! Your man is loaded! You should use it Sis." I shake my head.

Me:"I don't want to. I want to use mg own money, the one that I shed sweat and tears for. I don't want to depend on Nkosi and his money. Maybe one day we will separate, just like now and he'll want his money. If I used it for my surgery , maybe hell want shares. I don't want problems Tina. That's all."

Tina:"But Bhut' Muzi doesn't look or seem like that."

Me:"Tina, don't judge a book by its cover. I know Nkosi and he's not like that but, I don't know him when he's bitter Tina. I don't want tribulations for my surgery Tina. I'll

work for it and I have half a million and above in my account that I could use as a start-up." The waiter comes with our order and we eat.

Tina:"I hear you Sis. I understand and I'll support you. I also would like to open my boutique, just like you. You're my role model." I smile widely. It's good to know that someone actually looks up to me.

Me:"I love you Pretty Pretty." She giggle and I hold her hand.

Tina:"I know." We continue to eat and when we are about to pay for the bill, the waiter says it's already been paid.

Me:"Who paid for it?" He points at Lungelo. Oh,I smile and wave my hand. "It's okay."

Tina:"Who's that?"

Me:"It's Lungelo. Nkosi's brother." Just then, I spot Luyanda and Lungelo shows him us and they call us. "Let's go I'm lazy to go home anyway."

Tina:"Okay." We stand up and we walk to them. They stand up when they see us and open chairs for us.

Lungelo: "Morning ladies. I didn't know that you're here Milisa." I smile tightly.

Me:"I arrived yesterday. "

Lungelo: "And when is Nkosi coming back?"

Me:"I don't know. Oh and this is my sister, Tinashe. Tinashe this is Lungelo and Luyanda. Nkosi's brothers. " I look at Tina and she's staring at Luyanda as Luyanda is gazing back at her without blinking.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

THIRTY SIX ♥

NATASHA 🌸

Lungelo's cellphone rings as I'm still looking at Luyanda and Uthandiwe.

Lungelo: "Sorry, it's Nkosi. I have to take it."
He says standing up and I hold Tina's hand and she quickly looks at me and clears her throat.

Tina: "Sis?" I look at Luyanda as he is looking at my sister.

Me:"Luyanda." It's like he's in his own world. As I'm looking at him, I notice that he looks like Nkosi as he also has a dark complexion. "Luyanda!" I call out his name again and bang the table but not too hard. He gets startled and also clears his throat.

Luyanda: "Hi." He says stealing a glance on Tinashe who is now looking down at her hand that's intertwined with mine. Lungelo comes to us again and gives me his phone.

Lungelo: "He wants to talk to you." I stand up and take his phone then walk to the bathroom.

Me:"Hello." He sighs like he's relieved.

Nkosi:"Sithandwa sami. I got your message. I'm so sorry that I didn't take your call. I had a hangover and I've just woke up and got

ready for work. I checked your email and I've sort everything out, by the end of the day everything will be there. Anyway how are you? How are you holding up?" To be honest, I have little thoughts running through my mind. What if Nkosi was in a club? And saw his type. I know I'm not his type because I heard him talking to his friends about it.

"Thando?"

Me:"Nkosi did you go to a club?" I can't help but ask.

Nkosi:"No I wasn't. I don't attend clubs. I was drinking with my friends, here in my house. Why are you asking? " He explains very calm .

Me:"Just asking." He sighs.

Nkosi:"There were no ladies Thando. I can

sense that you're jealous. It's so cute."

Me:"OK."

Nkosi:"Thando why are you so cold? Should I come and warm you up?" He says very concern and I can't help but smile.

Me:"I'm just being insecure. I'm sorry. I can't help but feel like you'll cheat on me Nkosi. "

Nkosi:"I won't baby. I'd never do that to you. I love you very much and I won't do something that will make me lose you Thando. Stop being insecure baby and trust your man. Did you think that I cheated on you when you were at the hospital for 3months?"

Me:"I couldn't think about that Nkosi because I wasn't in the right state of mind and you said you didn't."

Nkosi:"Thando do you trust me? Don't even think about my question." I quickly jump in.

Me:"I do Nkosi! I trust you!"

Nkosi:"Then act like that baby, don't let your insecurities get the best of you baby. I can't have that. I can't." He says calmly and I look down and fiddle with my dress. "I love you okay? I want you to be strong for us just like I am trying Thando please. We won't survive if one of us keeps on being insecure. I won't get tired of you but I can't deal with your insecurities Thando. I can't. I don't know how to assure you that I won't cheat on you."

Me: "I'll work on my insecurities. I'm sorry." I wipe the tears that fall and try by my all to not sniff.

Nkosi: "I'll come around this week if I can or next week and we'll see each other right?"

Me: "Yheah." I can't believe that I'm agreeing to meet up with him yet I was the one that said he shouldn't try anything that will make him to be hurt. I guess "daddy's little girl" was talking.

Nkosi: "I love you okay?"

Me: "I know and I love you too." Nkosi is not a man of many words but I'm glad and grateful that he tells me every time he gets a chance to say it and still show me that he loves me. "I appreciate your love and presence in my life Khabazela. You're a great man." I don't know where that came from but I'm glad that it came out.

Nkosi: "And I appreciate the respect you give

me and the support you give me in my life. Ours. I also appreciate your presence in mine because you made me change unknowingly and you're a blessing. Can't wait to make you my wife official." I giggle. "I wish I can see your smile right now and kiss your lips. I miss them and having you in my arms."

Me: "You're making me blush Mkhize!" I giggle softly while he chuckles.

Nkosi: "Good bye baby. I have to work now."

Me: "Bye bye." I wait for him to hang up because he hates it when I do.

Nkosi: "I love you Mrs Mkhize."

Me: "I love you Mr Mkhize." He hangs up leaving a smile on my face. I giggle and walk out and I see Luyanda talking to Tinashe without Lungelo. I look for him using my eyes

but I don't see him. I walk to Tinashe and sit next to her. "Please give Lungelo his phone. We're leaving." Tinashe looks at me surprised and she quickly looks down and takes her bag. I give Luyanda Lungelo's phone and I walk out to Tinashe's car. Tinashe follows me after a while and we drive. "Love on first sight?"

Tina:"I didn't know that Bhut'Muzi had handsome brothers. Especially Luyanda and he looks like Bhut'Muzi. "

Me:"Do you have some sort of feelings for Luyanda? I saw how you looked at each other and how he couldn't take his eyes off you."

Tina:"Maybe a crush. Don't know yet but he asked for my numbers and I gave him them."

Me:"Dad will go crazy if he finds out that

another Mkhize has us wrapped around their finger." I laugh at her and she opens her mouth.

Tina:"Oh my gosh! Dad! You know I totally forgot about him." Just then, her phone beeps and I take it. It's Nkosi's message telling me where my car is and bag.

Me:"Please drive to BMW dealership. I'm fetching my car there." She changes the route and we drive there. "So did he confess some feelings for you? I mean Luyanda."

Tina:"He didn't say. He just asked for my number. I'm leaving tomorrow. "

Me:"Going back to school? "

Tina:"Yeah, I only came back because I heard that you're coming." I nod and we arrive there and do the necessary things then I

take my car and drive back to my home in a low speed. I don't even know what time is it right now, I check it on the car and it's 10:40. Still in the morning. I decide to drive fast and I get home and change my outfit into something more formal. I wear my black heel, black and white dress then take my red bag and take out everything that's there and put them in my black bag. I take my phone and it's battery is full. Nkosi is a sweetheart. I take my laptop bag and put my laptop inside then go out. While walking down the stairs, I see my father looking at me.

Dad:"Natasha where are you going?" I decide to also ignore him and I walk out and walk to my car then put the bags in the passengers seat then drive off to Hibiscus Private Hospital. I'm applying for a job and I'm

moving out tomorrow. I'll just pack my bag in my car when I arrive at home. I chose Hibiscus because it's close to Scottburgh and not very close to Zimbali and Zimbali is far from Scottburgh. I arrive at the hospital and find a parking spot then park my car. I get off the car and walk inside with a CV and a bag in hand. I walk straight to the receptionist.

Me: "Morning. I'm here to apply for a job."
She looks up and smiles briefly.

Rec: "I'll send it to the Boss or HR." I nod and leave. As I am driving out of the hospital, I notice a woman wearing dirty clothes walking barefoot, it's hot here outside. I decide to stop the car and walk to her. She's dark in complexion.

Me:"Hi." She removes her hat from her face and I'm left dumbfounded when I see who it is.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER😊

THIRTY SEVEN♥

NATASHA✿

I'm very surprised to see Pearl like this, if you remember, Pearl is the lady that Nkosi fired because she made me wait and asked for her job back saying that she has a grandmother to support.

Me:"Pearl?" Her eyes are always glassy,

they're very pretty. "How did you end up being here?"

Pearl:"Mrs Mkhize, I-" I quickly cut her.

Me:"I'm not Mrs Mkhize, I'm Miss Zulu. Come let's go. "

Pearl:"Where are we going? "

Me:"To my house. You can't stay here."

Pearl:"But you don't know me Miss Zulu."

Me: "I know I don't but you can't stay in a place that's unsafe. You're in the streets here. Come." I take her hand and pull her to my car, I wonder what happened to her grandmother if she stays in the street. I drive off to my home and I park in the driveway. "I'll be back. Please wait for me." I get off the car and walk inside. There's no one

home, great. I walk to my room and take all my suitcases and drag them to the car. I never unpacked my clothes because I knew I wouldn't stay for a long time at home. I put the bags in a boot and it's only 2 suitcases, there's no space for another bags. I walk back to the house and drag out another 2 suitcases and I put them in the backseat then I walk back to fetch another bag, it has accessories and I take my red handbag then go to the car and put in the backseat then I close the doors. I step in the drivers seat and drive to Scottburgh. "Are you hungry?"

Pearl: "Yes."

Me: "What would you like?"

Pearl: "Anything." The way she's so humble, you'd swear that it's not the Pearl that gave

me attitude. Life humbles people, I'm telling you. Humble yourself before you get humbled. I drive to town and order her 4 Steer's burger and chips then go to Debonair's pizza and order 2 large crammed crust chicken pizzas and 2l bottles of drinks. A juice for me and a coke for her. I walk back to the car and give her the 2 burgers, chips and coke then put the rest in the boot on top of the bags then close the boot and go back to the mall. I go to Mr Price to buy her clothes, just for now. I buy her a long turquoise pleated dress and sandals, a pair of jean, t-shirt, hoodie, toiletries, undergarments and towels then lastly pyjamas and gown. I pay then go to the car. I find her done eating, she must have been famished. I drive to Scottburgh and I arrive when the time is 15:14. I drive

to my apartment and I find the property assistant outside. I drive in and park in the driveway then walk to her.

P.Ass:"Afternoon, I'm Miss Ndlovu. Your assistant. Please come inside." She opens the door and we view the house. It's good, very beautiful I like it. It's warm and welcoming. There's furniture but no food. I have to do shopping tomorrow. The assistant leaves my keys and I walk to the car.

Me:"Pearl, please help me with the bags." I open the backseat and take the handbag, one suitcase and a bag then walk to my master bedroom while she follows me with one suitcases and the shopping bags. I put the bags in the closet and when she's about to put the shopping bags, I stop her. "No, the

shopping bags are yours. Just put the suitcase here and find your own bedroom." She smiles.

Pearl: "Thank you Miss Zulu. I'm sorry for the way I treated at Mr Mkhize's workplace. I'm grateful that you took me in your house."

Me: "There's nothing much in helping you. Just go to your bedroom and help me with the bags."

Pearl: "I would have long hugged you if I wasn't in these clothes."

Me: "You're so talkative! Just go!" I tell her chuckling then I walk outside to the car. I take out the food and put it on top of the kitchen counter then I bump into Pearl dragging the two heavy suitcases. I take one and drag it upstairs then put it in the closet

and Pearl follows in. "I'm sorry Pearl but may you please come with my handbag in the car and close the gate. Please sweetheart. I'm very tired."

Pearl: "No problem Miss Zulu."

Me: "Oh and please stop calling me Miss Zulu. I was just correcting you from the "Mrs Mkhize" you were calling me. I'm Natasha. "

Pearl: "Oh okay Sis Tash. "

Me: "I believe that you're older than me Pearl so you can't call me Sis. How old are you? "

Pearl: "I'm 27 years. I should go and take your bag then bath before we chat. I'm sure I stink and you're-"

Me: "Don't even say it, please. I'm not like that." She looks down and nods then walks

out. I remove my heels then lie in bed with my eyes closed.

Pearl: "Here is your bag." I wake up and take it.

Me: "Please close the door on your way out." I take out my phone and I have 10 missed calls from Nkosi. Oh Jesus, I'm dead. I call him back and he answers immediately.

Nkosi: "Thando are you okay? Where are you? Your mother called me saying you're not home and your bags are not there. She is very worried Thando. Where are you? "

Me: "I'm in my place Nkosi. And please tell them to not worry about me. I'm no longer a child. They should treat Tinashe like a child since she's the last born. "

Nkosi: "Baby you can't leave your parents

place, your home without informing your parents. That is very disrespectful. "

Me:"Was it respectful when they took me out of the hospital, when they dragged me out like I'm a criminal?"

Nkosi:"Baby don't speak like that. They're your parents. Give them respect, talk about them with respect. They did what they did to protect you Thando."

Me:"No they don't. They just don't respect me. My parents always dismiss my decision Nkosi! They always take decisions for my self! I won't give my parents respect when they don't deserve it! You know very well that respect is earned Nkosi! I won't give them respect they don't deserve."

Nkosi:"Baby you can't realize that your

parents don't respect you while you're with me. Please call your parents. "

Me:"No I won't! Tell them I don't want to talk to them! And when they ask you to find where I am, tell them that I don't want to be found!" And I hang up, I've long respected my parents, I've done everything that wanted to be done. They shou-. My phone rings and it's Nkosi. Before I could even talk, he's barking.

Nkosi:"Thando what did I say about you hanging up the call while we're talking!? Didn't I say that I hate it!?"

Me:"Nkosi it's-" He quickly cuts me.

Nkosi:"Thando! " he says warningly.

Me:"You said you hate it." I speak softly so that he can stop shouting.

Nkosi: "Then why are you doing something that I hate? This is the last time okay?" He also says softly.

Me: "Yes, it is."

Nkosi: "Good, now are you settling well there?"

Me: "Yes, I am. I found the receptionist that was working for you, Pearl, at the streets today." He keeps quiet for a while.

Nkosi: "Is she treating you well? Thando listen, I'm not saying you shouldn't pick up people from the streets, okay? But please be careful. Tell me from the minute you want to take someone with you. People have their own agendas out here, you don't know their agenda. So please be careful and tell me." He says softly.

Me:"I didn't think out that, I just took her in since she seemed lost and lonely, since you know her and she once worked for you. I didn't think about the negatives. "

Nkosi:"I understand baby, how is she? Physically? "

Me:"She was dirty. So I brought her clothes. "

Nkosi:"Okay. Why don't you use your card Thando?" I keep quiet because I know he's talking about the card he created. "Thando, that card is for you to spoil yourself. Why don't you use my money to spoil yourself?" Still, I don't answer. "Please talk to me. What's wrong?"

Me:"I'm just not the shopping person. I'm not used to spoiling my self. "

Nkosi:"Don't your brothers send you money to spoil yourself? "

Me:"They do but they mostly take me out since they know I don't use it."

Nkosi: "Okay then, I'll also take you out and do shopping with you."

Me:"Most guys hate shopping Nkosi, don't you hate it?"

Nkosi: "I do but I'll do everything and anything to make sure that my woman is spoiled."

Me:"You love treating me like an egg." I say giggling.

Nkosi:"That's because I love my woman. I did say earlier on that you made me change unknowingly. So don't be surprised from now

on."

Me:"I won't. "

Nkosi: "Bye then, I'll call you later." And he hangs up. I strip naked then take a shower, when I'm done, I wear pyjamas and walk downstairs. I find Pearl also wearing pyjamas watching TV.

Me:"Aren't you hungry? Let's eat pizza."

Pearl:"I am. I was waiting for you."

Me:"Oh no, don't wait wait for me. Eat anything you like. Tomorrow we'll have to go for shopping grocery and for your clothes. But I won't be there." I walk to the kitchen and take the pizza and pour my juice and hers into glasses and go to the sitting room. "I'll take your CV to Hibiscus Private Hospital, I'm applying a job for you. Oh,

where is it?"

Pearl: "In my room. I always have it with me, also the ID is there."

Me: "Okay. So how did you land in streets, if you don't want to talk about it, it's cool." I eat my pizza.

Pearl: "Well, after I lost my job, I went home, in Embo. I used my salary to come here and I paid for my grandma's medication, she had a stroke but she died after I ran out of cash. So when it was her funeral, my aunts and uncles claimed her house then kicked me out. Luckily I attended her funeral and I took all my clothes and gadgets with me but I was robbed on my way to the bus station so I ended up in the streets." She's not even shedding a tear, she's very strong. "Until you

found me." So me and Nkosi were basically the cause of her grandma's death and her ending up on the streets. "Oh no it's not. She would have died anyway and my uncles would have kicked me out." I look at her confused. "You were thinking out loud, so don't blame Mr Mkhize and your self for my grandma's death." I nod even though I feel guilty.

"Will we go to town early?"

Me:"Not early though, maybe 12 o'clock or 11 o'clock since I have to drop your CV."

Pearl: "Okay. I'll go to sleep then, I'm very tired."

Me:"Okay. Good night even thou it's still in the afternoon. " We share a laugh.

Pearl : "What time is it?"

Me:"17:23."

Pearl: "Alright." She engulfs me in a very tight hug. "Thank you for taking me in. I'll forever appreciate you, I even owe you my life." I hug her back.

Me:"I couldn't let you stay in the streets while I knew you."

Pearl: "If I were you, I would have let myself stay in the streets for giving you a stinking attitude." We share a laugh and we pull out.

Me:"It doesn't help holding grudges."

Pearl:"I'll learn not to. Bye." She walk away and I take my cellphone then call Zenande.

Me:"Sister." She screams.

Zen:"Oh my sis, when did I last hear from you! Where are you?"

Me:"In KZN. No longer coming back there, I

wish you and Nande could visit me here in my house."

Zena:"Well since her and I have the same day off's I don't think she would mind. We'll be there Saturday or Sunday. "

Me:"Oh, I didn't think you'll come this early, since it's Thursday today."

Zena:"Well it's because we'll off next of next week Darling. "

Me:"I miss you very much!"

Zena: "Nande always talks about you. Oh she brought a car!"

Me:"Oh my God! I'll call her to congratulate her!"

Zena:"You know I'm also driving a car here. I'll call you tomorrow, bye! I love you!"

Me:"Drive safely! I love you too Sis!"and I hung up. Can't wait to have my friends in for a sleep over😊

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER😊

THIRTY EIGHT♥

NATASHA✿

I stand up and take the glasses because we're done eating, only 2 slices of pizza are left. I walk to the kitchen and put the glasses in the sink then take out a plate. I place the slices then put the plate in the refrigerator. I cleanse the glasses and put

them in the cupboard then go to the sitting room and lock the door then take my phone and go upstairs. I walk to the closet and unpack every thing and put it in its place. By 20:44 I'm done and hungry. I walk downstairs and warm the pizza then eat it. When I'm done, I wash the plate and wipe it then put it cupboard and drink my juice. I walk upstairs and when I get in my room, I hear my phone ringing and it's Nkosi.

Me: "Baby."

Nkosi: "But love I told you that I don't want that name. It belongs to you. Are you about to sleep?"

Me: "Yes I am. I've just finished unpacking my clothes and I'm about to sleep now."

Nkosi: "Okay. Baby, I can't come this week."

He says like he's holding his breath.

Me:"It's fine baby, I already have guests ."

Nkosi:"Guests?"

Me:"My friends said that they'll come to visit me. I invited them. "

Nkosi: "It's fine. I just wanted to say goodnight and sleep well ." I smile widely .

Me:"Goodnight baby." He hangs up, this has to be the shortest conversation we had. Let me just go to sleep. I tuck myself in bed then sleep.

I'm woken up by my ringing cellphone, I pat my sideboard trying to find it but I can't. I grunt and open my eyes then take it and check the ID caller. It's Nandi.

Me:"Nana." I say closing my eyes.

Nandi:"You're still sleeping Nut?"

Me:"Yheah, don't know why you're calling me this early."

Nandi:"So 8 o'clock is early to you, anyway I called you because I missed you. I see you no longer love and care about me. You only care about Zenande. Natasha when did we last talk like before? I feel like we're drifting apart. Is there something I'm not doing right?" I quickly open my eyes.

Me:"What! No!" I reply fast while sitting up. "There's nothing that you're not doing right."

Nandi:"Then why - ever since you became friends with Zenande, we've drifted apart. "

Me:"I'm sorry nana. I didn't notice anything about that."

Nandi:"Everyone notices someone's behavior when they love that certain person. I guess I'm no longer loved. I have to go."

Me:"Nandi. It's not like that, look, we'll talk about this when we meet okay? "

Nandi:"Sure."

Me: "Nandi I still love you." I say meaningfully and she hangs up. What have I done!

"Morning." Say a female bubbly voice, I look at the door and I see Pearl. I smile as I see her also smiling.

Me:"Good morning. Come in." She comes in and she has a tray that has the burgers and juice. She sits next to me and gives me the tray. "Oh, breakfast in bed." I say and she laughs shortly.

Pearl:"I thought I should give it to you in bed."

Me:"Thank you but I have to first brush my teeth." I say as I put the tray on her laps then I run to the bathroom. I brush my teeth and take a shower. After showering, I step out and walk to my bedroom and I find Pearl putting the pillows in bed. "Thanks for making the bed." I say as I dry my body in front of the mirror and lotion.

Pearl:"I thought I should make it since you're showering."

Me:"You're spoiling me too much and I'll end up gaining more weight."

Pearl:"That won't be a bad thing after all. I mean you'll still look good and being chubby suits you unlike me."

She's also chubby but she's more than me and she's dark skinned.

Me: "You're lying! You look very good Pearl! I mean you have big curves, thighs and butt! You have the most beautiful body, you're physique is just great! Cherry on top." We both share a laugh.

Pearl: "I tried things that should be able to make me a bit chubby, just like you but none of them works. Don't know what to do because gyming isn't in the list."

Me: "I guess I have chubby friends. Speaking of friends, mine will spend the weekend here. Hope you don't mind."

Pearl: "Oh I don't, this is your house anyway. I'll just make my self scarce." I wear my sneakers and tie them.

Me:"Why? You're also my friend and I'd love to have you here with my other friends. I mean the more the merrier. "

Pearl:"You have a very good heart Natasha. I didn't even know you take me as your friend."

Me:"You were my friend the minute I took you out of the streets Pearl. I should stop bringing that up you know." I stand up and take off the shower cap and brush my weave.

Pearl:"I have never thought that I'd end up on the streets you know. I'd never forget that. Your weave is very beautiful."

Me:"Thank you. We'll also stop by the salon. Well you will." I walk to the bed and sit next to her then eat the breakfast. She's already ready. She wore the pair of jean and the blouse only, it's kind of warm outside and I'm

wearing my tight pant and its crop top and sneakers.

Pearl: "So, when did you start seeing Mr Mkhize?" What? I quickly turn to look at her with my eyes popped. "Well if you don't mind me asking. I mean , Mr Mkhize has never been seen public with a woman, being cozy if you get what I'm saying."

Me: "Is there a need for him to be seen public with a woman?"

Pearl: "No there's no need but since he's famous on the business industry and known, it's bound for his personal stuff to be known. You know how journals are."

Me: "I didn't even know that he was a famous business man."

Pearl: "Well he doesn't own many business

but the MAC is very popular, recommended and successful. Why does it seem that you don't know who Mr Mkhize is?"

Me:"I only know his self not him on the outside. I only know that he owns Mkhize Architectural Company, that's it."

Pearl:"You don't even know that he won the awards! I mean the Business Awards?"

Me:"No, I don't. "

Pearl:"How? That man is very popular Natasha! In social media, international, here, I mean everywhere! "

Me:"I only met a stranger who is him in my workplace and we started dating after a week. I'm jot a social person, I don't own your Social media accounts except for WhatsApp. "She looks at me unbelievably.

Pearl:" You're lying!" She quickly takes my phone and gives it to me. "Unlock it." I unlock it and she takes it then strolls on my apps. "You don't even own Instagram! No you're old fashioned! You know Mr Mkhize owns it. That's where we follow him."

Me:"You just love people affairs. Come let's go." I take my bag and cellphone and car keys then walk down the stairs with her following me with a tray. I walk to the sitting room while she walks to the kitchen. I unlock the door and walk to the car. "Lock the door on your way out!" I shout as I unlock the car and get in. She run towards my car and opens the door and gets in then I drive to the gate and unlock it and lock it then drive to town. "Did you come with your CV?"

Pearl:"Yes. Here." She puts it on the dashboard and sighs. "I really hope that I get the job, I mean, get appointed to the interview and get it because honestly, I can't depend and be a burden on your shoulders."

Me:"No, you're not a burden Pearl. You're my friend and a friend can't be a burden. "

Pearl:"Okay."

Me: "Didn't you have friends, in Jo'burg?"

Pearl: "I had but none of them helped me. They all couldn't."

Me:"Yheah nhe, friends. "

Pearl:"How did you meet yours?"

Me:"Met them at work." She nods and my phone rings. "Please answer it for me and put it on loud speak ."

"Hello sis." Says Tinashe.

Me:"Hello Pretty, how are you?"

Tina:"I'm good Sis, how are you?"

Me: "I'm good too."

Tina:"Uhm, Sis, I sort of need you. Please meet me."

Me:"You need me? What's wrong? Where should I meet you?"

Tina:"Nothing is wrong, Steer's. "

Me:"Okay. I'll be there maybe at-" I check the time and it's 10:08. "Maybe 1 o'clock. "

Tina: "It's fine. I'll be free by that time. Bye."

Me: "Bye." Tina hangs up and Pearl puts my phone back in my bag.

Pearl: "Is that your Sister?"

Me: "Yheah, it is. She's Natasha."

Pearl: "I only know your brothers." I chuckle.

Me: "So you follow every family out here."

Pearl: "Not every family! I follow handsome and beautiful families." We laugh.

Me: "You're such a stalker." We arrive at the mall and I give her my card. "Do everything you want, I'll come and pick you up after I'm done at the hospital. And buy a cellphone."

Pearl: "Thanks, I better start by doing my hair." She has a afro, it looks dry. Seems like she washed it and didn't moisture it.

Me: "Just spoil yourself." She kisses my cheek. "And buy grocery!" She waves her hand and walks away and I drive off to the

hospital, it's not far from here. It's a 15 minutes drive. I arrive at the hospital and park then walk inside. I go to the receptionist and greet.

"I'm here to get a job for someone. Here is her CV."

Rec: "You're Miss Zulu right? Natasha Zulu."

Me: "Yes, I am."

Rec: "I was about to call you and say you're asked for an interview tomorrow at 9 o'clock."
"

Me: "Thank you. Have a good day." I say with a wide smile and walk away. I hope I get the job. I drive back to the mall listening to Banky W. I love Nigerian songs and the current song I'm listening to is Love U Baby. It's my favorite. I arrive and park then walk

to the salon. I find her installing a weave.

"Hello." I greet her and she smiles nervously.

Pearl:"Hey." I take out my phone and check whether Nkosi has called but he didn't. I feel sad for a moment then check the time. It's 10:48 , his meetings start at 10 o'clock and he usually calls me before he attends them, maybe I should call him because I miss him and we haven't talked since that short conversation yesterday. I sigh and dial his number then call him. His phone gets answered by a female voice.

"Hello." I quickly hang up thinking that I dialed it wrong. I search his contacts on the call logs and call him. It rings and gets answered. "Hello?" That same female voice answers the call and I hung up again confused.

Why is Nkosi's calls get answered by a woman? If he's in a meeting, he doesn't answer his phone because he puts it on silent mode. My heart aches as I'm confused.

"Tash." I look up and I see Pearl smiling, she looks very beautiful now that she has a weave.

Me:"Yes?"

Pearl: "How do I look?" I smile.

Me:"You look very beautiful, now let's go." I stand up and put the phone in my bag then we walk out. "So we're going to Woolworths, for grocery."

Pearl: "But it's very expensive there."

Me:"How much was your weave?"

Pearl:"R1 600." She says nervously and I nod.

Me:"Then we're going for shopping. "We walk to Woolworths and buy grocery and I don't forget to buy Woolworths ice cream, it's my fave. After buying grocery, we go to my car and put the grocery in the boot. " I have to meet my sister now so, here is the money for clothes, cellphone and uber. I don't know when you'll leave here." I give her R8 000.
"It's R8 000."

Pearl:"What?! You can't give me such money! I'll take only R3 000. You've done so much for me." Just as I'm about to protest she gives me her hand. "No, we won't argue. You're spending so much money to me and that's not right. I'll work and I'll buy a good cellphone , clothes and help you pay half for

the house expenses. I know you're giving me the money out of goodness of your heart but I can't take it. Thank you."

Me:"I've never heard someone saying no to money. I guess I'll take the R5 000." She gives it to me and I get in the car. "Here is my number, just in case." I give her my card.

Pearl:"Thanks,bye." She waves her hand and I smile then check the time, it's still early. Well its few minutes to half past 12. I drive off to meet Tinashe. I get to Steer's by 12:50 meaning I'm 10 minutes early. I walk inside and find a seat then sit down. My phone rings and it's Nkosi. I answer it .

Me:"Hello?"

Nkosi:"Good day baby, how are you?"

Me: "I'm fine and how are you?"

Nkosi:"I'm good. Uhm, baby I'm sorry I didn't call you in the morning. I was busy."

Me:"K." I've been emotionless throughout this conversation.

Nkosi:"Baby are you sure you're fine? What's wrong? "

Me:"Nothing is wrong Nkosiyomuzi. "

Nkosi:"Baby if this is about the lady who answered the call earlier I can explain. "

Me:"There's no need to explain."

Nkosi:"No I have to baby because you're being cold right now and I can't have that. That was my PA, she answered it because I was in the bathroom and I couldn't call you in the morning because I was busy with work and some presentation. "

Me: "I said there is no need to explain Nkosiyomuzi. "

Nkosi: "Then why are you so cold? And why are you calling me using my full name?" I keep quiet and he sighs. "Thando please, tell me what's bothering you."

Me: "So your PA answers your calls because?"

Nkosi: "She answers them when I'm not available."

Me: "So you gave her the permission to answer your private calls?"

Nkosi: "Yes because if I'm unavailable to answer them, she will and she'll explain why I'm unable to answer my calls. She is a PRIVATE ASSISTANT, PRIVATE, that's why she answers my PRIVATE calls." He's been emphasizing on the "private" word that

it made me lose all the interest I had on this call which was already little. I understand that she is his private assistant but that doesn't mean she can answer his calls. I just hang up before I get upset by a stupid thing. I see Tinashe approaching me with a smile plastered on her face and I can't help but turn it back.

Tina:"Big sis!" She says revealing her beautiful teeth while opening her arms for me and I stand up and hug her.

Me:"Little one." We giggle and hug tightly but our hug gets broken by my ringing cellphone. "Let me switch off my phone before it disturbs our bond again." I say breaking free from the hug and I sit down then take my phone. The caller is Nkosi and I

just switch off my phone and put it in my bag.
"How are you Pretty?" I say as I look up to meet her face.

Tina:" I'm beautiful and great! And you."
She's so bubbly today.

Me:"I am beautiful and good. What's making you this happy?"

Tina:"Uhm, Nkosi's brother." She says blushing and giggles after.

Me:"UTHANDIWE!" I say as I laugh and she joins me.

Tina:"What? Milisuthando! "

Me:"Our father is going to beat us up now that the Mkhize brothers are taking his innocent daughters." We laugh.

Tina:"It won't be funny thou when he beats

us."

Me:"I know so are you dating?"

Tina:"No, we're not. We're just getting to know each other and having fun."

Me: "What kind of fun Tinashe?"

Tina:"Uhm, going out." She looks at me like I have a snake wrapped around my neck. "You thought that we're having sex Natasha?!" I laugh and she slaps my hand.

Me:"Well , there's nothing wrong about that even thou I didn't think of it."

Tina: "I was going to ask how do we have sex while we're not dating."

Me:"We'll, it's possible and it can happen. So tell me, are you in love with him?"

Tina:"I am. It was love at first sight and I

couldn't even get him out of my mind. Was it love at first sight between you and Bhut' Muzi? "

Me:"No it wasn't. I loved him as the time went by. I don't know about him whether he loved me from the first sight or when the time went by. Let's call a waiter, I'm hungry." I raise up my hand and a male waiter comes. We place our orders and continue talking.

Tina:"I'm in love with Luyanda while I don't know how he feels about me. What if he doesn't love me thou?"

Me:"He does. You should have see how he looked at you. It was like you're the only person he sees, no one else and love was all over his eyes." She smiles and nods.

Tina: "Sis where are you staying?" I look at her confused at how she quickly changed the topic.

Me:"Why are you asking? And the sudden change of the topic?"

Tina: "Dad is worried about you, even mom. They're not in good terms, it's visible. They're not the lovey doveys they used to be. I'm also worried."

Me:"I stay in a safe and secured place. Tell them not to get worried. I'm old now." The waiter comes with our food and we eat.

Tina: "How do you expect them to not get worried while you rejected their calls?" I rejected the parents and brothers calls.

Me:"I am old Uthandiwe, I can take care of my self and if you'll continue to talk about

them, I might as well stand up and leave."
She sighs and nods.

Tina: "I'll stop talking about them."

Me: "Good." We eat our burger's in silence and she speaks again after few minutes of silence. She's very talkative.

Tina: "So, about your surgery?"

Me: "I'll do it next year or next of next year."
"

Tina: "Why?"

Me: "Things are complicated now and, I don't want to stress my self about a surgery. I mean I have a house now so everything must be in order like house expenses. "

Tina: "Okay. I understand and it's bit early, I mean it's September and you've just brought

a house. Can't wait to also have my boutique. I already have a name for it. It's Fashion Empire." Oh wow.

Me: "Such a good name, excellent name. Sis is proud of you okay?"

Tina: "Thank you Sissy." We giggle at the sissy word I remember Pearl. Oh, I switched off the phone. "What's wrong?"

Me: "Huh?"

Tina: "You look stressed. "

Me: "No I'm not, I have just remember something and I have friends coming over tomorrow and I have a job interview tomorrow at 9 o'clock! So much in one day! "

She laughs.

Tina: "You have a lot in your plate so much

that I don't wish to be you."

Me:"Mncm. Let's go."

Tina:"It's not mncm, its mxm." She says laughing. I can't say it like "mncm" like her. I wish I could roll my eyes but I can't because I'm scared that if I roll then, they won't turn back. I stand up and order a takeaway for Pearl then wait a little until it comes. I take then we walk to Tina's car. "Bye sis, send me a text when you've arrived safely." She says after a hug and a kiss on my cheek.

Me:"Will do. Good bye. " I watch her as she drives off and I walk to my car then get inside and turn on my phone. I have 12 missed calls from Nkosi and I see no missed calls from an unknown number so I guess Pearl is still in the mall. I drive to my house and I

arrive at 16:16 then I send Tina a text telling her that I've arrived. I take the grocery from the boot and put it in the kitchen counter and go upstairs and take a nap. I'm tired and I'm glad that I didn't go to buy clothes with Pearl. I put the bag on top of my sideboard then sit down and take off my shoes then sleep ontop of the covers.

I'm woken up by my ringing cellphone, I should always switch off my phone when I'm about to sleep because it always wakes me up. I rub my eyes then sit up and take my bag from the sideboard and take out my cellphone. It's Nkosi who's calling. I answer it.

Me:"Mh?"

Nkosi:"Why are you not taking my calls? Why

is your phone off when I'm trying to call you? Why are you hanging up on the phone while we're still talking? Didn't I tell you that I hate it and didn't you say you won't do it again? Thando what's wrong with you? If there's nothing wrong with you, then what's wrong with me?" He is speaking very angrily and fast ,well he's not speaking - he's shouting.

Me:"Nkosiyomuzi, you're waking me up from my sleep because you want to shout at me? You know, I'm not in the mood for this talk." I say irritated and just as I'm about to hang up.

Nkosi:"If you dare hang up and talk to me like that again, you'll feel and see my wrath. Open the gate." Huh? "I said open the gate!"

He shouts and I quickly get of the bed and run downstairs to open the gate. I open it and open the main door then step in the veranda and I see Nkosi's car speeding towards the veranda. He stops in front of it and gets out then furiously bangs the door and walks towards me more like marching towards me. I'm very scared right now and I think I'll pee my pants. I just run back inside and run to the stairs but he runs after me and catches me. Tears are already falling and he pins me against the wall then we look in each others eyes. He grabs my neck and kisses me very gently and passionate and he sucks my breath. I run out of breath and Nkosi breaks the kiss and looks at me while I try to catch my breath. "Why do you always make me angry?" He says very calm and

softly, it's like he wasn't the Nkosi that was breathing fire. I look down and start breathing properly. "Thando?" I fiddle with my hands and I realize that I'm no longer scared. He touches my cheeks and kisses me again very slowly then he wraps his arms around my waist and holds my butt. He kisses me deeply and slowly yet passionate that I end up wrapping my arms around his neck and he breaks the kiss. "I missed you so much." He hugs me very tightly and he hides his face on my neck and breaths in. I'm very shocked by his reaction, I thought that he'll shout at me and hurt me but he did the opposite of what I expected. After few minutes, he breaks the hug and holds my hands. "Take me to your bedroom." I walk with him to my bedroom and we enter. He locks the door and

takes off my clothes then also takes of his until he's left naked. I'm also naked. He takes my hand and climbs on the bed then helps get on it. He lyes down and pulls me to him. "Sleep ontop of me." I lye on top of him and put my head on his chest then wrap my arms around his waist while his arms are wrapped around my waist and hands holding my butt. He kisses my forehead and kisses head. "Why do you let your insecurities get between us?" He asks softly and low after few minutes of silence.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

FOURTY ♥

NKOSIYOMUZI ❁

"I-" she sighs and hugs my waist tightly. "I can't help but feel insecure Nkosi." I kiss her forehead.

Me: "You know that I can't always drive from Jo'burg to Scottburgh every time you get insecure right?"

Thando: "I know." She says lowly.

Me: "Our relationship won't survive if you don't trust me Thando. It won't survive if I don't trust you but I do. As I'm working in Jo'burg, I know that you'd never cheat on me but I don't trust guys around you."

Thando: "Same applies to me Nkosi. I trust

you but I don't trust ladies around you. What if they tempt you and you end up being tempted and you cheat on me? You have sex with them because you haven't been getting any. I'm tired."

Me:"I won't say I understand your fear but there's nothing you have to be scared about. Just because we're kilometers away that doesn't mean I'll cheat Thando. It doesn't mean , I'll use the distance between us to my advantage. I know that I'd lose you if I cheat, why would I do something that will make me lose you? "

Thando: "Nkosi can we have sex already?" I brush her waist and shake my head.

Me:"Not yet my love. We can't. There's no need for us to rush into sex, we will still have

time to do it and it won't be sex, it will be me- making love to you, giving you my soul and pouring out my love for you, connecting our souls and making them turn into one."

Thando: "Then why are we laying here naked?"

Me:"We're being intimate, that's why. You see that the atmosphere is intimate but it doesn't mean we will make love, okay?" She nods.

Thando: "Okay. So when will you leave?"

Me:"I'll drive back tomorrow. Do you have any plans?"

Thando:"Yes, I have an interview tomorrow at Hibiscus P.H at 9 o'clock and after that, I'll go to the airport to fetch Nandi and Zenande." I nod.

Me:"Have you prepared for the interview? "

Thando:"No, I'll deal with everything when I'm there."

Me:"But you should have prepared Thando but it's fine. Let's sleep and we'll wake up in the morning and prepare. "

Thando:"But we don-" I quickly cut her.

Me:"Huh.a let's sleep." I kiss her forehead and squeeze her butt. "Goodnight my love."

Thando:"Goodnight baby." She moves her lower body from mine and puts her right leg on top of my thighs. Now I feel cold because she makes my body very warm.

Me:"Baby I'm getting cold, please sleep ontop of me. "

Thando:"But I'm very comfortable in this

position Nkosi."

Me:"Fine."

Thando: "Baby are you sulking?" She lifts her head from my chest looks at me. "You're so cute when you're sulking baby." She moves closer to my face and kisses my lips but I don't reply. She bites my lower lip and I bite hers back and she moans then jump ontop of me making uMkhize wake up, fuck! Now I have to endure the pain and I groan. "Why did you bite me?" She asks sitting ontop of my manhood and I feel her warmth. Fuck! I'll die tonight.

Me:"Because you were also biting me."

Thando:"That doesn't mean you had to. Now I'm bleeding." She sulks and I look at her lip and it has a little amount of blood. I sigh and

sit up then pull her close and peck her lips.

Me: "You see, I'm also bleeding." She looks at me and frowns.

Thando: "Yuck! Nkosi!" She wipes my lips with her tumb then takes the duvet and wipes it thoroughly. "You can't kiss my blood man! That's" she frowns horribly like she's disgusted. "Gross !"

Me: "I can."

Thando: "No you can't. Eew " she quickly gets off the bed und runs to another room and I follow her. Oh, it's the bathroom and she's kneeling in front of the toilet seat vomiting.

Me: "Baby, are you fine?" She stands up and flushes the toilet then walks to the sink and washes her mouth.

Thando: "Yeah, I am. It's just that you disgusted me. Please wash your mouth." I walk to her and wash it then wipe it with the hanging towel.

Me: "Baby you're sure that you're fine thou? We can go to the doctor tomorrow and get you checked. "

Thando: "There's nothing you should worry about Nkosi. Let's go to sleep." She takes my hand and we walk to the bed and get into the covers.

Me: "How do you manage being a dentist if you get disgusted by blood?"

Thando: "I manage perfectly, it's what you were doing that disgusted me. "

Me: "I'm sorry baby, I won't do it again." I pull her close to me and wrap my arms around

her waist and put my left leg inside hers as she puts her right leg on top of my left one. She snuggles her head close to my chest and puts her right arm on top of my waist. "Sleep tight." I kiss her forehead and I hear her breathing slowly. That was fast, maybe she got drained by the vomiting. I slowly let go of her waist and pull my leg out of hers then slowly get off the bed. I take my clothes and wear them then walk to her and peck her lips then cover her body well. I unlock the door and go out then walk downstairs. I notice that the kitchen lights are on so I walk to it and I find a woman in short pyjamas eating something from the refrigerator. I decide to stand and watch her as she closes it and turns with a pie in her hands. She gets startled when she sees me, I'm glad that she

didn't scream because she would have woken Thando up.

"Mr Mkhize." She says blinking a lot and moves to the kitchen counter uncomfortably. I scan her face and I find her familiar.

Me:"Do I know you?" She clears her throat and nods repeatedly.

"Yes sir. I'm Pearl. Pearl Tahane. Your former receptionist." Pearl? I look at her confused. "You fired me because I disrespected Miss Zulu Sir." Oh, I remember now, it's when Thando had an accident. I just look at her and turn my back and walk out. I go to my car and get in then drive to my house.

N A T A S H A ❀

I quickly open my eyes as I get startled and

sit up. As I sit up, I notice that no arms are wrapped around my waist and leg between mine. I quickly look beside me and I don't see Nkosi. I take my phone and check the time and it's 04:20. I dial Nkosi's number and it rings for a while then gets answered. "Nkosi where are you?" I hear some shifting in the background and he clears his throat.

Nkosi: "Why are you up so early? I thought you'll wake up when I've arrived."

Me: "I ran out of sleep. Where are you?"

Nkosi: "I'm at my house. I'll be there in a hour or so."

Me: "Why didn't you sleep here?"

Nkosi: "Baby I'm a man. You can't expect me to do sleepovers."

Me:"But I see nothing wrong about that."

Nkosi: "Hawu cha Thando. Ngiyindoda yom' zulu phela." I laugh.

Me:"Such pride and ego Lathi." He keeps quiet for a moment and I also do.

Nkosi:"It's been a while since I haven't heard that name. I thought you no longer love me or it."

Me:"You're just sulking baby, you know that I love you."

Nkosi: "But baby you weren't using it and I love how my name rolls on your soft tounge."

Me:"And I love YOU Lathelethu." I say softly.

Nkosi:"You know your calm soft voice made me fall in love with you without seeing your

face and body. When you stepped into that office and talked to Lwazi, I tell you. You captured my mind, body and soul, everything in me chilled and listened to your soft melodic voice. The way you control me is beyond. It's funny how I do everything just to see you happy and smiling but I love to see you happy." By the time he finishes speaking, I'm already in tears and smiling like a retard. I can't believe he poured the love he has for me to me. I sniff and wipe off my tears. "Ngiyakuthanda MaZulu, MaNdaba wami." I giggle softly.

Me:"Ngiyakuthanda nami Khabazela. "

Nkosi:"Now get up and take a bath then get ready."

Me:"Okay, bye."

Nkosi: "There's no need to say bye my love, we'll still see each other." He hangs up and I get up then take a bath and brush my teeth. After I'm done, I wear my navy floral jumpsuit and navy block heel then brush my weave. I apply a natural makeup then go downstairs. I find Pearl drinking something from a cup.

Me: "Good morning Jewellery." She chuckles and looks at me confused.

Pearl: "Jewellery?" I nod and make breakfast.

Me: "A Pearl is a jewellery right? So yep."

Pearl: "Oh, I caught that late. I saw Mr Mkhize leaving late last night." I turn to look to look at her.

Me: "What time was it?"

Pearl: "Well I woke up at 22:40 so-" she shrugs and I nod. "I was sooo uncomfortable."

Me:"Why?"

Pearl: "Girl! Mr Mkhize is sooo intimidating! I just couldn't relax and- yhoo I can't. He's too much, he was on work mode. I don't know how you relax around him. That man demands a lot without even speaking, it's something about his aura, presence- ayi! I'm done." I laugh at her as she explains everything to me and her expression. I could confidently say she's scared of Nkosi.

Me:"Just relax man, Nkosi is not that bad and how you paint him to be. He's very cool and kind." She looks at me like I'm crazy.

Pearl:"Kind? Kind! Kind Natasha? You say Mr

Mkhize I'd kind?"

"Does my kindness has anything to do with you?"

That's Nkosi.

Pearl: "Oh shit." She curses under her breath and I laugh. She puts the cup down and when she's about to leave I stop her.

Me: "Please help me dish up Pearl." I say smirking and she helps me, she's really uncomfortable. I laugh and walk to Nkosi and hug him. "Morning baby." I say as I let go of his waist but he tightly holds mine and pulls me close.

Nkosi: "Good morning my love." He bends down a little and kisses my lips. He deepens the kiss and his hands hold my butt and grabs it.

Me: "Baby huh.a. We're not alone." I say in between the kiss.

Nkosi: "I miss you." He says in between the kiss while pulling my butt close to his body and I feel his bulge on my stomach. I quickly pull out and look at his eyes. They're small right now and little red.

Me:"Please behave." I pull him and we walk to the table and he pulls out a chair for me and I sit down. He also sits down and looks down while rubbing his face. I don't eat but look at him. "What's wrong baby?" He looks at me and his eyes are very red now.

Nkosi:"Nothing my love." He shakes his head like he's clearing some thoughts then looks at the food on the table. I decide to get up and get a glass water for him.

Me: "Here, it's cold." I say giving him the water.

Nkosi: "Thank you." He takes the water and gulps it down. I look at Pearl and she's eating her food, still looking uncomfortable. Nkosi clears his throat and stands up. "I'm going to get some air." He walks but he quickly stops and balances on the chair. I quickly get worried now.

Me: "Lathi what is wrong?" I say panicking.

Nkosi: "I said I'm okay my love, I'll just go outside." I quickly walk to him and hold his waist for balancing him. He chuckles. "I'm fine my love, there's no need for you to get worried."

Me: "Let's just go." He holds my shoulder for support. We walk outside and stand near his

car. He let's go of my shoulder and I also let go of his waist and touch his forehead to feel his temperature. "Nkosi you're hot. Let's take you to the doctor." He chuckles.

Nkosi:"Reason why I'm like this is because, I'm very turned on Thando. My blood is-" he sighs and kisses my forehead. "Don't be worried, let's wait for the blood to rush down then we'll be alright. I'll be fine, you'll see." I sigh, if he had broken my virginity, he wouldn't be feeling like this right now but I won't bring that now because he'll lecture me.

Me:"Will we still prepare? "

Nkosi:"Of cause my love, we'll not stop just because of my behavior. Let's go and eat. "

Me:"Have you cooled down?"

Nkosi: "I'm better now even though your dressing isn't doing good to me." I giggle.

Me: "Are you like this because of it?"

Nkosi: "Baby. You'll just make things worse." I laugh and we walk inside and eat. After we are done, he prepares me for the interview and when we're done, we drive to the hospital.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

FOURTY ONE ♥

NATASHA 🌸

"Can't we get you checked up Thando?" He says turning his whole body looking at me. I also look at him.

Me:"Check up for what?"

Nkosi:"Thando you vomited so I want the doctor to check you up if there's nothing wrong."

Me:"There's nothing wrong here Nkosi. I vomited because I was disgusted. Why can't we check you up for the reaction that happened in the morning? "

Nkosi:"There's nothing that needs to be checked Thando. You know how the reaction happened. "

Me:"And you also know how my reaction happened Nkosi." He sighs and nods.

Nkosi: "Okay, we won't get you checked up. I was just worried."

Me: "And there's absolutely nothing you should be worried about." I reply and brush his cheeks then peck his thick lips. "I have to go now okay?"

Nkosi: "I'll come back and take you. Now kiss you Lathi." He says with a wide smile. I giggle and open the door. "Where are you going now Sithandwa sami?" He says holding my wrist.

Me: "I'm going to be late Nkosi." He checks the time on his wrist and smirks.

Nkosi: "It's still early. Now come here." He says closing the door and holds my waist. I smile at him and he chuckles. "Stop smiling and get your luck kiss." I laugh a little and kiss him while holding on his shoulders and I

quickly pull out before things get heated. "Ha Thando. Was that a kiss?"

Me:"Yes."

Nkosi:"No." He quickly pulls me to him and kisses me deeply.

Me:"Huh.a" I say trying to stop him but he groans and squeeze my waist while his hands trail down to my butt. I quickly pull out.

"Nkosi no." He looks at me sulking and unpleased.

Nkosi:"Did you have to to pull out thou Thando? I was still enjoying the kiss."

Me:"You'll get another goodbye kiss Nkosi."

Nkosi:"Okay fine." He gets out and walks to my side and opens the door.

Me:"Baby are you really sulking?" I ask

getting out of the car and he takes my bag and closes the car.

Nkosi:"No I am not." He holds my hand and we walk towards the hospitals entrance.

Me:"I loove you Baby. My Lathi Lathi. My dark chocolate. My Lindt chocolate swiss." He chuckles because he knows that a chocolate is my favourite. "Are you mad at me?" I ask sweetly.

Nkosi: "How can I be mad at you? At an innocent angel." He kisses my temple as we walk to the receptionist.

Me:"I'm still innocent, I know. "

Nkosi:"Not that innocent Thando. I'm talking about that sweetly calm innocence."

Me:"Whatever. I'm still innocent." Nkosi

clears his throat as we're standing in front of a that receptionist is busy. She quickly looks up and gulps down his saliva as she's looking at him.

Nkosi: "Are the interviews already started? "

Rec: "No Sir, but I can take you to the interviewer. "

Nkosi: "Good." The receptionist catwalks in front of us shaking her butt as we walk to the interviewer. My mood just drops and I let go of Nkosi's hand and fold my arms close to my chest. "Baby what's wrong?" He asks stopping me from walking. I look at him as he's looking at me confused. I just keep quiet because I'm jealous. I'm really jealous. "Baby? Are you jealous?" I just look aside as my lips are already pouted. He comes closer

to me and holds my waist. "There's no need for that my love." Well there is because that woman is Nkosi's type. Slim with the little curves. He pecks my lips. "Baby?" I look at him. "I love you okay? There's no need for you to get jealous even thou I love seeing you jealous." Mncm. He sighs.

"Sir, please let's get in."- says the receptionist. I wish Nkosi could stay with me in the interview so that that woman doesn't walk with Nkosi.

Nkosi:" You can leave. We'll get in on our own." Thank God he said she must leave.

Rec:"If you need anything Sir, just call me." She says flirting. I wish I could slap her but I decide to calm my self down. I try to remove Nkosi's hands from my waist but he

holds it tightly.

Nkosi: "I won't need anything from you." He pulls me close to him and he devours my lips and I melt right there. My hands make their way up to Nkosi's neck and they hold it and I move more close to him as he deepens the kiss while holding my butt and grabbing it. I hear tongue clicks and heels clicking. I guess the receptionist went to her working station. Nkosi continues kissing me and I wish that I could wrap my legs around his waist. He grabs my butt again pulling me close to his lower abdomen and I can feel his bulge. My hands make their way to it and touch it causing Nkosi to groan. It feels so good when he groans in my mouth but he pulls out slowly and pecks my lips. My eyes are still closed and he kisses them causing me to giggle and I

open them. "Good luck for the interview my love." I smile involuntarily.

Me: "Thank you my love." I remove my hands off him and he also does and I step back. He opens the door for me and I step in and he closes the door. I take a sit and the interview starts. I can confidentially say that Nkosi helped me with the preparation because some of the questions he asked me, the interviewer asked them and they were not so easy. After the interview is over, I get out of that office and take out my phone then call Nkosi. "Nkosi I'm done."

Nkosi: "I'm outside, come." He hangs up and I walk outside to his car. He comes out smiling.

Me: "Why are you smiling?" I ask as I'm

close to him.

Nkosi: "Can't I smile when I see my woman? Because she's beautiful and has all the things I want and need in a woman." I giggle and hug him. "You see, her heart is mine, see these curves." He says busy touching and holding my hips and butt. "They are all mine, they belong to me baby." I giggle and move away from him.

Me: "I am not yours Nkosiyomuzi. I don't belong to you baby." He laughs and shakes his head.

Nkosi: "You wish my love. You wish baby." Just as I'm about to answer him, my phone rings and I take it out. It's an unknown number. I look at it confused and I look at Nkosi who is looking at me curious.

Me:"It's an unknown number. "

Nkosi:"Answer it baby." I answer it and the first thing I hear is a sniffing woman.

"Hello." - the woman says still sniffing.

Me:"Mama?" I ask worriedly.

Mommy:"Sweetheart where are you? I'm worried about you my sweet."

Me:"I'm okay ma. I'm fine. Why are you calling me with another number?"

Mommy: "You blocked our calls so I)) $\frac{7}{8}$ 888 $\frac{7}{8}$ brought another sim." Oh, I forgot. I keep quiet. "Sweetheart please come back home." I just look at Nkosi and keep quiet.

"Natasha."

Me:"Ma."

Mommy:"When did you start calling me 'ma'?"

What happened to mommy? When are you coming home?"

Me:"I'm not coming ma." She sighs and sniffs.

Mommy:"Sweetheart please, come back home. I miss you sweet, I'm not fine without you."

Me:"Mommy I'm not coming home. Y-".

Mommy:"I missed being called mommy sweetheart, please come. "

Me:"No ma. I'll not. If I come back you'll probably lock me in the house because you're busy trying to separate me and Nkosi."

Mommy:"I have no problem with your relationship Sweetheart, I don't. It's your father, he's trying to protect you. "

Me:"Protect me from what ma?! It's the

same! You and father are the same! You are one!" I say getting angry.

Nkosi:"Thando don't shout at your mother. Respect her, talk to her with a calm voice okay?" He says authoritative.

Me:"Okay." I sigh and close my eyes. "I'm not coming back home ma. Bye." I say a bit calm. Just as I'm about to hang up she shout:

Mommy: "I love you sweetheart, mommy misses you. Let's meet somewhere, I just want to see your beautiful face my angel. Please sweetheart." She pleads hopeful yet hurt. I feel my tears forming.

Me:"Okay. Bye." I say with a hoarse voice and I hung up the clear my throat.

Nkosi:"Just see you mother my love." He says pulling me for a hug and brushing my back.

"Stop those tears from forming baby, I don't want to see you crying." I quickly blink away the tears and hug his waist. "Arrange a place where you'll meet your mother okay?" I nod.

Me: "I will but not this week. Maybe next week. "

Nkosi: "I'll remind you. Come let's get in." We let go of each other and he opens the door for me and I get in then he closes the door. He walks to his side and gets in. "How was the interview?"

Me: "Good. Your preparation helped me because he asked some of the questions you asked which were pretty hard."

Nkosi: "I'm glad my help got handy."

Me: "Thank you for your help." He holds my

hand and kissed it then drives with one hand.

"You know driving with one hand is risky?"

Nkosi: "I know but I can't drive with two hands."

Me: "I'll teach you."

Nkosi: "Where do you want to have lunch?"

Me: "Roco mama's. "

Nkosi: "No wonder you're this thick. " I quickly look at him and he quickly kisses my hand. He's been holding it. "I didn't mean it in the bad way baby. I was just admiring your thickness." Mncm. "I'm sorry."

Me: "Okay, won't you eat there?"

Nkosi: "Since you are eating there, I'll also do. A burger won't hurt." He parks the car and we get out then walk inside hand in hand.

Me:"I'll go and use the bathroom." He looks at me like he's thinking.

Nkosi:"Okay." I take my bag and walk to the bathroom and do my business. When I get out, I bump into someone because I'm busy closing my bag.

Me:"Oh sorry." I say as I realize that I bumped into some guy.

"I'm also sorry, I am Sibusiso Mbixane." I won't say that this guy is Zulu judging by the way he pronounced his name. "I'm a Xhosa guy." I smile tightly as he holds out his hand and I don't want to be rude so I take it.

Me:"I'm Natasha Zulu." He smile widely and his smile is very beautiful, it's attracting and it's dashing and I can't help but also smile widely. "You have a beautiful smile." You

have to admire something that is beautiful. He laughs. "And also a beautiful laugh." We laugh together and someone clears his throat, I can confidently say it's Nkosi. I remove my eyes from Sibusiso's and remove my hand. I can't bring myself to look at Nkosi. I'm very sure that he's angry and wishing to punch this guy. I look at his hand and try to hold it but he moves his hand away from mine before I could even touch his. Ouch, that hurts. I feel his eyes on me and I wish the earth could open so that I could get in.

Sibusiso:"Bye." He says after clearing his throat and leaves. Nkosi just walks to the counter and leaves me without saying a word. A cashier gives him a bag that has orders and he leaves. I follow him to the car and I get in and he quickly drives off. I'm even

scared to look at him so I look at my hands and fiddle with my fingers. He throws the bag that has orders at my thighs and continues driving. I don't think I'll eat, I can't. I feel his eyes on me again and I open the bag then take out a takeaway then eat the burger. I feel his eyes off me as I continue eating and I drink the juice after I've finished eating the burger. I close the bag and put it at the backseat and I continue playing with my fingers. I wish I didn't bump into Sibusiso if Nkosi can't talk to me. We drive to the driveway at Wimpy and he stops there and kills the engine. I won't get out of this car until Nkosi speaks to me. I decide to soften him up.

Me:"Lathi." I speak softly but he doesn't reply. "Mkhize." I speak again softly but he

doesn't speak except for looking at me, I can feel his eyes on me but I won't dare and look at him. I'm scared. "Lathi." I say again and he replies .

Nkosi:"Yhini?(What?)"

Me: "Please talk to me."

Nkosi:"Aren't I speaking to you?" He asks harshly.

Me:"Please don't be mad at me Lathi." I speak softly.

Nkosi: "Why? Weren't you mad at me at the hospital for being jealous? Weren't you not? Just because of a receptionist that was busy shaking her ass at me, weren't you?"

Me:"I was." I say softly and low.

Nkosi:"Then how do you think I felt when you

were busy smiling at that guy huh? Busy laughing and blushing at each other? Busy holding hands? How do you think I felt? Or you didn't even think of me. You were even admiring his smile Milisuthando! Thando I don't want any guy touching you okay? I don't want any guy smiling at you except for me. I'm the only one who's supposed to touch you. I don't want any guy touching you Milisuthando, I'm serious." He says sternly and low and I'm glad that he didn't shout at me. I nod. "Look at me." I look at him even thou it was hard and he's angry.

"Milisuthando, you are mine and mine only. I don't ever want to see you with a guy. I don't ever want a guy to touch you, okay?"

Me:"Okay."

Nkosi: "Good now get out and wash your hands."

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

FOURTY TWO ♥

NATASHA ❁

Me: "Are you being serious?" I say unbelievably looking at him straight in the eye and he gives me his scary expression and I quickly open the door.

Nkosi: "Wait, we'll go together. I don't know

whether you'll meet another guy and touch him." He opens the door and steps out and closes it. "Come, I don't have time." I step out with my bag and close the door. He comes to my side and holds my waist. "Don't touch me." Mncm. We walk inside and go to the bathroom. He let's go of my waist and I look at him. "Wash with the gel." I wash my hands using the gel and dry my hands. He takes out a handlotion and gives it to me and I lotion my hands. He walks to me and pecks my lips and holds my waist. "Let's go." Such drama. We walk out and go to the car. We open doors, step in, close them and we drive off. "Should I drive you to your house?"

Me: "Where are you going?"

Nkosi: "I'm leaving for work."

Me: "Ok. Just drive me to the airport. "

Nkosi: "I'll still come next week." I nod. "Are you fine with me leaving?" I turn and look at him.

Me: "I am besides, even if I wasn't, that wouldn't make a difference. "

Nkosi: "You know that isn't true right?"

Me: "Yeah whatever." I turn and look out of the window.

Nkosi: "What's with the change of mood Thando?"

Me: "There's no change."

Nkosi: "Well there is judging by your tone. It's like my presence annoys you right now." Well it is. "Thando."

Me: "Huh?"

Nkosi: "Oh, you're saying 'huh' now when you're talking to me. Thando what is wrong with you?" He says slightly shouting.

Me: "There's nothing wrong with me." He chuckles unbelievably and I turn to look at him.

Nkosi: "Oh I see. It's that guy you were talking to. Thando are you falling for that guy?" Mncm. "Milisuthando I'm talking to you because if you are, I'll drag you to Johannesburg." He says shouting.

Me: "Nkosi, if you're going to at shout me, it's better if you stop the car and I step out. I won't listen to you shouting at me." I reply slightly shouting and he chuckles and stops the car below the yellow line and turns to look at me.

Nkosi:"Milisuthando. I asked you a question."
He says sternly and I chuckle.

Me:"I can't believe we're fighting about uSbusiso Nkosiyomuzi." He looks at me shocked and he steps out and closes the door and comes to my side. He opens the door and drags me out and opens the backseat and pushes me inside and he also gets in and he closes the door.

Me: "Nkosi why-" he quickly shuts me with a hungry kiss and I don't kiss him back, well because I'm still confused and shocked. He bites my lip and I pull out. "Why are biting me!" He bite me very hard and I wish to cry.

Nkosi:"You'll kiss me." He kisses me again and I reply.

A week passed and today, Nkosi comes back

from Jo'burg. He's here to see me. Well last week, I met my friends and we had fun. They liked Pearl especially Nandi well we all know why. It's because they're both crazy. You should have seen how close they got. Well me and Nandi are good, we talked and sorted our stuff and she's no longer complaining about me not giving her attention. And me and Pearl got the job at Hibiscus Private Hospital, I'm a dentist and she's a PA for the hospitals manager, well her experiences are being a PA and a receptionist. About mom, we met and talked till she convinced me to see my father. At first I didn't want to and she said that she talked to my father. Oh my poor mother, she's so ugly now, she lost weight and she has eye bags. Her voice was even hoarse, maybe my ignorance made her like that but I

know, she'll bounce back to her self in no time. Apparently she didn't talk to my father for weeks, well starting from the day I moved out but now they're talking. And people! Luyanda and Uthandiwe are dating, well they're a couple now and no one knows about them. They started dating Wednesday this week and guys, I'm sooo thick right now that I'm even thinking of losing weight, well Nkosi said I shouldn't because he loves me chubby and soft. Speaking of him, that day when he pushed me in the backseat, he muffed me soo rough, I swear, my little cookie hurt the whole day. Well I'm grateful that he didn't insert four fingers this time. Well back to the present, right now I'm packing my clothes for a sleep over at Nkosi's place. He said that he'll come and

fetch me and it's so hot outside. I finish packing and I take my bag and go downstairs and find Pearl making breakfast in the kitchen wearing her working clothes. Well I'm not working today, it's my day off. I work starting from Monday to Thursday and when I'm called at work and I like it like that.

Me: "Morning." I say as I sit down and put the bag on top of the counter.

Pearl: "Morning. How are you? "

Me: "I'm good. And you?"

Pearl: "I am good too. Any plans for today?"

Me: "Well I'm sleeping over at Nkosi's house." She turns and looks at the bag and me.

Pearl:"Oh, I see. When are you coming back?"

Me:"Well Sunday. Will you manage on your own?"

Pearl:"Oh yes I'll manage." She dishes up and we eat.

Me:"Why were you asking?" She looks up from her plate.

Pearl:"Well, I was thinking of ladies night since we're always caught up with work and don't have time for ourselves. "

Me:"You're making me feel bad right now."

Pearl:"Oh you shouldn't honey. We'll still have it, we have a lot of time and you missed your man. I'm sure he also misses you. When will he fetch you?"

I look at my phone and the time is 07:20 .

Me:"He should be here anytime from now. Do you want a lift?"

Pearl:"Yeah since you'll pass by the town."

Me:"Okay, you'll get it. You over did yourself with the breakfast. "

Pearl:"Oh well, it was my aim. You know you pay the bills and all and i do nothing about paying for them so I cleaning the house and cooking has to be done by me." Ever since she moved here, she always cleans and cooks, she said that since she doesn't pay the bills she should do something.

Me:"You know that is not necessary. When you get paid, we'll split the chores."

Pearl:"Well I don't mind even if we don't."

Me:"Well, we will split them." My phone rings

and it's Nkosi. "Sorry." I say and she nods.
"Baby?"

Nkosi: "I'm outside baby." His voice is very different right now.

Me: "Okay, we are coming."

Nkosi: "We?"

Me: "Oh yes, me and Pearl, she asked for a lift."

Nkosi: "All right then baby." He hangs up and I look at Pearl.

Me: "He's outside. Let's finish up." We finish eating and we wash the dishes and walk to Nkosi's car. She opens the backseat and I open the front door and Nkosi quickly hides something and puts it in his pocket. I get in and close the door and he get out and takes

my bag and puts it in the boot. He comes back and smiles nervously.

Nkosi:"Morning Baby." He pecks my lips and greets Pearl.

Me:"Morning. " and Pearl also replies. We drive off in silence until we drop Pearl at work and drive to his house.

Nkosi:"How are you?" He asks nervously.

Me:"I'm fine. Nkosi why are you nervous? "

Nkosi: "No. I'm not. Maybe I'll have a flue."

Me:"Then you should get some meds.

Nkosi: "No, I'll be fine baby." He turns on the music and we drive to his house and he parks in the garage after locking the gate.

"I'll follow you baby. Just go to the garden."

He says as he opens the door for me while

he's still in the car.

Me:"What are you hiding Nkosi?" He looks at me with a straight face.

Nkosi:"Nothing. There's nothing that I'm hiding." He says with a bold voice and I decide to go to the garden. As I walk there, I see trails of roses guiding me to it and the roses are my favourite. I follow the trails and they lead me to a beautiful cosy setup. A picnic setup. I look behind me and I see Nkosi walking towards me smiling.

Me:"It's beautiful. "He chuckles.

Nkosi:" No its not. You're just saying its beautiful because it has food or otherwise. This is just plain."

Me:"No it's not because it has food. "We both laugh and sit down. " You love spoiling

me."

Nkosi: "It's because I love seeing you happy and getting chubby because of me." I just smile involuntarily. He loves my chubby self, he always says that I should send him my photos because he wants to see if I'm not losing weight. "Now open up." I open my mouth and he feeds me and I feel so special right now, I feel like a baby.

Me: "You too, open up." He chuckles and I feed him.

Nkosi: "I love it when we're like this. Talking to each other in peace, not arguing and getting jealous of each other." I giggle and he also chuckles.

Me: "Well, I'm not very jealous like you." He laughs shortly.

Nkosi: "Yes you're correct because when you get jealous, you want to cry and get mad at me."

Me: "You know, we should look each other in a house and never get out so that none of us gets jealous of each other." He smiles.

Nkosi: "That's a good idea. Come here." I stand up and go to him then sit on his lap. "I missed your lips." I giggle and he kisses me while holding my left hand and as we kiss, I feel a cold object slipping in my finger and as I'm about to pull out and see what it is. He deepens the kiss and holds my waist pulling me close to him and as I wrap my hand around his neck I feel something heavy on my finger. I try again to pull out but he kisses me so good and passionately, like he's pouring

out his love for me and I melt in his arms and also pour out my love for him. After what seems like minutes of us kissing each other slowly and gently, we pull out of the kiss slowly. "You're my wife right now and forever." He says softly and meaningful and I remove my hand around his neck and look at it. I see a big diamond reflecting in my ring finger. It's a wedding ring! Oh my god! Nkosi just proposed! He's so bad at asking, I touch my ring because it feels like a dream. Wow guys! It's beautiful! I look up to him and smile as I see him smiling at me.

Me:"I love it! I'll marry you!" I'm so happy right now! I giggle and hug him then kiss him and he pulls out.

Nkosi:"Well I didn't ask you to marry me, I

just told you that you are my wife so that you could treat me like your husband. I love you." Oh my god! I haven't heard that in a long time.

Me:"I love you too! My husband! " I giggle and kiss him again and admire my wedding ring! "You're so horrible at proposing Nkosi. Couldn't you at least get on your knee and say those " will you make me the happiest man by marrying me?" ' he chuckles and shakes his head.

Nkosi:"I don't do that stuff, my wife😊❤️." I can't get over the idea of being his wife. I just cry and hug him tightly.

Me:"I'm glad and more than happy that you're my first and my last my husband." I just can't explain my joy and the happiness

that I'm feeling inside people. He hugs me tightly and kisses my forehead.

Nkosi:"It's been a while since I heard you crying. I'm glad that it's tears of joy this time." I giggle still crying. Guys I'm over the moon!

Me:"I can't explain how happy I am Lathi!"

Nkosi:"Your tears explain it my love." I free my self from his arms and run around the garden while jumping up and down. "Don't fall Thando!" I don't listen to him, I raise my hand up and let the sun hit it and I watch as it reflects and glitters. It's seems like it's blue but it's not my favourite colour, well it's better this way thou. It's perfect! Nkosi spins me around and throws me up. Oh my god! That move messed things up. He catches me

and I stand on my own. "What's wrong?"

Me: "Did you have to throw me up?" I feel the going going up and I quickly run away from him because I don't want him to see my mess but guess what? He follows me and I just throw up and it hurts so bad. Nkosi scoops me up and we walk inside the house and go to the bathroom and I clean up while he's watching me.

Nkosi: "I'm sorry okay? I'm sorry baby."

Me: "But Nkosi what were you thinking huh? I have just ate and you spin me around then throw me up?" He walks to and holds my waist.

Nkosi: "Please forgive me, my beautiful wife?" I just giggle and hug him. "You don't enough of me, I see." I just giggle as he also hugs

me.

Me: "I forgive you my handsome husband but it seems like you also don't get enough of me." He chuckles softly.

Nkosi: "How do you expect me to get enough of all of this?" He says squeezing my waist and trailing down to my butt and squeezes my it. "And your love?"

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

FOURTY THREE ♥

NATASHA 🌸

I still can't believe that I'm engaged to Nkosiyomuzi. He's a blessing in my life.

"What are you thinking about?" I look up and I see him smiling at me. I wish I could hold him.

Me:"I'm thinking about you my love." He walks towards me and sits down then gives me something to eat.

Nkosi:"What about me?" I smile and peck his lips.

Me:"How blessed I am to have you in my life and be your soon to be wife." He smiles and pecks my lips.

Nkosi: "You're not my soon to be my love. You're already my wife and I'm the one who's very and more blessed to have you in my life. Now eat up so that we can go."

Me: "Where to?"

Nkosi: "To my home. I have to introduce my wife to them."

Me: "But I have nothing to wear."

Nkosi: "Well there's no stress. We'll go for shopping so that I can spoil you." I giggle and start to eat. He's everything a woman needs in life and I'm scared to lose him for another.

I finish eating and brush my teeth while

Nkosi puts the dishes in the kitchen. I walk down the stairs with my bag and he takes the car keys and we walk out. "What will you buy?"

Me: "I don't know, I'll see when I'm there."

We get inside the car and I turn my body and look at him.

Nkosi: "What's wrong?" To be honest, I want

to sit on top of him and hold him so I just smile. He chuckles and smiles. "Do what you want to do." I grin and sit on top of him and he looks at me confused and laughs a little. "Baby, you wanted to sit on me?"

Me: "Yes, is there anything wrong with what I'm doing?" He pecks my lips.

Nkosi: "No baby, nothing is wrong." He turns on the aircon since it's warm inside the car and opens the sunroof. It's good that we're driving in a Range Rover, not in a small car. I wrap my arms around his waist and lie on his chest. He kisses my forehead and starts driving. I think I'll just sleep right now.

NKOSIYOMUZI ❁

I was driving slowly when I suddenly heard Thando breathing slowly, I guess she's

sleeping. She always sleeps when she had vomited. I drive to the mall and park, I'm glad that the parking lot is not full. I open the door and move my body slowly so that I can get off with her. I get off and she wraps her legs around my waist as her hands are now around my neck. I close the door and walk to her side and take her bag. I walk to the mall as I exit the parking lot and Thando wakes up and looks at me confused with her sleepy eyes, she's so beautiful right now and I love the fact that she's natural. I stop walking and she removes her hands around my neck and rubs her eyes.

Thando: 'Why didn't you wake me up?' She asks with a low hoarse voice and she clears her throat.

Me:"You were still sleeping baby." She nods and closes her eyes, she's still sleepy and she wraps her hands around my neck.

Thando:"Okay, put me down." She says and yawns.

Me:"But baby you're still sleepy, let's go back to the car and wait for you to wake up completely okay?" She nods and I walk back to the car and open I backseat and I lay her down. "Are you tired?" I ask standing outside the car next to her.

Thando:"No I'm not, I guess I wanted to sleep. "

Me:"I'll go inside and buy water okay?" She nods and sleeps in a baby position. I close the car and lock it then walk inside. As I'm taking water, I hear someone calling me so I

take the water and close the fridge then look behind me. I see my client.

Mr Mbatha: "I see you're with your wife here Mr Mkhize but I'm wondering why you're hiding her."

Me: "How do you know my wife?"

Mr Mbatha: "Oh well, we saw you outside with her shining ring. It's a pity we didn't see her face."

Me: "My life doesn't involve you Mr Mbatha. I don't know why you're even bothering yourself with it. "

Mr Mbatha: "Well you're a successful business man Mr AMX. Anyone would like to see who you're spending your life with." I sigh as I'm getting irritated by this man.

Me: "It was nice seeing you Mr Mbatha." I walk away and pay for the water at the kiosk then walk out. As I walk to my car, I see people taking pictures of it and I start worrying because I left Thando inside. I march towards my car and people start walking away. I unlock the car and open the door and I see Thando sleeping by her stomach, she changed her sleeping position. "Baby, is there something bothering you?" I say as I quickly get inside the car and close the door. She sighs and sit up straight as I give her water.

Thando:" It's just that the people who were outside were making noise and that woke me up." She drinks the water and sighs. "I'm just glad that this car has dimmed windows because they didn't see me." Huh?

Me:"Is there a problem if they see you?" She sighs and plays with the bottle.

Thando:"I just want us to be private." I quickly turn to look at her. "Well for now since I'm not ready."

Me:"If we see each other public or if I see you in a restaurant, what should I do?"

Thando:"Pretend like we're not together Nkosi."

Me:"So you're telling me to not hold and kiss you? You should be crazy." She sighs and sits in the front sit and turns her body to look at me.

Thando:"Nkosi please. I'm not ready to face the media and the drama when I'm with you. I just want us to have a peaceful relationship."

Me: "Will you go inside to buy your dress?"
She looks at me unbelievably.

Thando: "Nkosi you can't be serious right now. Why changing the subject?"

Me: "I guess you'll meet my parents like that."

Thando: "Well you might as well drive to your house because I'll not meet your parents wearing tights."

Me: "I said we're going to my parents house Milisuthando." I snap a little.

Thando: "Nkosi I said I will not go to your parents house wearing like this nor making our relationship public. Why are you like this huh? Why do you always want things to go your way huh? Why? Is it because I'm submissive and easily give up on our

arguments? Or is because you're controlling me, everything that I do?"

N A T A S H A ❀

He opens his mouth to speak but he quickly closes it and keeps quiet. I take that time to think about what I said and I look down and play with my hands. I didn't realise that I said he was controlling me. Well I didn't mean it. Just as I was about to apologize he steps out and locks the car then walks to the mall. I didn't even mean to snap back at him as he also snapped but I found myself snapping at him. I wonder how took what I said. He comes back after maybe 30 minutes or so holding a Woolworths plastic bag. He gets in the car and gives me the plastic and it has a yellow polka dot long dress and gold

sandals with a chocolate cake. My favourite!
"Nkosi I'm s-" he quickly cuts me.

Nkosi:"Don't be sorry, I'm glad that you told me that I'm controlling you and I didn't realize nor know that I was controlling you and I apologise for controlling you. I guess I was made by jealousy and the love i- . I'm sorry. I won't make excuses for my tendencies . I will stop controlling you." He says softly and drives off to his house in silence and parks in driveway. You can go and change." He says softly. I sigh and get off the car as he also does. He holds my hand and pulls me close to him then kisses my forehead. "I love you okay?" I nod and hug his waist.

Me:"I love you too Mkhize." I say as I stood

in front of him. He smiles and pulls me close to him.

Nkosi:"Come here." We kiss each other normally and pull out. "You're so beautiful." I blush and hide my self in his chest.

Me:"Thank you and stop making me blush with this tendency of yours of complimenting me unexpectedly. "

Nkosi:"I guess I'm thinking out loud baby. Let's go inside."

Me:"I can't believe that I'm nervous again of meeting your parents." I say as we are walking towards the door hand in hand.

Nkosi:"You just love being nervous. That's all."

Me:" Mnxá, you're just saying it because

you're trying to make me less nervous. "

Nkosi:"Is it working?"

Me:"A little bit." He opens the door and we see his parents sitting on top of each other kissing. I've never thought that I'd see old people kissing. I quickly look down and Nkosi clears his throat.

Nkosi:"There is what we call a bedroom Baba nawe Ma."

Ma:"Oh, I didn't see you coming in." I look up and I see her walking to us. "Hello my daughter." She says hugging me and I return the hug. I see Nkosi's father walking away and Nkosi follows him. I think that his father doesn't like me. I really have a feeling that he doesn't.

Me:"Sawubona Ma. How are you?" We walk to

the couches and we sit down.

Ma:"I'm good dear, how are you?"

Me:"I'm also good Ma. "

Ma:"I'm sorry for what you saw sweetheart."
She says letting go of my hands and she looks at them in disbelief. "Milisa! Oh my! You're engaged! He finally asked you! I'm so happy." She says excitedly pulling me for a hug and I giggle.

Me:"Actually, he didn't ask. He told me that I'm his wife." She laughs at me and admires my ring.

Ma:"He doesn't have a sense of humor. Unlike his father. I should take you out, for a celebration. Come let's go." She takes my hand and we stand up. "Go to the car while I go and take my bag."

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

FOURTY THREE ♥

CONTINUATION 🌍

NKOSIYOMUZI 🌸

Me: "Baba why didn't you greet Milisuthando?" I ask my father as I have reached him.

Baba: "I'll greet her. Why did you come here with her?"

Me: "Baba how can you ask that and why does

it sounds like you want Thando? Like you don't like her. Thando is not that girl that you wouldn't like baba."

Baba:"Nkosiyomuzi, are you sure about your girl?"

Me:"I'm sure about my woman. That's why I engaged her."He turns to look at me.

Baba:"How can you engage her huh? That girl is weak for you Nkosiyomuzi, I don't like her for you!" I just don't know what to say anymore. It's better if I keep quiet because if I do. I'll get very angry and disrespect him and the last thing I want is making him angry."

Me:"What I'm here for is to let you know that I engaged her and I'd like to pay a Lobola for her. This week or next."

Baba:"Can you give me sometime alone?" I look at him unbelievably.

Me:"Baba we're still talking. You can't dismiss me like that."

Baba:"Okay. Tell me. Why did you marry her? "

Me:"I married her because I love her."

Baba:"That's the only reason you married her?"

Me:"Baba I don't have to have a reason to marry Milisuthando. If I find a reason for that, then I'll end up separating with her if I no longer find that reason."

Baba:"Okay. So what about the fact that she can't conceive?"

Me:"Oh that's the reason you don't like her

huh? Well, I'll still marry her."

Baba:"If abakwaZulu charge more than her value, what should we do? Because when they do, we will bring up the fact that-"

Me:"BABA AWUKAHLE NGALOKHO MAN!"
He looks at me shocked.

Baba:"Don't you dare ever raise your voice again when you're speaking to me uyezwa Lathelethu!? "

Me:"Ufuna ngithini baba okanye ngenze njani uma ungasula? (What do you want me to say or do when you're making me angry?) "

Baba:"Awusuke lana phambi kwami." I turn my back on him and take out my phone.

Me:"Babomncane sawubona . (Hello uncle.)"I greet my uncle as I've just dialed his

number.

Bab'omncane : "Muzi, sawubona ndodana. (Hello son.)"

Me: "Bab'omncane ngicela ukhulume nomalume. Ngifuna ukhipha imali zelobola for abakwa Zulu. (Uncle please talk to my other uncles. I want to pay dowry to the Zulu's.)"

Bab'omncane: "Awu, sowukhulile ndodana. (Oh, you have grown son.)"

Me: "Yebo bab'omncane. Ingaba uzokhuluma nabadala kunye nomalume? (Yes uncle. Will you talk to the elders and the uncles?)"

Bab'omncane : "Yebo ndodana. (Yes son.)"

Me: "Eh, bab'omncane. Umakoti wenu akabelethi. (Your daughter in law can't conceive.)" He keeps quiet for few minutes.

Bab'omncane : "Have you talked to Phakade about it? "

Me: "Yes I did bab'omncane but he's complaining about it. "

Bab'omncane : "Is she a barren naturally or? "

Me: "Bab'omncane angithandi uma umubiza ngenyumba. (Uncle I don't like it when you call her a barren.) And no, it's not natural, it was caused by an accident. "

Bab'omncane: "Ngiyaxolisa Mkhize. Cha, kulungile uma usithi yingozi. (I apologize Mkhize. No, it's fine if you say it was an accident). I'll convince the elders about the matter. "

Me: "Ngiyabonga, usalekahle. (Thank you. Stay well.)" I hang up and leave the house and walk to mine. I unlock it and I find it

squeaky clean. I'm glad that my mother still cleans it. I close the door and walk to my bedroom. I lie down and close my eyes.

N A T A S H A ❀

"Have you found the wedding dress? The wedding planner? Oh my! The venue?" She asks excitedly and I giggle and shake my head. She's very happy about this marriage.

Me:"Ma, don't forget that your son proposed today and I don't have time to plan the wedding, for now. I haven't even told my family about it. I don't even know how my father will take it or my brothers. It's just a mess and I didn't even think about them. "

Ma:"Listen here sweetheart, put your happiness first. Don't care about what

others will think or say okay? You only live once so better enjoy it while you can. You don't know what tomorrow may bring."

Me:"But Ma, they're not just others. They are my family and family comes first."

Ma:"It comes first before your happiness? Sweetie, I don't mean to bad influence you okay but family turns against each other. I haven't met yours but, I'm just stating facts here but if in your life family comes first, then so be it. "

Me:"So Ma you say that your sons and daughters come after your happiness? "

Ma:"Oh darling they don't, I'll always think first about them."

Me:"Then that's how I also feel Ma." She smiles at me.

Ma:"I was just testing you my daughter. You're correct, family comes first. I was testing your knowledge and mind okay, just stand up for your family. Especially your children." I chuckle.

Me:"Well, I guess I'll put Lolwethu first then because she's my first and last daughter." She sighs and looks at me.

Ma:"Sweetheart, don't give up. Don't lose hope. Just believe that one day you'll have your own okay? And Lolwethu is my daughter." I laugh at her and take the dress, yes she took me out for shopping.

Me:"Well, we share her. She's mine and Nkosi's."

Ma:"You and Elethu are just the same. You claim my daughter to be yours while you

don't want to make yours." We share a laugh.
"Well that's if you're not depriving my son."
I clear my throat and move away from her
and look at some shoes. "Milisa don't say that
you're depriving my son! "

Me:"Well Ma he's depriving himself because
I told him that I'm ready to be intimate with
him but he said no, we should wait for a
marriage. "

Ma:"Oh darling? You're still a virgin? Well I
won't blame you sweetheart because you
engaged a man with principles and a man of
principles." I turn to look at her.

Me:"Are you saying that Nkosiyomuzi is like
that? "

Ma:"Well he is my daughter. If he had
broke your virginity, he would have paid

damages in that very same minute. "

Me:"Ma!?! Then my family would have killed me if they found out that I've broken my virginity before marriage. "

Ma:"Your parents raised you very good. I don't even think that my daughters are still virgins, well except for Lolwethu. Her father would kill her. "

Me:"Well I guess your husband is not very strict. "

Ma:"No he's not and I'm talking about Nkosi. He's that type of man that would let you do what you want but with a warning first and say, you reap what you sow."

Me:"Ma, do you think that he has a problem with me?"

Ma:"Who? My husband? "

Me:"Yes Ma. I think that he has a problem.
"

Ma:"Well I won't lie to you sweetheart. I don't know. Why do you say that? " Just as I was about to tell her, my phone rings.

Me:"Hello? "

Nkosi:"Baby where are you? "

Me:"Your mother took me out for shopping. "

Nkosi:"You've been out for so long now, tell her to stop shopping and you, come to my house because I miss you. "

Me:"I'll tell her, well it will take time to drive to your house. "

Nkosi:"I'm talking about the house that's in my father's homestead baby."

Me:"Oh,I didn't know. I'll ask your mother to show it to me then."

Nkosi:"Okay, give her the phone. "

Me:"Ma, Nkosiyomuzi wants to speak to you. I'll go and look for other clothes or pay for these." I say giving her my phone and I walk to the tills to pay for the clothes but there's a queue. I wait for about a minute and Nkosi's mother comes to me.

Ma:"Your husband says I should come with his wife now and stop the shopping and don't pay for your clothes, I'll pay for them." I nod and give the clothes to the cashier and Ma pays for them. We walk out and I hear my stomach grumbling.

Me:"Ma, I'm very hungry right now. Can we order some pizza?"

Ma:"Okay darling. I'll also order it for dinner.
" We order the pizza and wait for it then
leave. Nkosi's mother is so easy to talk to.
She's carefree and live. Lovely and fun to
talk to. She talks to you with understanding
and maturity. I love her and I wish that her
husband would be just like his wife.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER😊

FOURTY FOUR♥

NATASHA🌸

'Thanks for the shopping ma. I'll come back

very quickly.' I say as I step out of the car taking out my shopping bags.

Ma:"It's a pleasure sweetheart. Phela you're my one and only daughter in law so I have to treat you good.' We share a laugh and she shows me Nkosi's house, it's big.

Me:"I'll come back to have supper. By 7 o'clock, I'll be next to you." She laughs and checks her clock.

Ma:"It's 17:22 right now so I'm giving the two of you a hour." I nod and walk to his house and step in as I first knocked.

Me:"Nkosi come down and take me!" I shout and put the bags on the couches. He walks down the stairs barefoot and stands on the staircase. I also take off my sandals as my foot are now swollen and hurting. I walk to

him on the staircase.

"Me:"Hey, you're okay? "

Nkosi:"Yeah, I am." He replies dismissively and that's when I notice that something is wrong. He holds my hand and we walk into a room. I don't even have time to admire it because Nkosi smashed his lips on mine the minute we got inside his room. He lifts me up and kisses me aggressively. I would lie if I say it doesn't hurt. He walks to the bed and lays me down still kissing me hungrily and aggressively. He lifts up my dress and takes it off then kisses my neck, more like biting it because he's doing all of this aggressively and huffing, breathing heavily. He tears apart my undergarment and before I know it, his manhood is poking my womanhood. He

comes back and kisses my lips and I suddenly feel a push in my vagina hurting me and that's when I realize that Nkosi is trying to have sex with me. I quickly move up to the headboard trying to close my legs but pulls me down and stops kissing me.

Me:"Nkosi what are you doing? What are you trying to do?" He doesn't listen, instead he tries again to push his manhood hurting me and that when I realize that Nkosi is not himself. I move up and try to sit while removing me away from him. "Nkosi no! Stop! You're hurting me!" He breaths very heavily and pushes me down again. I look around his sideboard and I see a steel alarm. I quickly take it and hit Nkosi's head. He groans and quickly moves away. I quickly take my dress and run out. I think of going to the main

house but something stops me. I quickly run to the nearest door and lock it then leave the key inside. I move to the bed and that's when I realise that my womanhood hurts. I quickly touch it thinking that I'm bleeding but luckily, I'm not. It just hurts. I walk to the bathroom and get in the bathtub then open the taps. Warm water hit my skin and I feel myself getting warm. Just as the water is above my breasts, I quickly close the taps then sink in the bathtub. I don't even want to think about what Nkosi could have done to me. I don't even know how I got to push him off judging by the way I'm tired.

NKOSIYOMUZI

I sit on the bed with my hurting head. I touch my forehead and it's bleeding but not

heavily. I get up and walk to the bathroom and wash my face. I open the cabinet in the bathroom that has a first aid kit and take out a plaster then plaster my forehead. I take painkillers as my head hurts and drink them even though I didn't eat. I walk back to the bedroom and I quickly think of Thando. I wear my denim jeans and quickly run down the stairs. I find her things still in the sitting room so I figure out that she's in the main house. I run to the main house and march to the main door thinking that she's in the sitting room with my mother comforting her but I find no one else but Lolwethu. I march to the kitchen and I find my mother busy cooking.

Me: "Ma, did you see Thando?" She turns and looks at me.

Ma:"She went to your house." She replies with a smile.

Me:"When Ma?" She looks at me confused.

Ma:"When we got here. Where is she? Why are you asking? What happened?" She changes from asking confused to worried. I quickly walk to the sitting room.

Me:"Lolwethu, when did you last see Sis' Milisa?" She looks at me happily

Olo:"Baba!" She exclaims happily and jumps up and runs to me.

Me:"Lolwethu phendula!" She gets startled and stops running.

Olo:"Baba?"

Me:"I said where is Milisa Lolwethu?!"

Ma:"Don't shout at my child Nkosiyomuzi!

Don't!"

Me:"Awukahle nawe MA! Phendula wena!"

Olo:"Angazi baba." I quickly run back to my house and look for her in each and every room but I don't find her up until I try to open the one opposite my room. I find it locked. I quickly run down the stairs and go to the kitchen and take the smallest sharp knife and I run back to the room and push out the key and I walk to my bedroom and take another pair of key in my drawer and I unlock the room and I find her dress on top of the bed.

Me:"Thando!" I call out for her as I walk to the bathroom and I find her in the bathtub with her eyes closed. I quickly take her out from the almost cold water and walk to the

bedroom and put her ontop of the bed and that's when she gets startled and quickly wakes up. Her eyes land on me and she quickly moves up the bed grabbing the duvet to cover up herself. "Tha-"

Thando:"Please go out." She asks pleadingly with a low hoarse voice.

Me:"Thando please forgive me." I ask moving close to her.

Thando:"No. Stop there and go out." She says.

Me:"Thando could you please let me explain?"

Thando:"What is there to explain Nkosi?"

Me:"Baby I'm sorry. I, I'm sorry."

Thando:"Nkosi can you please leave?" I stand still and look at her. She sighs and covers

herself with the duvet and stand up.

Me:"Thando where are you going?" She just looks at me and walks away. I quickly walk to her and hold her waist.

Thando:"Nkosiyomuzi leave me alone."

Me:"Baby please. "

Thando:"What are you pleading for?"

Me:"Please forgive me Thando."

Thando:"For what?"

Me:"For what I did Thando. Please. "

Thando:"What did you do Nkosiyomuzi? "

Me:"Can you please stop using my full name?"

She just looks at me and pushes me away.

"Thando!" She walks to my room and I follow her. She walks to the bathroom and closes

the door. I sigh and sit on the bed waiting for her. After few minutes, she comes out wearing her dress with a duvet in her hands. She walks out to the other bedroom and fix the bed. When she's done she walks to the staircase and I follow her. She walks to the couches and takes out a white dress and she wears it. It covers her neck that has red marks and wears her sandals then walks to the main house with me following her like a lost puppy. "Thando, can we please talk? Thando I'm sorry." I'm not ready for a silence treatment, not after I've just made her my wife. I really can't. "Sthandwa sami ngiyakucela. Ngicela ukhulume nami.(My love please. Please talk to me.)" She opens the door and finds Lolwethu sitting on the couch sad.

Thando:"My daughter!" Lolwethu quickly looks up and beams with happiness when she sees Thando.

Olo:"Mami!" She runs to her and hugs the life out of my wife as she also did. "Where were you mami? uBaba came here angry looking for you?"

Thando:"I was lost around his house baby, I'm sorry okay?" She says sweetly smiling.

Olo:"I forgive you Mami. And also you baba."

"Dinner is ready people!" My mother says and we walk to the dining room finding my father sitting there.

We sit down and I tell Lolwethu to sit next to my father. Thando sits opposite me next to my mother and greets my father.

Baba:"Sawubona Makoti.(Greetings daughter in law.) How are you?" They exchange the pleasures and we all have a good chat. I didn't expect for this dinner to be jolly with laughter, especially with my father.

AFTER A WEEK.

Everything was going well, the Lobola negotiations went well even thou the Zulu's cost me an arm and a leg. Even the heart and lungs but I'm glad that in the end, Thando is traditionally my wife. Things between us are good. We're happy and we passed from what I almost did to her even thou she didn't say she forgives me but I'm glad that she's smiling and happy. I couldn't believe that she asked to sleep with Lolwethu in her room that day and said that she wanted to catch

up with Lolwethu and all. I was really hurt, I won't lie. Even my bed was huge and cold that night even thou it was hot that day. Thando and her parents fixed things and that's all I know. My wife and my mother and hers are planning our wedding. Our wedding will be on my birthday, the 25th of December. It's Thando who asked for our wedding to be on my birthday and to say that I'm happy would be an understatement. When I asked her why she wanted our wedding to be on my birthday she said that she wants to give me her virginity as my wedding and birthday gift and I couldn't be more happy. I'll have her all night, I'm telling you. I'll make love to her until she can't walk. "Baby, I've brought you lunch." I look up and I see her smiling at me, standing by the door wearing a very tight

short revealing black dress. In fact, I could see that she's wearing no undergarments under that dress as it's a net like dress but covering her front and back, but the sides of it. They're very revealing. I quickly stand up and walk to her pulling her in by her waist and closing the door of my office. The media now knows that Thando and I are a married couple, well an engaged but it doesn't matter. It was leaked and Thando was very angry, it was the first time seeing her angry since she's a very calm person but the day she found out, she gave me a cold shoulder blaming me for not protecting her from the media but in the end, she accepted it and moved on even though we're forever in the papers. I get it that I have never been seen with a woman public but now, they're making

things worse.

Me:"How can you wear something revealing like this Thando?" She giggles and kisses me then hugs me tightly and I swear, my manhood woke up the minute I felt her warm skin against mine.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

FOURTY FIVE ♥

NATASHA 🌸

Nkosi has been very aroused these past few

days.

When I asked him if he's sexually frustrated he said no he's not, I shouldn't be worried and what he almost did to me wasn't because he was aroused or something, it's just that he was upset and stressed and what he almost did to me is what he does in order to try to calm down. I was worried thou about that because what if he takes out his stress to me when we're married and all but he assured me that he'll try to make sure that it doesn't happen. I asked him to promise me but he said he can't as he can't always control his self as he's already used at doing that but I settled for his answer even thou I'm not really ready to deal with him if it comes to that stage. He told me that he was stressed by his father and when I asked him

that why didn't he tell me what he was stressed with he just said that he didn't want to worry and hurt me but he ended up telling that his father has a problem with my incapability of having a family with Nkosi. I ended up worrying and stressing about the negotiations as he was also one of the negotiators but Nkosi said I shouldn't worry, he has everything covered. I trusted him even thou I was worried, a bit worried thou.

Me: "It's very hot here outside Baby. I missed you." I say moving more close to his body and he also hugs me tightly with his bulge knocking in my stomach. I pull out of the hug and put the bags on his table.

Nkosi: "I missed you too. Let's move to this side." He takes the bags and we walk to the

side that has couches and a coffee table. I dish out his food and give it to him. "If you keep on giving me food like this Thando. I'll get fat I swear." I giggle and also dish up for my self.

Me:"Well I was instructed to give you food and be a good wife so I'm trying."

Nkosi:"And I'm glad that you're submissive and moved back to this side and staying under my roof." I smile and peck his lips.

Me:"I had to and I missed being in your arms. Sleeping in your comfortable chest and having your strong arms wrapped around my body shielding me." He smiles, more like blushing. He looks at my eyes deeply.

Nkosi:"Please, never hurt me Thando. I've fallen deep in your love. I would never

survive."

Me:"Why are you suddenly talking like this?"

Nkosi:"I've just realized that you're everything a man needs in his life. I know I'm not perfect and I'm far from being perfect but please,bear with me my love. Even if a perfect guy you've always wished for comes in the picture, please, always be with me.

Always chose me. I won't survive if you would chose another guy. I know I'm not what you always wished for but please, never cheat on me Thando. I know that you're not the type of person that would cheat or even the type that gets temped but please." He says holding my hand.

Me:"I don't know Nkosi but I would rather be with you than being with a perfect guy.

You're perfect the way you are to me, I love you the way you are. I don't care about another guy's perfection Nkosi. I only care about you and I'll always do." He kisses my hand and puts his plate on the table.

Nkosi: "Come here." I also put the plate down and sit on his lap. He hugs me tightly as his head is on my breasts and his arms wrapped around my back and waist. I decide to hug him tightly and he breaths heavily and shakes a little as I hug him. I brush his head and back. He breaths in deeply and exhales loudly. "I wish that I would never lose you, not by a mistake or any chance." He says emotionally.

Me: "I just wish that what always tries to break us apart stops now. I'm tired of always fighting for our love and crying."

Nkosi:"Please don't get tired my love. I know that I've never been married but I believe that, things will get worse now. Please try to be strong for us."

Me:"But I'm tired Nkosi. I'm emotionally drained. I just wish we could go where there will be the two of us so that nothing will ever bother us again." I reply emotionally.

Nkosi:"Thando please, don't get tired. Please don't give up on our love. "

Me:"I'm not. I'm just tired." Never in my life heard Nkosi this emotionally. It's always me that is emotionally. We keep quiet for few minutes and Nkosi removes his head and looks at me. "I love you dearly Thando. I swear, my life depends on you." I smile and kiss him. He kisses me slowly, gently and

passionately soft. I swear, he has never kissed me like this, we have never had a kiss like this. He hugs me very tightly pulling me very close to him, I can even feel his heartbeat, it's beating strong and hard, like it could stop at anytime. I hold the back of his back pulling him to me and he just kisses me deeply, I swear, my legs got paralysed. I wish I could cry judging by the way he kisses me. I can feel him taking my heart out filling it with his love, oh god, where was he? He slowly lays me down on the couch and I spread my legs making my dress move up to my waist. He lies on top of me ,I wrap my legs around his waist and my heart starts beating hard. There's no lust as we're kissing, it's just loves. I feel tears streaming down my cheeks and a lump on my throat. We

suddenly stop kissing each other, I really don't know what just happened to us. He pecks my lips and I open my eyes finding him looking at him. I remove my arms around his head and put them around his neck. He kisses my forehead and my eyes land on his cheeks, they're wet. I wipe his cheeks and he chuckles softly and smiles.

Me:"I feel a lump on my throat. "I say softly.

Nkosi:" You want to cry?" He asks softly smiling.

Me:" I don't know. I don't know how I feel, I don't know how to feel." I reply.

Nkosi:"I also feel the way you feel. My heart is beating so fast." I giggle softly and smile.

Me:"My heart is also beating hard. "

Nkosi: "I guess our hearts are beating for each other. I've never felt this way, even when I first fell in love, I didn't feel like this. My heart is ecstatic. Should I get you some water?"

Me: "But I wish we could stay like this forever. You can." He removes his arms around me and stands up. My eyes can't help but look at his groin area and to my surprised, he's not aroused. He walks away and I sit up and fix my dress.

Nkosi: "Here my love." I smile and drink the water.

Me: "Thank you." He puts the glass down and sits down. "I was thinking of us hosting an intimate party for us by inviting our friends. If you don't mind, we can also break the

news to them that we're married." Ever since that weekend when I went to sleep over at Nkosi's house, I didn't go back to my apartment. I've been staying with Nkosi and when he said that he's flying to Jo'burg, I said I'll come with him and I asked a transfer for me and Pearl, we will move to this side.

Nkosi:"I have no problem about it baby but not today. Maybe on the weekend as my friends catch a break during the weekend. "

Me:"Well same applies to mine."

Nkosi:"Can we go back home now?"

Me:Ha! Nkosi, you're still working. "

Nkosi:"But I want to be with you baby."

Me:"We've been together for a week mos

baby. "

Nkosi:"A week is a short period my love. I just can't wait for us to go to the honeymoon, it will be a month." I look at him in awe.

Me"A month Nkosi!? Now you're really exaggerating. "

Nkosi:"No I'm not because I'll have you for the whole month. "He says with a naughty expression while smirking.

Me:" LATHELETHU!" I exclaim slapping his thigh but guess what he does. He takes my hand and puts it on his manhood and it's moving. I quickly take off my hand and he laughs at me. "You know you're so naughty! I've never imagined you as a naughty guy!"

Nkosi:"I'm not naughty baby. I'm loving. " he says smirking packs the plates then puts

them on the bag. "Let me go and sort out my table so that we can go. Don't you want to go out for shopping?"

Me:" We can, just to pass the time."

Nkosi:"And maybe go out and watch movies."

Me:"I don't know about movies, they sort of bore me. "

Nkosi:"But baby you love movies. "

Me:"No, we would rather play a game. Something fun to do. "

Nkosi:"Alright then baby, give me the heavy bag." I give it to him and take my handbag and his laptop bag then go out. "But I didn't say come with my bag, give it to me ."

Me:"It's not heavy, just lock your office." I walk to the elevator.

"Mrs Mkhize!" a female voice shouts. Is there a Mrs Mkhize here? I turn around and I see a lady running towards me. " Sorry, I'm Busi. I just wanted to tell you that you're beautiful and I love you. " she's so loud.

"Don't you have something to do than running after my wife Busisiwe?" My husband's powerful intimidating voice echoes. I turn and look at him.

Me: "Just let her be Nkosi. Thanks Busi." I pull Nkosi's hand and we walk to the elevator.

Nkosi: "I don't want people hovering you Thando." He opens the elevator and we step in.

Me: "She's wasn't baby. She was just complimenting me."

Nkosi: "Still." We walk to our cars. "We're

taking my car." He says dismissively.

Me:"I LOVE NKOSIYOMUZI MKHIZE!"I shout as we're in the parking lot and he looks at me and smile.

Nkosi:"I love you too." He puts the bags in the booth and he open the door for me. "A kiss first." He says pouting his thick dark lips. I giggle and peck them. "But that's not a kiss." I laugh and get inside the car.

Me:"Your colleagues would laugh at you if they would see you sulking." I say as he stepped on the car. We drive out to the mall.

Nkosi:"Well I don't care but I still want my kiss, whether you want or not."

Me:"You'll get it on your wedding day."I joke.

Nkosi:"You can't be serious! That's a 2

months away!"

Me:"Then you'll wait for 2 months. "

Nkosi:"You can't deprive me everything Thando." He says sulking.

Me:"What's wrong with you today?" I ask after laughing at him.

Nkosi:"I have fallen deep in your love ,that's what happened. "

Me:"Oho, well don't because I won't catch you, I'm very clumsy." We share a laugh and we find a parking spot.

Nkosi:"Well you already did baby."

Me:"As far as I know, it's Olo whose your baby so I guess she did."

Nkosi:"Buzz off." He says in a sassy voice. I just can't help but laugh out loud.

Me:"Nkosiyomuzi! "He laughs with me and we get out and then lock the car. He walks to me and holds my waist while I hold his. " I have never knew that you're this funny."

Nkosi:"Well I couldn't show it to you at first as you were going to be disappointed at finding a guy with a straight face yet he is a clown." We laugh together again.

Me:"Well I'm disappointed. I'm really disappointed."

Nkosi:"Oho, don't get used to it. It's the first and last time you see this side of me."

Me:"Well I'm glad I saw it before we got married because this, will be on my vows."

Nkosi: "I'll ask the priest to say the vows for us baby, the bible vows." We walk to a boutique and the first thing my eyes land on

is a gold sparkling silky short backless dress. I quickly pull Nkosi towards it and I remove my arms around his waist and take the dress.

Me: "I love this dress! I'm definitely taking it with me. "

Nkosi: "But baby it's short and revealing."

Me: "And baby I will have to go and take this weave off."

Nkosi: "But baby you had this weave last week."

Me: "Well, I want a long and body curl weave."

Nkosi: "So after this we're going to the salon."

Me: "Definitely." I take many lingeries as I can and clothes that are a net but private parts covered. Nkosi is forever complaining

with every revealing clothe I take. "Let's go and pay."

Nkosi:"But baby, these revealing clothes and shorts, you'll wear them at home when we're alone I'm telling you." I laugh at him and he pays for every cloth I took. When I look at the balance slip, I spent R48 236,78. I swear I froze. "Don't worry about the balance baby, I'm just glad that you finally spent my money."

Me:"I'll pay for the hairstyle. Let's go. "He takes the bags and we leave.

Nkosi:" You better go to the salon that will make you beautiful. "

Me:"Ha! That salon is very expensive! You know a 30' weave is R4,800 . Just think how much of will cost if I ask for a Brazilian body

curl. Probably R6 000."

Nkosi:"I'll be the one paying my love. Stop worrying about it. Don't you want to be beautiful? For you and you handsome husband?"
"I laugh and walk to the salon.

Me:" You're not handsome Mr."

Nkosi:"I know, I'm a sexy snack." I just burst out loud, what does he know about snacks?

Me:"What do you know about snacks Nkosi?"

Nkosi:"Oh well, Ayabonga told me about snacks."

Me:"Speaking about snacks, can we pass by Woolworths food, I'm craving for their chocolate cake filtered with strawberries. "

Nkosi:"Everything is fine by me baby." We

step inside the salon and a gay guy quickly comes to us.

"Oh well my favorite couple! I'm Sammy, and I'll be your assistant for today. Come in, have a sit and we'll take care of you." Nkosi and I look at each other. "Come this side hulk, we'll trim your hair neatly and Mrs, come this side. You'll tell me what you want and I'll make you a doll." Nkosi sits down on his chair and faces the mirror and I also decide to sit next to his chair.

Me:"I want a 30' body curl weave. Black." I tell her and look at Nkosi. He sticks out his hand and I take it and he kisses it.

Nkosi:"You better look beautiful." I blush and look down.

Sammy:"Oh don't worry Hulk. She'll look

gorgeously fabulous. Get cracking Timmy!" He covers me with the salon label cover and starts working on my hair. "Babes! Come here! Fix Mrs nails, they look horrible!" I look at my nails and laugh as they're worn out. A girl comes to me and fixes my nails.

Babes:"What type do you want?"

Me:"Coffin nail. Matte red." After a hour or so I'm done. I stand up and turn to Nkosi, he's so gorgeously handsome! I just grin and guess what he does. He pulls me to him and kisses me with his hands crawling to my butt and he squeezes it. I quickly pull out and hide my face on his chest as I'm suddenly shy with all this noise around the salon and camera flashes. I look up to Nkosi and he's smiling at me so beautifully.

Nkosi:"They deserve a fat tip for making you so beautifully." He takes out his card and gives to Sammy. "Take R20 000 you deserve it." Sammy screams and claps his hands, he's so gay. He gives Nkosi his card and we leave the salon with Nkosi looking at me. "I'll look at you for the whole day and night."

Me:"I don't think I can make it to the game. I'm tired and my feeth are hurting. "

Nkosi:"It's fine baby. Let's just go and get you a cake."

Me:"And a chocolate ice cream baby." He looks at me and chuckles.

Nkosi:"Whatever you want my love. "

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

FOURTY SIX ❤️

NATASHA 🌸

Me: "Let me first take off these shoes. "

Nkosi looks at me and I hold his hand.

Nkosi: "Why do you want to take them off? "

Me: "My feet are hurting and these heels are too tight. "

Nkosi: "Okay, hold these and I will take them off. " I take the bags and he crouches down and takes them off. "Maybe I should take you to the car, your feet are swollen and I

will buy the food. " He gives me the heels and I give him the bag.

Me:"No there's no need. We're almost there.

" He nods and takes my hand. We get to Woolworth's and he says I should sit on the chairs that are by the shoe section and I do and wait for him. My feet are hurting right now. I can't even say I shopped too much because I have been into two stores. Nkosi comes back and make me wear the comfortable morning shoes and holds my hand helping me to stand up. "I'm so lazy to cook." I say and lay my head on his arm as we walk out.

Nkosi:"There's no need for cooking my love. I can repeat the lunch and besides, I didn't eat it too much . Aren't you hungry? "

Me:"No, not yet. The cake is fine. Did you buy the ultramel? "

Nkosi:"I did even thou you didn't say I should. I figured out that I shouldvyy it for you since you love eating cake with it. "

Me:"You're the best husband a woman could ask for. Thank you my love." We walk until we reach our car and I open the backdoor of the car and get in .

Nkosi:"Why do you get in the backseat? "

Me:"I want to lye down. Please."

Nkosi:"Okay." He closes the door and I lye down and close my eyes.

I wake up in Nkosi's arms. I open my eyes and look around,we're walking to our bedroom. "Sorry to wake you up baby." I nod and rub

my eyes. He opens the door and walks to the bed and lays me down. "Should I get you something?"

Me:"The cake, a quarter of it with an ultramel."

Nkosi:"Mango juice or Apple juice?"

Me:"Apple. It's been long since I had it. I was just fascinated by your mango juice because I love mango."

Nkosi:"Then you should have said I should buy it for you because we don't have it. In fact there's shortage of grocery we have to do shopping tomorrow. "

Me:"The cake please. "My stomach rumbles and I touch it. I must be really hungry now. Nkosi walks out and I look around the room trying to locate my bag but I don't see it. He

comes in after few minutes with a tray of cake and a homemade fruit salad. I love it when it's made by him even the smoothies, he makes the best. He puts the tray on top of my thighs and in no time, I'm already eating the cake. Before I know it, I finished and I eat the fruit salad. It's mouthwatering.

Nkosi:" But baby the salad is mine." I look up to Nkosi and he is looking at me like I have two heads.

Me:"I'm sorry baby, you know you make the best fruit salads. Let's share it."

Nkosi:"Will you be full thou because you look like someone who's still not full?"

Me:"Mhh, I don't know but I don't feel full, maybe after the juice I'll be full." He nods and walks away. I finish the salad and drink

the juice. I burp out loudly and Nkosi looks at me and chuckles. He's standing by the doorframe with a plate of sandwich.

Nkosi:"I guess my job here is done. Should I work a little or we will watch a movie?"

Me:"I think we will work and you will teach me one or two things about business. "

Nkosi:"Really Baby?" He says shocked and happy. I smile and nod. He comes in like a retard. He sits next to me and kisses me.

"You don't know how much I've always wanted to hear you asking about my work. You know what, I have a better deal. I will first tell you of how I started my business until now then I will tell you about my work and majorities." It will be second time hearing him telling me about it. The first

time I listened to him was when I had my accident.

Me:"Finish eating then. Where is my bag? I want my phone."

Nkosi:"Here, Sibu called." He says taking out my phone giving it to me. He sounds a little bit jealous yet emotionless. I take the phone and Sibusiso called 3times. I unlock my phone. "Who is Sibu Milisuthando?" Oh, we're on the full name basis now. I know exactly that he's angry.

Me:"It's my friend." He puts the plate on the sideboard and look at me.

Nkosi:"A female friend or male friend?" I wish u could sat a female friend because if I say male, I sense that we'll have an argument. But ,I'm bad at lying and he can tell if I am.

Me: "A male friend." I reply looking down before I look up at him. He chuckles deeply and crosses his arms to his chest. I'm in trouble right now.

Nkosi: "Do I know him? Why are you even friends with a guy Milisuthando? You have many friends for all I know. You even have me. You even have a brother who's your best friend. Why a male friend?" I don't even know which question to answer right now. "Milisuthando I asked you questions. I'm expecting answers. You're not mute."

Me: "I don't know which question to answer Lathi." I say Lathi because I'm trying to soften him up a bit.

Nkosi: "I asked you questions Milisuthando. Now I'm expecting you to answer all of

them." Ibsigh and put the phone down and remove his arms from his chest and hold his hands. Luckily he didn't cross his arms strongly.

Me:"Yes,you know him baby. He's that guy we met at Rocco Mamas the other day." He chuckles deeply.

Nkosi:"Thando didn't I say you shouldnt- " He keep quiet and sighs heavily. "You know what, I said I will stop controlling you or whatever you said I do to you. Be friends with whoever you want to be friends with but the way you'll do things is the way I'll also determine how much you respect this relationship." He removes his hands on mine and takes the sandwich and walks out. Nkosi! He's such a stubborn man, a man with a hard

hot heated head. I take the tray and go downstairs and walk to the kitchen. I find Nkosi staring at his sandwich, I put the tray on the counter and walk to him.

Me:"Don't you like the sandwich? I can do something else for you." He takes the sandwich and eat,after he's done, he downs it with the juice and walks out. I sigh and decide to dish the food I cooked earlier on and put it in the microwave. I wash the dishes and clean around the kitchen. After I'm done, I walk to my room and take a hot bath then drain the water and clean the bathtub. I walk back to the room and lotion the wear my cotton panty with a silky night dress.I take a foot rub from the medicine cabinet and sit on the bed. I take a pillow and put it below my feet then apply the rub.

Nkosi comes in just as I'm about to rub my feet. He look at my feet and his eyes soften. He puts his phone on his sideboard then walks to my side. He removes the pillow and sits on the bed then puts my feet on top of his lap then takes the rub and rubs my feet. We stay in silence until I decide to speak. "Nkosi are we still good?"

Nkosi:"Yes. We are. "

Me:"Then why are you ignoring my presence?
"

Nkosi:"Thando, you can't expect me to be okay when you are friends with guys. You can't."

Me:"Why? I don't understand. Please make me understand. "

Nkosi : "Thando, I told you my fear. I told you

hours ago about my greatest fear and you know it. I told you that I'm scared of losing you. I told you that I'm scared that you will find someone you've always wished for in life. I told you that I'm scared. Now you're befriending a guy Milisuthando. Making me face my fear after I clearly told you what I'm scared of so you can't expect me to be okay."

Me:"But Nkosi I told you that I'll not chose anyone except for you. I won't be with anyone except for you."

Nkosi:"Thando I-. You know what, just do what you wish for Milisuthando." He stops rubbing my feet, he stands up and walks to the bathroom. After few seconds, I hear running water so I guess he's taking a shower.

I remove the pillow and get under the covers then close my eyes. Just as I'm about to sleep, Nkosi's phone rings and I answer it.

"Hey Master. Your naughty maid is in the heart of Jo'burg. Meet me at our hotel in a hour, I have a surprise for you . Kisses." A small female

naughty seductive voice says, I might say.

Nkosi comes in wearing his brief.

Nkosi:"I heard my phone ringing. Who was it?"

"

Me : "It was your naughty maid. She said she is in the heart of Jo'burg and you should meet her at your hotel in a hour, she has a surprise for you ." I say normal. He looks at me shocked and with surprise. He clears his throat and gets in the covers. "Shouldn't you

be getting ready to meet your maid?"

Nkosi:"I'm." He clears his throat and scratches the back of his head. "I'll meet her another time." I nod and turn my back on him then sleep. "Baby can you please look at me. "

Me:"I'm sorry I can't. I'm comfortable in this position."

Nkosi:"Thando can you please sit up so that we can talk?"

Me:"I can't, we'll talk tomorrow." He sighs and slips in bed then holds my waist from the back and I quickly remove his arms and get off the bed.

Nkosi:"Baby where are you going?' I look at him and he's sitting on his butt with his back on the headboard.

Me:"To the bathroom." I walk to it and pee then wash my hands and go back to the bedroom. I get inside the blankets and he holds my shoulder from the back.

Nkosi:"Baby you're awake now,can we please talk?"

Me:"I said we will talk tomorrow." Again, he gets in bed and pulls me to him and wrap his arms around my waist to my stomach.

Nkosi:"Baby, I didn't cheat on you. I'm not cheating."

Me:"I didn't say you're cheating Nkosi." He sighs,more like frustrated because he sighsalot when he is.

Nkosi:"Baby what should I do then? Why should I say?" Its funny how he's asking all these questions.

Me:"Sleep."

Nkosi:"How? How will I sleep when we're like this Thando?"

Me:"I don't know then because I'm not really up for arguing with you. I know you want to put this past us tonight so that we can move on from it but I can't. I want to sleep. I'm not feeling my self okay."

Nkosi:"Baby she was an ex- no strings attached. "

Me:"Okay."

Nkosi: "Thando why are so calm then?!" He asks slightly loud. Frustrated more than anything. "Please say something Thando."

Me:"Let's just sleep , I'm tired." He mumbles something inaudible.

Nkosi:"Can you please sleep of me then?"

Me:"Ha.a. I can't, I'm very comfortable in this position. "

Nkosi:"But you never said no Thando." I don't really understand Nkosi's behavior today. He kisses my neck and tries to turn me around.

Me:"Nkosi,ha.a I'm not in the mood."

Nkosi:"But baby it's been a month." I don't know why he's complaining because it's not like servicing him.

Me:"Nkosi I'm tired."

Nkosi:"Are you mad at me Thando?" He says brushing the hand that has the ring under the covers.

Me:"No I'm not because I don't have a reason to."

Nkosi:"Okay, my goodnight kiss then."

Me:"Come forward and take it." He just gets on top of me and kisses the night out of me. I eventually pull out as I realize that he's not into pulling out. "Goodnight." He pecks my lips and moves back to his side. I close my eyes and drift to sleep.

I'm woken up by a sudden discomfort. I turn around and I feel my panty cold and heavy. I sit up and I see my nightdress with blood stains. I guess they decided to come after being late. I sigh and get off the bed.

Nkosi:"Baby where are you going?" I turn around and look at him. He has his hands under his head and he doesn't look like someone who had a sleep.

Me:"I'm going to the toilet. I'm on my

periods." I take a step forward and slight pain in my lower abdomen, supposed to be the period pains. I take another step and it suddenly hurts more. I stand up straight and look over the bed, Nkosi is removing the covers. "Baby what time is it?" I sigh deeply and swallow hard as I feel the pain getting worse. I look down at my legs and blood is streaming down.

Nkosi: "It's almost 20'clock." It's still at night! I'm not ready to nurse these pains at night. They get very worse if I skipped a month. I nod and walk very slowly to the bathroom as every step I take the pain keeps getting worse. I strip naked and slowly get in the shower and take a long shower since the blood is still flowing. I decide to walk out and when I do, I realize that my clothes are no

longer on the floor. Nkosi comes in with fresh pyjamas. He gives me a towel and I wipe my body. He gives me a panty with a plastered pad pad and I wear it then wear the pyjamas.

Me:"Where are the clothes that I left here?"

Nkosi:"In the laundry room." I don't really like what Nkosi is doing,I don't like it when he touches the things that have my menstrual blood but he doesn't listen. I just nod and try to walk but I feel a sharp pain on my womb and back and I quickly touch the one on my waist. I moan painfully and try to blink away the tears that are forming, they might freak Nkosi. "Baby,what's wrong?" I breath in and he quickly comes to me. "Baby

tell me what's wrong?"

Me:"It's just the pains."

Nkosi:"Where does it hurt? Are they normal?"

Me:"They're on my womb and back. My womb is burning, I feel like taking it out and my back." I just shake my head and he scoops me up and lays down on the bed and covers me with a throw.

Nkosi:"Um, I'll be back okay?"

Me:"Where are you going Nkosi? You can't possibly think that the chemists are open right now." I aks rocking my self and squeezing my stomach.

Nkosi:"I'll come back, I'm going to make you something to eat." He quickly walks out and

I'm left with the pain. I hate missing my periods, I really hate it when I do because when I skip a month and still come late in the next month, the pains get very painful. Nkosi comes back with the food that I cooked and gives it to me. I don't even eat it, it seems like it will add to the pain I'm feeling. Nkosi gets busy with his phone. "Uhm baby, they say here that virginal steaming reduces period pains. We should try it." He stands up and quickly sits down. "No, it might be harmful to your womb. Baby, are the pains you usually get are like this?"

Me: "Yes but these are bit worse. I feel like removing my womb. It's burning." I reply teary and moan painfully as the pain ticks again as if it wants me to keep quiet. Tears fall and I suddenly feel an excruciating pain.

"Ahh!" I scream painfully and tears stream down as I start crying.

Nkosi:"Thando you're scaring me. Don't cry please, I'll give you a back rub. Turn around."

I turn around and he rubs me. "Baby you should change the pad, there's blood in your pyjama." He rubs me gently yet strong.

"Baby, don't you think that maybe your womb is getting worse? You know what, let me keep quiet, I might stress you." He speaks very fast and panicking. "Baby did you buy the neurofen period pain tablets?"

Me:"Nkosi! I'm dying now, I can't deal with these right night." I say as I start cracking.

Daily new African novels download here

www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

FOURTY SEVEN ♥

NKOSIYOMUZI ❁

Me: "Thando I'm calling my mother right now. I don't know what to do and you make me panic." She sniffs and moans painfully while rolling herself into a ball. I dial my mother and she answers the call after few seconds.

Dear: "Hello Dear." She greets in a sleepy voice while yawning.

Me: "Ma please help me, I don't know what to do. Thando is sick, she's experiencing period pains but she's bleeding way too much and and Ma I don't know what to do, she's crying

painfully Ma I don't know what to do. Tell me what to do Ma I -" she quickly cuts me off and that's when I realize that I was rumbling and speaking fast.

Dear:"Listen, calm down, don't panic okay? Just calm down. In the meantime, boil some water for her and give it to her so that she drinks it meanwhile you boil another water and pour it in a bottle then put it on her abdomen. Make sure that you don't burn her, cover her tummy with something. I'm coming."

Me:"But Ma you'll take a long time to come here and-" she cuts me off again and she sighs while I hear some shuffling in the background.

Dear:"You called me because you knew that I

can help you right? I'm coming with a jet. I might be there by 6 o'clock or 6:30. Just try to not panic and make sure that you bath her or ask her to take a shower okay? With warm water, not too hot but the nice hot, it will calm her muscles. Bye." She hangs up and I walk to the kitchen to boil water and I do then walk back to our bedroom and scoop her up and walk to the bathroom. I strip her naked, cover her head with a shower cap and also get naked then we get in the shower. The water immediately hits our body and I pull her close to my body. The water becomes more warmer and I brush her back while she's holding my waist tightly.

Me: "You'll be fine okay? " She nods and we stay for a while until she says she's a little bit better and we walk out and the shower

stops running. I wear a gown without drying my body and wear the sleepers. I scoop her up and walk to the bedroom, I lotion her body and clothe her with warm pyjamas and a gown then lay her down on the bed and cover her with the blanket. I walk downstairs and pour the boiled water in a cup and another in a bottle then walk to our bedroom. I find her staring the door and I close it then walk to her, giving her the cup while I remove the blanket a little and put the bottle on her abdomen. She drinks the water and I turn on the heater to make her warm even thou the temperatures are high outside. She puts the cut on the sideboard gets in the covers with the bottle and covers her body. "Why are you burying your self in the covers?" She looks at me tiredly and smiles faintly.

Thando:"I'm tired and I want to sleep."

Me : "You can't sleep, what if you die sleeping and are you feeling any better?" She nods and covers her body again. I sigh and take the cup to the kitchen and clean around bathroom and put her bloody clothes in the laundry room. I find her snoring softly when I head to our bedroom. I remove my gown and lotion my body then wear an underwear pant. I get into the covers and remove the bottle, the water is lukewarm now and I pull her close to me. She snuggles close to me and puts her left leg on top of mine, I guess she's comfortable. I wrap my hands around her waist, I would have wrapped them around her butt because it's one of my favorite features in her body but I don't want to make her feel uncomfortable. "Sleep tight." I

peck her forehead and lips then close my eyes.

I'm woken up by my ringing phone and take it on the sideboard and answer it without checking the ID caller.

Dear:"I have arrived, how is she? " I open my eyes and look at Thando who's sleeping peacefully then peck her lips and shake her a little. She moans softly in reply then snuggles close to me. I'm glad she's still alive.

Me : "She's sleeping, where are you? "I ask moving slowly away from Thando until I get up from the bed and walk to the closer and wear my sweatpants.

Dear:"At the gate, well I'm entering your house now. I'll be at the door in a minute."
She hangs up and I walk downstairs and I

find her opening the door. "Oh, hello my love. How are you Dear?" I smile and walk to her and hug her tightly while taking the breakaway bag. "You'll be fine, she'll be fine." I pull out of the hug.

Me:"I'm fine, let's go to your bedroom."
She smiles shaking her head.

Dear:"I know my way around this house Dear. Where is Thando?" I think this is the third time she's asking about her.

Me:"In our bedroom. Why did you leave my daughter? "

Dear ::"Well she was sleeping and she'a attending school."

Me:"Alright then." We walk to her bedroom and I put her bag in the closet and walked back to her.

Dear : "So what happened to Milisa?"

Me : "She woke up around 2 saying that she's experiencing her periods so I woke up and helped her. That's when she started getting the pains. "

Dear : "Alright then, let's go to the kitchen. I'll make breakfast." We walk to the kitchen and she cooks maize porridge.

Me : "Why are you cooking soft porridge for her? Will she eat it? "

Dear: "She will love it and she must eat something soft for her tummy. " I sit on the kitchen counter chairs while I watch her boiling water for the porridge and mixing lukewarm water with maize meal. "How are things between the two of you? " I look at her and smile.

Me:"They are good. There's nothing I'm complaining about."

Dear:"I'm glad. Any fights yet? "

Me:"None. We have never encountered them, just arguments here and there but we never sleep mad at each other. "

Dear:"I'm glad you fix matters early. Have the two of you discussed about the baby? As you'll be married? Well you are."

Me:"Ayi Ma. Angithandi ukhuluma ngoludabi.(No Ma. I don't like talking about this matter.)" I complain.

Dear:"But you to Dear. You're married now and in a matter of time one of the two of you will bring this up." I know tat she's right but I don't feel like talking about this.

Me:"I just don't know what to do about this
Ma. I don't."

Dear:"There are many ways Dear. You can
get a surrogate and-" I quickly cut her off. I
don't want to hear about it and she stirs the
porridge. "

Me : "Ma ngiyazi ngalokho kodwa cha. Angekhe
ngenze lokho, angekhe nje ngize
ngihlukumeze uThando ngaleyo indlela. (Ma, I
know about that but no. I'd never do that,
I'd never hurt Thando in that manner.)"

Dear:"How? "She asks confused.

Me : "Ma Thando is very insecure and I just
can't. I won't have my first born, my first
son with a stranger and imagine how Thando
would feel of I get cozy with another woman,
busy touching her stomach and nursing her

feelings, hawu cha. Angekhe ngikwazi.
Ngumthwalo nje onzima lowo
phezukwamahlombe ami and Thando and I
would fight everyday. I just can't and
besides that I wouldn't feel okay about
touching another woman inappropriately and
paying attention to her while I'm with
Thando. It's not okay nje."

Dear:"It's good hearing that you put your
needs aside for Milisa but what are you going
to do? "

Me:"Enjoy our time as newly weds."

Dear : "After that? Get me milk and Rama." I
sight and get up then take them and put
them on the counter. "I forgot sugar and
salt." I get them and put them on the
counter.

Me:"I don't Ma. We'll see by then, for now, we'll go with the flow."

Dear : "Alright then if you say so. Get the bowls." I get the bowls and she dishes up. I take Thando's breakfast and put it in a tray then walk to our bedroom with my mother following me. She opens the door and I get in then close the door. "oh wow, it's so warm in here but a bit too warm for the hot temperatures outside." I walk towards the bed and put the breakfast on the sideboard and sit on the bed while Ma opens the curtains and windows and a fresh breeze showers the room and I see the sun up in the sky. I remove the blanket from Thando and I find her sleeping peacefully, she enjoys and loves sleeping. I look at Ma and she smiles shaking her head and walks to the bathroom.

I look at the time and it's 7:56. I decide to wake her up even though you hate. I believe she's still tired and has to get more and enough sleep as she can.

Me: "Baby wake up." I say shaking her shoulder and her eyes stir up before her eyelashes flutter and she opens her eyes a little and pulls the blanket to her head. "Thando."

Thando: "Mmmmm?" I look at my mother who's staring at us standing by the bathroom door. I honestly don't want Thando to wake up.

Me: "Baby my mother made breakfast for you, it will get cold." She removes the cover and she opens her eyes before rubbing off sleep from her eyes. "Good morning baby." I greet and peck her lips. She smiles faintly before

trying to move up the headboard but moans softly. I quickly stand up and scoop her up and put her in a comfortable position. "How are you feeling?" I ask putting the tray on top of her thighs.

Thando:"Tired. That's all. Thank you for the breakfast."

Me:"You should thank my mother. You'll be fine okay? "

Thando:"Okay. Where is she?" She asks and starts eating the porridge.

Me:"She's by the bathroom door." She nods and continues eating until she's done.

Thando:"This is nice. Very nice, I could eat it the whole day." She says smiling.

Dear:"I'm glad you do, I told Nkosi that

you'll like this porridge." Thando looks at my mother in shock.

Thando:"I'm sorry Ma. I didn't know that you're here. Thank you for the porridge and good morning. "

Dear:"Good morning sweetheart. Elethu, get up and go and bath her. I've already prepared a hot bath for her. "

Thando:"Thank you Ma." I stand up and put the tray on the sideboard then scoop her up and walk to the bathroom and strip her naked then dip her in the bathtub. I wash her and when I'm done, I remove her and dry her body.

Me:"Have you stopped bleeding? "

Thando:"Yes, I stopped last night, well this morning after your treatment. "

Me:"I'm glad, I was starting to worry. "

Thando:"Then why didn't you take me to the hospital? "

Me:"Well my mother used to treat my sisters periods hence why I called her. Lift up your leg." I say as I lotion her body and she does. When I'm done, I clothe her with her sweatpants. "Will you walk on your own? "

Thando:"Yes, I think I will." I hold her waist and we walk into the bedroom finding the room clean. Ma gets in with a cup and Thando sits on the bed. Ma gives her the cup and Thando drinks it.

Dear:"How are you feeling? Is there any place you, you know? "

Thando:"Besides feeling tired, I'm better and I feel no pains except for the heavy

feeling on my abdomen." She replies touching her womb and for a minute I get worried. I kneel down to her and touch her hand.

Me:"Where? Does it hurts? Should I get you to the hospital maybe? "

Thando:"No, it doesn't hurts. It's just a heavy feeling."

Me:"Ma should I get worried? "

Dear : "No you shouldn't. Please give us some privacy."

Me:"Ma? W-"

Dear : "Elethu."

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter😊

FIFTY SEVEN♥

CONTINUATION🌍

NATASHA🌸

Me:"Well ,its not flat like before and I don't blame it, it must be the weight gain Nkosi has been talking about."

Ma:"What does he say?"

Me:"That I have gained weight and I have huge bums,hips and bit more legs."

Ma:"Any comment about your breast?" I look at them in the mirror.

Me:"No, he always notices my hips."

Ma:"Okay. Have the two of you been intimate before?" I suddenly think of what happened in her house.

Me:"No, I'm still a virgin. Except,well , I don't know if we were intimate or not but sometimes, Ma, I don't feel comfortable about this subject." She laughs softly.

Ma:"You once tried to be intimate?"

Me:"Well when we're both aroused sometimes he rubs off his thi- MA! I can't talk about things like this to you, you're my elder." She laughs and pats some space near her and I walk to her and sit down then pull down the vest.

Ma:"I know about these things and take it as if you're talking to one of your friends. Try to be comfortable. "

Me:"Well he rubs his thing on me and he did the same thing the night hr introduced me to you. Well that night he inserted it below my womanhood since I have some space there and his semen were all over my thighs and he didn't even wipe it off, he just lay there and-" I release a sigh feeling embarrassed. She takes her hand in mine and I look at her. She's smiling like she's proud of something.

Ma:"Don't even bother to feel embarrassed, let me share some of my teen days. The day Elethu was conceived. It was his father's birthday, he studied agricultural management in Free State University while I was in matrix. I came from an unfortunate family while he was from a fortunate family. I didn't even understand why he did agriculture but he said that ,he wanted to be

like his father and look after his father's livestock. He is the third born, followed by his sisters and some brothers. His mother told me that when she got pregnant, her baby was a boy and that all the Mkhize wives had sons as the first horns, even the second and third to some but to me, I have two sons who are the first and second born while she had three sons that were her first. A woman with a girl was considered to not have bore the child of the Mkhize and it was true.

Their history states that a Mkhize's child should be a son as the firstborn followed by another son. So, on Kumkani's birthday, I didn't have a preset and I told myself that I will give him my womanhood- ubuntombi bami as a surprise. Nkosi's father was just like Lungelo, a skirt chaser with his handsome

looks. On his birthday, he came back home to see me and we went to his home. We stayed there until I told him that I don't have a present for him since I didn't have money and he understood and said that my presence is his present. I then told him that I will give him my valuable treasure and he said that he's grateful. When I told him that it's my virginity, he hesitated. To cut the story short, he took my virginity and after two months, I experienced changes in my body and mood then I told my friend and she suggested that we visit a doctor and we did. That's when I found out that I was pregnant with Nkosi and I was scared to tell Kumkani but when he reached to me using his phone and in on the other side using his brother's cellphone. He first told me about a dream his

father had when he pregnated his mother which was dreaming about a beautiful green garden with lots of fruits and livestock. The Mkhize men have this dream when they made someone pregnant and that's when I told him I'm pregnant. After a week and a few days, his family sent a letter at home to ask for my hand in marriage and I agreed because he said that he doest want his son to be born out of wedlock and so did I. We got married." By the time she finishes, I'm left in awe, so if I have a daughter with Nkosi as a first born, they'll not consider her as Nkosi's child since all the Mkhize men had sons as their firstborn.

Me:"Well, that won't happen to me because I can't conceive and I'm still a virgin even thou we spend a night in your household so

basically, I'm not a MKHIZE WIFE." I chuckle as it hurts when I say this. "I'll be the first Mkhize wife that will be s barren and" ma cuts me off, I look at her and she wipes my tears. I didn't realise that I had tears.

Ma: "Didn't your family healer say something about your womb healing and recovering?"

Me: "Nope, because-" I shrug my shoulders and stand up. "I should go and make something to eat for Nkosi because I know that he isn't full if he had a porridge for breakfast. I usually make English breakfast with lots and lots of protein for him." She smiles.

Ma: "One day, cook a mutton tripe for him with steamed bread or soft samp with a full

chicken-cornish, its his favourite. He loves Zulu dishes."

Me:"What about his father because you cook English food when I visit." We share a laugh.

Ma:"Well his father loves exploring dishes so there's no complaints from him especially whrjbik the one who cooks."

Me:"You're a housewife? "

Ma:"No, I'm not although I was thinking of retiring even thou I'll get bored at home." I nod and we walk to the kitchen. "I'll help you cook." We find Nkosi busy with his laptop. He quickly looks at me and gets off his chair then walks towards me. I feel like he'll shout at me for something so I look at Ma and she smiles.

Nkosi:"Why are you not in bed Milisuthando?"

Aren't you sick? You can't walk around this house especially on these stairs with your pains. Kanti wena Ma, kungani uyekela uThando ahambe embhedeni?(And you Mother, why did you let Thando walk out in bed?) Asambe wena. (Let's go.)" He sags trying to walk with me but I quickly hide behind Ma and she laughs. This woman is amused by her sons actions.

Ma:"There's nothing wrong with her Elethu, let her stay here and she said she's here to make something for you to eat since she thinks that you're not full with the porridge." He looks at us and says fine, he'll be in his office. His mother laughs and we move to the counter while I take out the ingredients for lunch. "You know when he called me and said, ' Ma, I have found my life

partner.' I was happy. I said, 'It time. How is she?' He said, 'Ma, she's not my type, she's huge Ma and she's soft, huge and innocent.' And I laughed at how he described his woman. He told me that, no he declared his undying love for you and how he will make you his."

Me:"Well Nkosi is not a guy I imagined that I'd fall in love with, he's what I wished for but not entirely. Uhm Ma, I've been meaning to ask this. Who does Nkosi takes after? I mean you, your husband and children are light in complexion except for him and Luyanda."

Ma:"Well Nkosi takes after his grandfather with everything, his stubbornness, personality and Luyanda only takes after the complexion."

Me:"Oh, I see. Uhm Ma, how was it like when

you-" She looks at she as if she doesn't follow. "When you-" I repeat again tilting my head aside.

Ma:"When I broke my virginity?" I nod. "Well we have different experiences my baby. It depends on the size of your man ,if his size is too much in your eyes, then it will definitely hurt but it won't hurt too much of he's gentle and slow." Oh my god,I'm not breaking my virginity with Nkosi's size, I might as well just die. My cookie is too small for his thing and it's closed, no I won't."

Me:"Ayi cha Ma, I'm not breaking my virginity." She laughs loudly and I look at her.

Ma:"Don't starve mg son Milisa, don't please."

Me:"Ma I can't,I'll die."

Ma:"So you want to starve my son to death? No,no no no dear , better give him a head." I look at her confused.

Me:"But how? He already has a head." She continues to laugh at me.

Ma:"Not that head, the one in" She is cut off by Nkosi.

Nkosi:"Ma no, don't. Don't corrupt my wife. I told you that I love her innocent so please." He walks to me and kisses my cheek. "Don't listen to her baby, she's not innocent okay? She'll corrupt you." I look at him and chuckle. "I want to be the one who corrupts your mind baby." He turns me around and kisses me. I quickly pull out and he looks at me disapprovingly.

Me:"There's Ma in the room Nkosi." I

whisper.

Nkosi: "No she's not, he went to her room. Come here." He pulls me to him and kisses me softly and slowly. I melt and wrap my arms around his shoulders. The kiss slowly gets heated and his hands roam around my body until they get hold of my butt. I slowly unwrap my hands on his shoulders and rub his back slowly. I pull his vest up and get to feel his skin. His body is very warm and he pulls me to him more close and we both start breathing heavily. He tightens his grip on my butt and pulls it to his torso then continues to feel my butt and moves it up and down and does whatever he feels like doing while I rub his torso. He picks me up and walks up the stairs, the kiss gets more and more heated as we walk to our room. He opens the door

and gets in then closes it and walks to the bed and lays me down. We strip each other naked and he kisses me hungrily and I feel his manhood on my virgina. He tries to push it in but I quickly jump up and pull out of the kiss. He stops and looks at me with his small red eyes that are badly open. "What now Sithandwa Sam?" He asks in a low husky voice.

Me:"We have to get tested first. We can't be intimate without knowing each others statuses." He quickly opens his eyes widely and I no longer feel his manhood poking me. I look at it and it's no longer standing firm,it's down,sleeping which is the first time I see it sleeping. I laugh at it and look at Nkosi whose eyes are no longer small but weak red.

Nkosi:"What the fuck?! Oh shit! I'm fucked up." He curses and collapses next to me with his eyes looking at the ceiling. He sighs heavily and wipes his forehead with his hands. He has a little sweat on it. "Thando." He wipes his face again and looks at me.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

FIFTY EIGHT ♥

NATASHA 🌸

He clears his throat and sits up.

Nkosi:"Do we really have to get tested , I mean-" I nod

Me:"Yes we do . Remember you slept with countless women and I haven't. So I don't know what disease you have. I'm also sure you don't know your status. " He looks bothered , worried more even. He nods and gets up then he wears his clothes . He looks really bothered , he walks around with his cellphone on his hands . He stands in the middle of the room and looks at me then stretch his head.

Nkosi:"Have you seen my phone ?"

Me ::"Which one since the one I know is in your hands? " He looks at it and nods .

Nkosi ::" Sorry .I am booking an appointment for us. Around 3 o'clock right ?"

Me: "Yes , around 3. " I also stand up and wear my clothes ." Why didn't you control yourself today ? Since you wanted us to wait for a marriage or wedding in order for us to be intimate ?" He looks at me and puts his cellphone back in his pocket then sits on the bed.

Nkosi: "I don't know. I don't know how it happened. I mean,I'm always in control and, I guess I lost myself in the moment ."

"Will we get the results right now ?" I ask the doctor as he just took our blood and did a pre -councilling for HIV & Aids test . He first asked if we would like to have blood test or strictly HIV test and we declined blood test since Nkosi wants the results fast . He said he can't wait for more days to

see the results so the doctor said its fine.

Dr:"Yes we will " He looks at the thing that he put our blood into and sighs .

"As I have said before having HIV is not the end of life . Having a partner that has HIV doesn't ..." Nkosi quickly cuts him off. He has been standing,ever since we got here,he just stopped the doctor for the pre counselling mid way now he stops him again . The doctor keeps quiet .

Nkosi: " The results please I'm about to go crazy right now ." He says rubbing his hands together and wipes his face.He has been sweating all the way .

Dr:"Alright then. Miss Zulu, oh Mrs Mkhize the results say you're HIV/Aids negative, Mr Mkhize , your results say you're HIV/Aids

negative , congratulations ." Nkosi signs heavily and deep. I turn to look at him he looks relieved . Maybe he suspected that he's HIV positive or he was scared that I'll leave him once the results came positive .

Nkosi : " Oh thanks God! I've never been so scared I'm my life like this. This has to be the longest 20 minutes of my life . Baby let's go . I don't want to be here anymore." We stand up and thank the doctor then walk out .

Me: "I would like to see my friends Nkosi. Can you wait for me?" He looks displeased .

Nkosi: " Ay Thando, you will stay for a long time ther-" I quickly cut him off.

Me: "But Nkosi it's been long since I saw my friends. I'll be quick." I quickly walk to the cafeteria and find them with Sibusiso . What

is he doing here ? He's in his doctor's uniform.I walk to them and Nandi quickly notices me and run towards me.

Nandi:"Tash! Oh my god! You're so beautiful and glowing.The engagement got you good!"

Me:" Hello guys. I'm sorry I didn't tell you about the engagement . Everything happened so fast but this week we have a party you're all invited."

Sibu:"Am I?" We laugh and I look at him

Thando ::"You're also invited. What are you doing here by the way ?"

Zena:" You know each other ?"

Me:"Yeah we do ,we were working together in KZN so?"

Sibu:"Well I was transferred here since the

pediatricians are few here. "

Me:"Oh ,okay congratulations then. "

Nandi:"Congratulations on your engagement Tash!" I laugh lightly and nod. They all say congrats.

Me:"I have to go guys . Nkosi said I must not stay long time "

Zenande:"What were you doing here "

Me:"Oh well, he was here to see Lwazi".

Zenande:"Oh well let us not keep him waiting . It was good seeing you even though we didn't have enough time to chat ."

Me:"I'm glad that I got to see you guys , that's all bye!"

Nandi:"Greet Hulk for me!" I laugh and reply.

Me: "Will do." I walk away and go to our car. I find Nkosi standing outside the car his cellphone on his ear having an intense conversation. When I walk close to him, he hangs up and looks at me then opens the door for me and I step in then he close it and walks to his side. He gets in and looks at me .

Nkosi: "Thando, we never talked about the call I received" I turn and look at him. I guess he was having a call with his maid.

Me: " What about it ?"

Nkosi: "Thando, she was one of my booty calls , I never contacted her while we are together , I never cheated on you."

Me: "Did I say you cheated on me? "

Nkosi: "No you didn't ,I was, I'm trying to make you understand that I've never

contacted her while we are together ,"

Me:"I asked you when I was in Switzerland whether you cheated on me or not and you said that you never cheated on me, so balance me here why would I think you cheated on me whilst you said you didn't ?"

Nkosi:" I thought that, you thought like that." I look at him and nod "Are we fine?"

Me:"Yes we are.Why didn't you delete her numbers? "

Nkosi: "I forgot them since I last saw her on new year's eve." I nod and look forward ."I told my friends and siblings about the party did you tell yours?"

Me:" I told my friends ,I'll WhatsApp my brothers."

Nkosi : "Alright. Do you want something?" He asks me as he starts the car and drives off. I take out my phone and tell my siblings and few cousins on our family group in WhatsApp.

Me: "Just drive to KFC, I'm craving for a lunch box."

Nkosi: "What does it have? "

Me: "Chicken piece, half of a twister and fries."

Nkosi: "Why don't we buy them individually? Just in case you're not satisfied. "

Me : "Fine by me."

Nkosi : "Thando why didn't you tell me that you want to build your own hospital?" I turn to look at him.

Me: "Where did you here that? "

Nkosi : "It doesn't matter. Why didn't you tell me? "

Me: "Because I wanted to do it on my own. Without your help." he looks displeased.

Nkosi : "Thando I'm your husband, you're my wife, you are married to me, you can't do things on your own. I know that I would have wanted to help your start it but you have to tell me everything that has to do with you and me."

Me: "I'm not sorry thou for not telling you about it. "

Nkosi: "I don't want your sorry, I just want us to communicate with each other, that's all."

Me: "Next time, I will."

Nkosi:"Thank you."

"Baby shouldn't I get you other pieces and fries?" He asks as I'm done eating the twister, 4 pieces of me and 3 bags of fries. We have arrived and I started eating in his car. I couldn't wait to arrive here at home and eat them and besides, Nkosi doesn't mind if I eat in his car. We are chilling in the lounge with his mother chatting.

Me:"I'm fine now baby, a juice will be fine."

Ma:"Nkosi, Milisa should eat African dishes now, it's important that she eats them."

Me:"I don't mind."

Nkosi : "I'll hire a chef for us. Thando has been very tired these days and I think that I should get us someone who will clean the house for us."

Ma:"Maybe the bleeding was even caused working hard."

Me:"But Ma I wasn't, I haven't been on work, well I'm still going to but I don't think the bleeding was caused by hard working because I don't work."

Ma:"Alright then but Nkosi, don't let her go to work. She needs to rest, we don't want her to bleed again and Nkosi should cook the maize porridge for you everyday because I'll leave early in the morning tomorrow."

Nkosi:"I'll make sure Ma!" He shouts from the kitchen.

Me:"I enjoy the maize porridge but I doubt he'll make it like yours."

Ma:"He actually makes it very good. You'll love his even more." Nkosi gives me the juice

and massages my feet.

2 days later.

It's now the party time, the friends have arrived and everything is good. The guys are braaing meat while having drinks and the ladies on the other side are setting up the table, the food is ready.

Pearl:"Guys, we're waiting for the meat now. Everything is done on our side and we're also waiting for you." She tells them in the braaing area.

Lwazi:"We're coming. Gents you heard the lady." The siblings and friends arrive at their house and everyone settles down and dish up. Thando dishes up for Nkosi the pap, salads and the roasted chicken.

Zulu:"I see uMkhize is treating you good

Tasha."

Lomso:"That's what I also notice, she has gained a lot of weight and she's more beautiful. "

Lilitha : "Iring glow mongwaneng! We know how to treat ours phela Lomso." The girls laugh at Lilitha's statement and the Mkhize support her. Tinashe and Luyanda look at each other.

Me:"Well I guess my husband is doing excellent on his priority." She says smiling and looks at Nkosi who is also looking at her smiling.

Ayabonga:"You won't get cozy in front of us guys, please respect your special guests and you know, I actually need a girlfriend. I'm very very very single!"

Nandi : "I'm also very very single Aya. Me and you, same WhatsApp group."

Nkosi: "We didn't call you here so that you can be couples. We -"

Nandi: "Well we can also be no strings attached right Aya?"

Aya: "Yes, I totally ag-"

Nkosi: "You can still talk in private about that Ayabonga. We called you here to announce in a good manner that Thando and I are getting married, well traditionally we are but you know what I'm trying to say. It's going to be on the 25th of December this year. "

Lungelo: "On your birthday! I sense some agenda here. "

Zenande: "Congratulations again sweetie. "

"Sorry that I'm late. I got held on the way."
I look at the entrance and we see Sibusiso.

Me:"I didn't think that you would make it! So happy that you're safe."

NARRATED

Thando stands up and hugs Sibusiso and Nkosi immediately gets very annoyed.

Nkosi:"Who invited you here?" Thando looks at Nkosi with disapproving eyes.

Thando:"Nkosi stop being rude please. I invited him and guys, this is Sibusiso, he's my friend and colleague and Sibu, these are my friends and family."

Sibu:"Nice to meet you all." They all reply with likewise.

Thando:"Take a sit. I'll dish up for you." She

says walking back to the table.

Nkosi:"No you won't, he has his own hands, he'll dish up for his self if he's hungry."

Bongani:"Nkosi's jealousy is on another level tonight." He says trying to interrupt the argument Thando and Nkosi were about to have.

Thando:"It's not even cute." She says staring at Nkosi.

Sibusiso:"It's fine Natasha, I'll dish up for my self." Natasha nods and sits down then Nkosi tries to touch her hand but Thando quickly gives Nkosi a cold stare and Nkosi sighs and eat.

Nkosi:"Was that hard then?" He asks Sibusiso.

Lelethu: "So Milisa, have you made plans for the wedding? I would love to help."

Thando: "Well I have nothing planned. You can help me together with my friends and Lilitha while you're here."

Lilitha: "I'll be glad to help. Bhuti, do you have groomsmen and best man?"

Nkosi: "It's my friends they already know that before I could even ask them and the best man, haven't decided."

Zenande: "Sweetie, have you thought about us?"

Thando: "Actually no but you'll be my bridesmaids together with Nkosi's sisters."

Nandi: "And my daughter will be a flower girl right?" Thando laughs lightly and nods.

Sibulele: "You have a daughter?" He asks
Nandi shocked.

Nandi: "Yes I do. She's so cute.

Ayabonga: "Enough about food and chats now, we're here to party!" He exclaims and walks FM for sound system and plays Umlilo by DJ Zintle. The ladies stand up with their bottles of ciders on their hands and dance while singing. The guys sigh and drink their alcohol. Nkosi watches Thando as she stands up to clean the table and Sibulele offers to help. They clean it and take the dishes to the kitchen, when they come back, Nandi snatches Thando to their own made dance floor. They cheer up for Thando to dance as she's the bride but she knows nothing and she's shy. Nandi resorts in teaching her how

to tweak first and Thando learns quickly as she has big bums just like Nandi. They all take turns teaching Thando how to dance until she does. Work by Rihanna plays and the ladies tweak while moving their waists in a circular movement. Nkosi catches Thando tweaking as he was having a chat with the guys enjoying his time, he becomes amazed to see Thando dancing but a bit jealous as the short gold backless sparking dress becomes more short on her butt. He turns to take another can of flying fish but he's catches Sibusiso watching Thando. He wishes to punch Sibusiso in that minute but controls his self and resorts in walking to the dance floor to drag Thando but Thando walks away from it and sits down on the couch as she's now tired and trying to catch her break.

Nkosi turns to get her a bottle of water and returns back then gives it to her then sits down. Thando takes the water and thanks him then drinks it.

Nkosi:"Thando you can't dance like that while wearing a dress like this because you reveal my assets here. I wanted to stop you from dancing the minute I saw you tweaking but I didn't want to spoil your fun. You better not dance again, okay?" Thando looks at Nkosi annoyed.

Thando:"Nkosi do you really have to monitor everything I do? You first said I shouldn't drink alcohol because we can't drink at the same time and I listened. You told me to not wear my short leather skirt that I wanted to wear and I did, I resorted on

wearing this dress. Now I dance and try to loosen up while having fun but you tell me not to because of the dress I'm wearing. Kahle kahle Nkosiyomuzi ufuna ngenzeni? " The girls have not stopped dancing, they're also sitting on the couches with the guys chatting while Thando and Nkosi are having their quietly in the two sitter couch.

Nkosi:"What should I get you Baby?" Nkosi asks softly and Thando looks at him defeat. Nkosi sees that and smiles and Thando ends up smiling also.

Thando:"Sausage."

Nkosi:"It's finished baby, what else? "

Thando:"Any meat available then." Nkosi pecks her lips and walks to the kitchen.

Tinashe:"You guys are my inspiring couple, my

favorite!" She says cutely, she has been watching them as they were talking and Thando smiles and appreciates.

Zulu:"What do you know about couples Uthandiwe?" The ladies laugh at how protective Zulu is.

Tinashe:"No Bhuti, I'm old enough now and I can also date geez."

Zulu:"Uthandiwe are you dating? Because if you do, I swear on my ancestors, that boyfriend of yours w-" Lomso cuts Zulu's stern voice. Luyanda shifts uncomfortably and the ladies are in stitches.

Pearl:"You know Zulu, the way you're protective, it's the way she'll go and date. I'm telling you."

Lomso:"Nawe Zulu, awume kancane ngama

threats akho. Sise party lana." Nkosi comes back with the meat and Thando takes a bite without paying attention to it. They continue to chat and Thando burps a bad smell and everyone looks at her. They become shocked when they see Thando's red swollen face.

Thando:"Nkosi what type of meat is this?" she asks and burps again.

Nkosi:"It's pork baby." Thando looks at Nkosi shocked while Lomso curses and runs to the kitchen to get milk. He comes back with it and gives it to Thando. "Is there a problem?"

Thando:"I'm allergic to p-" She burps again and this time, she vomits on Nkosi as she was facing him. Nkosi quickly stands up as he's

worried about the allergy reaction. Thando kneels down to vomit on the floor.

Lomso:"Thando drink the milk." He says kneeling down to her. Zulu rushes to the kitchen to get water while Thando continues to vomit everything she has eaten during the day and when she feels like nothing comes out, she burps and feels drained.

Nkosi:"Thando, are you okay? "

Lizwi:"Didn't you know that she's allergic to pork?" Zulu gives her water but she rejects then he picks her up.

Zulu:"Where is the bedroom?" Nkosi leads the way.

Sibulele:"Shouldn't we take her to the hospital?"

Lizwi:"Zulu follow me to the car." He shouts and rushes to the car. The girls are just shocked and don't know how to react. Nkosi follows them but Lilitha stops him.

Lilitha:"Go and change first, you can't go like this." He turns back and rushes upstairs.

Zenande:"I'm following them." She take her bag and hurries to Zulu's car and sits on the back with her. She takes out wipes from her bag and wipes off Thando's lips and chest. Zulu looks at her admirably.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

CHAPTER 😊

FIFTY NINE ♥

Narrated 🌍

Nkosi: "Did the doctor update you?" He asks as soon as he sees the family.

Zenande: "No they haven't, even though it's not something serious."

Nkosi: "Then why did her face bloat? "

Zenande: "It's how her body reacts to an allergy hence why she even got red." He nods and looks at the door.

Nkosi: "Have she been there for a long time? "

Lomso: "It's just 3 or 4 minutes." They wait for about 8 minutes then the door opens.

Nkosi is the first to stand up and to meet the doctor halfway. He stands in front of

him.

Nkosi : "And? " He asks impatiently.

Dr: "I'm Dr Khu-"

Nkosi: "There's no need for us to know you, how is my wife?"

Lizwi: "Calm down Muzi. You can continue Dr."

Dr: "I'm Dr Khumba. I guess you're her family. "

Lizwi : "Yes we're." Nkosi is very annoyed by the doctor. He looks at her impatiently.

Dr Khumba : "There's nothing wrong with her, she's fine, the baby is also fine. We gave her an injection that will help with the reaction and there's no need for us to keep her here."

Nkosi is still trying to make sense of what baby she's talking about."

Nkosi: "Doctor, who are you talking about?"

The doctor looks at the file.

Dr Khumba: "It's Natasha Milisuthando Zulu."

Nkosi: "Is she awake? She has a lot of explanation to do."

Dr Khumba: "Yes she is."

Lomso: "But Doctor, she can't have children, how is that possible?"

Dr Khumba: "I'm not a gynaecologist, I'll refer you to it." Nkosi walks in Thando's ward finding Natasha with closed eyes.

Nkosi: "Milisuthando, explain it to me, how are you pregnant because I've never slept with you." Thoughts in Nkosi's mind run around and the one that keeps on running is 'Did she cheat on me?' He can't help his self

but wonder if she's still a virgin. Well how can a virgin get pregnant. "Who made you pregnant Milisuthando?" Thando opens her eyes and looks at Nkosi.

Thando : "I don't know-" Nkosi quickly jumps in.

Nkosi : "You don't know?! How many men did you sleep with?" He can't help his self but feel hurt and bruised.

Thando: "Nkosi no, let me finish first. I didn't know that I was pregnant, I don't even believe that I am hence I asked the doctor to check a gynaecologist for us because I can't be pregnant. I'm still a virgin."

Nkosi: "How does a virgin get pregnant Milisuthando?! All that you're saying doesn't

make sense at all. "

Thando:"You can even check me Nkosi, I'm still a virgin." She says pleadingly.

Nkosi:"Is that why you've never wanted us to get oral that night Thando? Is it because you knew that you have slept with another man?"

Thando:"Nkosi just check me okay, it's the only proof that I have, it's the only explanation that I have because I'm confused, just like you." Nkosi walks towards Thando and pulls the hospital dress up.

Thando opens her legs for Nkosi and Nkosi looks at her, he is so confused right now. He debates on his self whether to check Thando or not because if he checks her, Thando will say that he doesn't trust her. Well he's already doubting her as he already asked

Thando the questions. "Do it Nkosiyoumuzi, I see that you're doubting me." Nkosi looks down at Thando's open legs still confused. He doesn't want to check her because a part of him believes that Thando is telling the truth, he can see it in her face. He stands up and roughens his face then walks to the window viewing the other side of Jo'burg.

Nkosi:"I can't Thando."

Thando:"You can't because you fear that I'll say you don't trust me? I know you don't Nkosi, you doubted my trust the minute you asked me who made me pregnant. Go on check, it won't make a difference." Nkosi already feels bad but most of all, he's grateful that he didn't get angry at her. "Come Nkosiyoumuzi so that you can set yourself

free." Nkosi walks to her and sits on the bed, he sighs and moves Thando's lace underwear to the side before trying to insert his finger in. He sighs then looks aside then inserts it but because her hymen is not broken, she moves up and Nkosi stops then fixes her underwear. "Did you get what you were looking for?" Nkosi stands up and walks to the door. A nurse comes in.

Nurse: "Come, let's go to see your gynaecologist." She stands up and they walk to the gynae's office. They get inside and find Nkosi inside. The Dr stands up.

Dr: "Good evening, I'm Dr Mathuba, your gynaecologist."

Thando: "Milisuthando." She says and sits down on the chair next to her.

Dr Mathuba : " Alright, let's first do the second step since the doctors have checked you BP, Body Temperature, etc. Take this and go to pee in the bathroom." Thando takes it and walk to the Doctor's bathroom. She comes back and the Dr dips in the pregnancy test then Thando walks back with the can to the bathroom then comes back. "While we are waiting for the results, let's ask each other questions. What makes you think that you're pregnant?"

Thando: "I didn't know that I'm pregnant and besides it's impossible for a virgin to get pregnant."

Dr Mathuba: "A virgin can get pregnant only if she's having an IVF or oral sex. I assume you do because the results said you are

pregnant."

Nkosi:"How does a virgin get pregnant?"

Dr Mathuba:"A virgin gets pregnant by having a spermed penis direct on her virgina when she had an orgasm or is wet by the virginal fluids. The sperm swim on the virginal fluid until it reach the ovaries and when it does, it stays there for 3 to 4 days and by then, the sperm would have fertilised the egg."

Thando:"But doctor, I can't have children because of the problem my uterus had."

Dr Mathuba:" In some cases, the women who had womb problems conceived. I guess you're one of the women and if you're very fertile, you're bound to."

Nkosi:"But Doctor, they said she can't carry

it."

Dr Mathuba:"The baby can be born prematurely if she reaches 6 months pregnant."

Thando:"So if I'm really pregnant, I can miscarry the baby before 6 months?"

Dr Mathuba : "Yes, it's possible." Thando doesn't know how to feel about that on the other side, Nkosi is just confused by the whole thing. "You are indeed pregnant Milisuthando. Congratulations." A smile reaches Thando eyes and she holds her stomach. "Do you want to do the ultrasound scan?" Thando nods repeatedly as a tear falls down her face and she wipes it. "You can climb and lie down on the bed." Thando does as instructed and she takes the dress off.

Nkosi stands up and walks to them then stare at Thando's stomach. He sees no change in it as she is lying down. "This will be a bit cold for your stomach." She says applying the gel on Thando's stomach who shivers and close the stomach. The doctor takes the scanner and scans Thando's stomach. "Here is the baby. Healthy and strong with 7 weeks."

Nkosi : "A month and 3 weeks?"

Dr Mathuba: "Correctly. The heartbeat is faint because the baby is not fully developed. You should be experiencing the symptoms now."

Thando: "Which are? "

Dr Mathuba: "Frequent urination, fatigue, itchy and swollen breast, missed periods and

morning sickness but you'll be fine." She replies wiping off the gel. "Don't you want the scans?"

Thando: "I do." She gives her the scans and they go out. "Can we keep this pregnancy to ourselves?"

Nkosi: "But they already know."

Thando: "We'll say it's a false alarm." He nods and they walk to her ward finding them inside.

Nkosi: "It's a false alarm." Thando settles on the bed with the scans on her pocket."

Zulu: "The doctor said you can go home. We'll give you some space." They go out and Thando changes her outfit and walks out. She finds Zenande outside the door.

Zenande: "Why is Nkosi like that? "

Thando : "Maybe it's the false alarm."

Zenande: "Okay, you're fine thou?"

Thando: "Yes I am."

Zenande : "You're sure? "

Thando: "100% sure. I saw how my brother looked at you."

Zenande: "Which brother? "

Thando: "Lizwilezulu. I think he likes you or has a crush on you."

Zenande: "Cha Tasha, he's not."

Thando : "Let's bet. By the end of tomorrow, he'll ask for your number. "

Zenande: "Stop giving yourself ideas sweetie."

They walk to the cars and find Zulu and

Lomso's car. Thando walks to Lomso's car letting Zenande walk to Zulu's car since she rode with him. She gets in the backseat and finds the car empty with only Zulu inside.

Zulu:"Please get in the front."

Zenande:"I'm good here thanks. "

Zulu:"Oh well, suit yourself." Zenande finds that rude.

Zenande:"You don't have to get rude just because I said I'm good here."

Zulu:"I'm not rude, that's how I am." He replies arrogantly.

Zenande:"But you're not like that to your sisters."

Zulu:"That's because I love them, do I love you?" Zenande looks at Zulu in the review

mirror.

Zenande: "I've never thought that you have a stinking attitude you know."

Zulu: "You let me know."

**Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com**

Chapter

60

Natasha

"Where is Nkosi?" I ask my friends as I see them sitting in the sitting room watching TV.

Lilitha: "He went to the hospital after you

left."

Me:"He hasn't arrived?"

Lelethu:"Nope."

Me:"Okay, I'm going to sleep. Goodnight family." They all say goodnight and I walk to my bedroom. I take a shower and wear my night dress then try to sleep. In the wee hours of the night, Nkosi gets in then takes a shower and sleep with his back on me. I guess that's how we will sleep from now on.

"Good morning family." I greet while I take a sit on the dining table. They reply back and I dish up. Nkosi is sitting far from me while staring at his plate, I guess he is thinking about my pregnancy. I eat while we are chatting and laughing, enjoying ourselves.

Lungelo : "Bro are you good?" Nkosi looks up

from his plate and looks at Lungelo. "You seem disturbed, are you alright?"

Nkosi:"Yeah." He clears his throat. "Just thinking about the fact that I need to be at the office."

Luyanda:"Working on Saturday?" The attention is now diverted to Nkosi.

Nkosi:"I should take care of everything that will be needing me since I'll be getting married and be on a honeymoon. That's why." He looks at his wrist watch. "I should go." He stands up then walks to my side and pecks my forehead then walk upstairs.

Me:"Girls, you should be ready, we are going to the town, to plan my wedding." It's only Lelethu,Lilitha and Uthandiwe who slept over, my friends went to their houses.

Lilitha:"I should be ready." She says and quickly finish her plate then run upstairs. Nkosi walks down wearing a suit pant with a mustard yellow skipper jersey and formal shoes. He waves his hand and walks out.

Me:"I'm also going to change."

"Hello friends!" Nandi shouts behind us and we shake our heads.

Me:"Hello Punchununu."

Nandi:"And the sudden nickname?"

Me:"Leave it alone. Guys, I was thinking of a wedding planner." I announce as I stroll on my tablet, searching for best wedding planners.

Lelethu:"We should. Thandi,are you taking notes?"

Uthandiwe:"Yes, I am. The colour of the day madam."

Me:"Uhm, cream and gold perhaps?"

Lelethu:"Well, gold is good, any other ideas perhaps?" I look at Zenande who has been silent ever since she came here.

Me:"Zena? Are you fine?" She looks at me and smiles weakly.

Zenande:"Yes, I am."

Pearl:"What about cream and gold with a touch of dusty pink? I mean pink is your favorite color."

Uthandiwe:"I was also going to talk about pink."

Nandi:"Guys, why don't we distribute ourselves? How many are we?" She asks

counting ourselves. "We are six. Uhm, Lelethu with Pearl, Zena with Lily and me with Thandi."

Me:"Why am I not included?"

Nandi:"Listen first. We will look out for, a cake, dresses, venue, boutique, wedding planner."

Thandi:"But that's a wedding planner's work to do."

Nandi:"I know but I want to be involved in my friend's wedding. So, we will help the wedding planner and here Thandos will rest. All she will do is to approve or disapprove with what we come up with."

Zena:"Seems like you have a plan up on your sleeves."

Nandi:"Well since we have a designer her, me and Thandi will look for a wedding planner and dresses. Lelethu and Pearl will plan a bridal shower and look for the venue. Zena and Lily will look for a venue and a cake. Do we all guys agree? "

Me:"By look of things, all is equally distributed."

Nandi:"Ladies?"

Lelethu:"It's good, we go with it."

Zena:"Okay guys, to make things more easier and fun I think we should go and do a spa treatment and enjoy ourselves while brainstorming."

Thandi:"Guys you seem to forget, we have only a month to plan a wedding,with only a week."

Pearl:"You lie, we have 2 months and few days."

Thandi:"But still, it's hard to get these things guys, phela everything should look beautiful,should be breathtaking and uMakoti here should have the wedding she wishes."

Me:"Guys I'm hungry,let's order."

Lilitha:"Hayibona makoti,iFigure ibephi?"

Me:"I won't stop eating just because of a wedding,just give the bride a break."

Nandi:"We'll eat at the spa. Come on ladies, take your bags and go."

Thandi:"How will we drive guys? I mean, Thando's car accommodates 4 people and we're seven."

Nandi:"A uber girl. We'll meat there ladies."

We all part our ways and drive off. We arrive at the spa and I order, I'm too hungry to wait up for others.

Lelethu:"So, how are things between you and my brother?" She asks me and I look up to her and bite my drumstick.

Me:"Well, they are fine. We are fine."

Lelethu:"There's nothing called f-" She gets disturbed by her phone. She answers it and excuses her self. "Bhuti." She says walking away. The sisters also order and my friends arrive.

Pearl:"Where's Lelethu?"

Lilitha:"Elly is taking a call." Nandi sits down.

Nandi:"I've just talked go the assistant and asked for service. She didn't mind since it's

not full."

Zena:"How can she mind? It's her job."

Nandi:"Well we didn't have an appointment."

Assist:"Good day ladies, your assistants are ready, please follow me." We stand up and follow her and Lelethu rushes behind us. We change into gowns and rest on our beds.

Lelethu:"Thando, how's the sex life between you and Nkosi?" Didn't expect that question.

Lily:"You can't possibly ask about our brother's life Elly!" She scolds Lelethu but she dismisses her by waving a hand.

Elly:"Just chill, we're listening Thando."

Me:"Well we haven't done anything." They all exclaim and scold me at how I'm starving the poor guy.

Nandi : "Right after this treatment, we are taking you to a lingerie shop to surprise Nkosi because you can't starve Hulk, ngekhe nje."

Me: "What about your lives?"

Nandi: "Well I'm single and I have a dildo on standby to help me when there's an itch that needs to be itched as I don't have a man so-"
She shrugs and the ladies laugh.

Me: "OUCH! NOT TOO HARSH!" I scream as this body wax hurts and my cookie is burning as if it's dipped in hot water.

Zena: "Thando, what's up with your tummy?"

Pearl: "It's suddenly not flat, not the pancake we're used to." Now the attention is diverted back to me again.

Me:"Well I'm gaining weight so it's possible that it becomes a potbelly as I'm no longer paying attention to it." I answer them and Zenande looks at me suspiciously. I avoid contact with her and drink my juice.

I'm back home and it's quiet, the girls said they're sleeping over at Zenande's house and I should go home as I have a husband. I couldn't cook as it was late, I arrived around half past six. I take out the steak and put it in the microwave then boil water to cook uPhuthu for Nkosi. I walk to our bedroom and take a quick shower then dry my body and wear a robe then walk downstairs. I cook uPhuthu then dish up and put it with the steak and walk back to the bedroom and lotion then wear the lace G-string Nandi brought for me today the red silk robe. I

brush my new weave, they even said that I should look beautiful in every way. They brought me new undergarments, did a new weave and nails and a heel that goes with the robe I'm wearing. I hear a car pulling and I rush downstairs to warm his food. Didn't want them to make up me since Nkosi loves me more natural.

"Thando?" He calls me out. I don't know how things will go since he has been off since the news.

Me:"In the kitchen." I reply and take out his food and put it on the counter then take a dish with warm water and soap. He walks to me and kisses my head.

Nkosi : "Good evening." I turn to him and give him the water. He washes his hands and dries

them.

Me:"Take a sit and eat your supper."

Nkosi:"You look very beautiful, where is yours?" He takes a sit and eats his food with his hands while there's a cutlery near him.

Me:"I forgot to buy food for me since I ate at town."

Nkosi:"I brought your favourite, I forgot it in the lounge." He continues to eat and I walk to the lounge, I can feel his eyes on my butt. I turn and look at him. He smiles widely and licks his lips. "Where's you underwear Thando?" I smile at him and walk to the lounge and take the KFC and walk back to the kitchen.

Me:"Underneath the robe." I say not looking at him and eat the fries. I quickly stand up

and take a juice in the fridge when I realise that I didn't put in next to him.

Nkosi : "Thank you. How are the wedding plans going?"

Me: "There's a progress but we haven't see nor chose something since they said they should treat the bride. Where's the chef and everyone?"

Nkosi: "I told her to take a day off together with the helper." I nod and focus on my twister. "Baby, we have to talk." I look at him, he wipes his mouth with the serviette and hand with the cloth then drinks the juice. He stretches his arms to my hands and holds them after putting the twister down. "I'm sorry about how I behaved. I know it was uncalled for and I'm sorry for doubting you,

I shouldn't have, shouldn't have questioned you and, I'm sorry for not trusting you. I did my research on how our son is conceived and it's true. I just didn't get it on how a woman like you can get pregnant but I guess, my ancestors wanted a son." He kisses my hands. "Baby please forgive me, I would never do what I did again, I promise." He says looking deep in my eyes. I try to remove his from mine but he tightens his hold and looks nervous.

Me:"I want to eat Nkosi." He nods and watches me as I eat. I finished and as I'm about to drink the FantaPine,he quickly takes it.

Nkosi:"Acid is not good for you and our son, drink the juice." He says pouring the juice

for me and I drink it.

Me:"I forgive you." He smiles widely and walk over to me and kisses me.

Nkosi:"Thank you."

Me:"I missed your kisses." I say honestly. I really did, it's been 16 hours since he hasn't kissed me. He grins and pulls me to him. He kisses softly and gentle and I also kiss him and open my legs then pull him close. He gets closer and also pulls me more close, he snakes his hands inside the robe and holds my waist while brushing my back. He pulls out slowly then opens his eyes and looks at me. He looks at my body as the robe has now opened. He bits his lips and curses.

Nkosi:"Fuck!!" He hisses and takes off his blazer and I help him unbutton his shirt, he

takes it off together with his vest and removes my gown then pull me up and I wrap my legs around his waist. He kisses me lustfully and soft, I become hot instantly. "You're so warm." He says inbetween the kiss then walks upstairs while the kiss gets heated and hot. [Removed]

I wake up early in the morning as I feel the sudden urge to pee. I open my eyes and I find myself wrapped up in Nkosi's body and him holding me tightly. I look up to his face and he is sleeping peacefully while snoring softly and low. I try to remove my legs from his but my cookie suddenly hurts. I remove the sheet covering our body and I see Nkosi's manhood buried deep inside me. I remove Nkosi's arms around my upper body then try to sit up only to make Nkosi's thing

to move inside me, hurting me in the process, I'm on the verge to tear up and the way I'm pressed doesn't help it, more especially the burn I feel in cookie. I slaps Nkosi's chest and he opens his eyes a little. "Why are you beating me up?" He asks softly.

Me: "Nkosi remove this thing of your inside me, it's hurting me and I want to pee."

Nkosi: "But Baby, I'm loving how warm it is inside you." He says to sit up. How can he when we are laying with our sides?

Me: "Nkosi you're hurting me!" I slap his chest again and he lays down and looks at me.

Nkosi: "Not even a kiss?" I throw a cold stare at him and he moves his waist making his manhood go in and out and I scream.

Me: "Okay I'm sorry!" I touch my cookie and

I feel it pulsing, its so hot. I look at Nkosi and he smirks.

Nkosi: "You can't give me a cold stare while I ask for a kiss." Nkosi's movement just provoked my bladder, I can feel my pee coming and I quickly tighten my walls try to stop it and Nkosi grunts.

Me: "Nkosi I'm going to pee! Move!"

Nkosi: "Thando you can't tighten your walls around my manhood! Are you trying to kill me?!" He looks at me and opens his eyes widely. "Thando you can't pee on the bed!" I think he feels that I'm about to pee. He lies on his back while pulling me close to him and his length just goes deeper.

Me: "NKOSIYOMUZI!" I exclaim and slap his cheek. He sits up then gets off the bed with

me. He makes my upper body lie on the bed while he holds my lower body and removes his length gently and slowly while I whimper. He succeeds and puts my legs down, his manhood has my blood. "Nkosi I can't feel my legs!" I say holding on the edge of the bed. I feel my pee trying to come out and I can't hold any longer so I release my bladder only to hurt my self. "OUCH!" I scream and Nkosi picks me up and rushes to the bathroom and puts me on top of the toilet.

Nkosi: "Baby I'm sorry." He says softly, worriedly while brushing my back.

Me: "I swear to you Nkosi! I'm never going to have sex with you again! Get out!"

Nkosi : "But ba-" I quickly cut him off.

Me: "GET OUT NKOSIYOMUZI!" I shout at

him and he gets shocked and looks at me. Probably because he had never heard me shout. He gets out and closes the door a little. I pee while stopping a little trying to ease up the pain. I get done finally and I roll a tissue paper and wipe my self then flush the toilet then stand up, only to fall down on the floor because I can't move my legs. I resort on crawling and I do then push the door open and

Nkosi : "Baby? Are you fine? What's wrong? Why are you crawling?" He asks fast while picking me up and lays me down on the bed.

Me: "I told you that I can't feel my legs! Why are you busy asking me stupid questions because I also told you last night to stop sexing me because I can't feel them but you

didn't listen, instead you went on and groaned in pleasure while my legs were numb!"

Nkosi:"I'm sorry Baby, I won't do it again."
He says softly.

Me:"Yes you won't because that was the first and last time you had sex with me!"

Nkosi:"Baby please calm down, don't be angry."

Me:"Get out Nkosi!" I shout glaring at him.
He sighs then stands up and walk to the closet and comes out wearing sweats.

Nkosi:"I'm going to the chemist to buy you something to make you feel better." He kisses my cheeks then walk out. I pull the cloth over my body and sleep.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

61

Natasha

"Baby, wake up." I feel Nkosi saying from a distance and shaking my shoulder. "Thando, wake up." I slowly open my eyes and look at the time, it's half past seven. I barely slept last night, after that 2 rounds we had, Nkosi added 7 to them saying that he's horny and his manhood is hurting. At first I allowed him which was around 9 o'clock and I allowed him

the second time. When he wanted us to sleep for the 5th time,I told him that I can't,I want to sleep and the time then was around 11 o'clock. He said he'll not do anything, he'll just insert his manhood, it's cold. I was a fool to agree because after few minutes he started humping and my body is tired,I'm tired. Even after the 9th round,he still wanted more and I couldn't take it anymore. I just cried and he started apologizing saying that he won't ask for more,he'll let me sleep and he did. I slept not peacefully thou as my virgina was and still burning. "Come,let's go and get you clean." He says taking me in his arms and walks to the bathroom. He dips my body in hot water that smells marvelous. When my virgina reaches the water,I scream and he quickly pulls me up .

Me:"I can't take a bath,let's take the shower."

Nkosi:"But Baby you have too,the water has salts to make you feel better. Try to bare the pain okay?" I nod and he sits me down while I flinch in pain. "Sorry Baby." I close my eyes as I stretch my legs and slip in the tub and relaxing my body. He washes my body and cookie then takes me out. He finishes up making me hygiene then takes me to the bathroom, the white duvet we slept in is covered in blood, can't believe I slept their without noticing it. Nkosi puts me down on the couch then takes off the cover then lays me down. "I'll send the doctor in while getting something to eat for you." I nod then he walk out letting the lady walk in.

Dr: "We meet again. Good morning." I reply.
"Can you please open your legs for me?"

Nkosi walks in with lots of food with a tray.

Me: "Nkosi open my legs for the doctor." He puts the food down before taking off my pyjama pant.

Dr: "You can't feel your legs?" She asks after taking a look at my virgina and I nod. "He took it too hard and you have a tear. I suggest you wear a dress, no underwear so that you can breath and it will heal. I would have suggested painkillers but a pregnant woman doesn't take them so take these." She says taking out pills in a briefcase. "You should also come to me for check up on the baby."

Me: "Will do." She stands up and leaves. "I'm

hungry." I tell Nkosi and he gives me the food and I start eating.

Nkosi:"How is it? Down there?" I want to lash out on him but I stop my self.

Me:"How do you think it is? After the way you were doing last night?"

Nkosi:"Baby I'm sorry, I won't to it again, I promise."

Me:"Yeah you're right, you won't because that was the first time and last time you did it." His eyes widen in shock.

Nkosi:"Baby, you're not serious right?"

Me:"Do I sound like I'm joking?"

Nkosi:"Kodwa Sithandwa sami ubufuna ukuthi ngenze njani uma inkomo yakho ishisa bhe?(But My Love what did you want me to

do when you virgina was burning hot?)" I chuckle to hide out my blushing self as he calls me 'Sithandwa sami.'

Me:"Wenza lokhu bengithi kwenze.(Do what I told you to do.)"

Nkosi:"Ngiyaxolisa MamKhize.(I'm sorry MamKhize.)" I grin widely as he calls me 'MamKhize'. He surely wants to charm me off my feet right now and wants to be forgiven. "Ngiyakuthanda uma uncumile MamKhize.(I love you when you're smiling.)" I blush and look at him. He's looking at me adorably and admirably. "Wozala ngithi mathu.(Come here so that I can kiss you.)" I move closer to him and we kiss. His hands hold the back of my neck and pull me closer to him. The other one takes off the tray and

puts it in the sideboard of the headboard. He lifts me up and puts me on his laps then brush my butt grabbing it softly. I moan in his mouth and immediately, his manhood is up. This guy's sex drive is too high. I pull out slowly and Nkosi whines. "Kodwa Baby." I shake my head.

Me:"You heard the Dr, she said I must heal meaning no sex."

Nkosi:"What should I do with this?" He says pointing it out with his head.

Me:"Do what you were doing the past months."

Nkosi:"It won't cool off now Baby since it experienced your warmth."

Me:"Well you should have thought about it yesterday."

Nkosi:"But Baby it was still complaining." He groans softly. "Baby it's starting to hurt, Bheka." He says taking it out of the sweats and it looks like it will burst. I blink rapidly and look at him. "Baby ngiyacela."

Me:"I'm sorry Baby, I can't. It also hurts to me."

Nkosi:"Ngiyokulifaka kuphela Sithandwa sami, ngiyacela MamKhize." He pleads looking very sad. I hurt the position Nkosi puts me into.

Me:"You won't ask for it tonight then or else, we will sleep separately and we won't touch each other from now on, until it stops to hurt."

Nkosi:"You know Sithandwa sami that I can't cope well with that, you know I won't."

Me:"Then take a shower for you to cool

down."

Nkosi:"Kodwa MamKhize,-" He sighs and puts on the bed then strip naked before going to take a shower. My phone vibrates and I take it, it's a message from the group Nandi created. They say they're coming to see me. "Baby buka." I look up at Nkosi and nothing has changed. "MamKhize ngiyacela Sithandwa sami, angizukwenza kabuhlungu." He pleads sadly. I whine and look at him. He gives me puppy eyes making me feel soo bad and sorry for him.

Me:"Okay, not fast and deep then." He grins widely like a boy given a sweet then runs to the bed before throwing his self on it.

Nkosi:"Ngiyabonga MamKhize, ngiyokupha iSuprise. You deserve it."

We maid a long 1 round which was very painful but he kept his promise and did it gentle and careful. "Baby your friends are downstairs." I nod and slowly get off the bed, still flinching. I put my legs down and try to walk buy my legs instantly feel wobbly so I balance my self with the bed. "Let me help you Baby." He says and picks me up then we walk downstairs, when we get there, it's not only my friends but also his. I'm grateful that my brothers are not here.

Ayabonga:"Ngangishilo! Ngangishilo ngathi ayisobe ikwazi ukuzihambela ngenyawo zayo zombini lengane. Khokhani!(I said it! I said it that this child won't walk on her own. Pay up!)" He says excitedly while taping his hands when Nkosi and I reach down on the stairs. He walks to the cotton couch and puts me

down carefully then sits next to me.

Nkosi:"Should I put your legs on the couch?"

I nod and he moves to put them on top of it.

Ayabonga:"Pay up gentleman!" Nkosi's friends pay up R500 for what Ayabonga says who is grinning. "Ladies, lunch is on me. I'm taking you out to Cilantros or Shucked Oyster Bar."

Nandi:"At the bar!" She fairly says before the ladies can talk. I look at Nkosi who's looking at his friends which are also looking at him.

Nkosi:"Did you really have to bet gents?"

Lwazi:"Well we didn't really think that you'd paralyse her." What!? Are they talking about me? I huff and look at Nkosi.

Nkosi:"I'm sorry Baby,have to go." He says

then kisses me for 2 minutes because Ayabonga snatched him away saying that he isn't ready to watch live porn. "Awume kancane wena sishumane." He says to Ayabonga then pecks my lips. "Will be back with your surprise. Ngiyakuthanda uyezwa?" I nod shyly as they're all watching us.

Me:"Nami Ngiyakuthanda." I say and we both blush before kissing each other for the last time then he pecks my forehead and leaves with his friends.

Zena:"Oh guys, you're so cute and sweet! I believe in love." She says wiping off her tears and we laugh.

Pearl:"I'm definitely getting more followers on Instagram for this video." She says smiling widely.

Nandi:"You took a video of them?"

Pearl:"Yes, they're so cute!" She says clapping her hands and we laugh.

"Ma'am, Sir said I should make more food for you. It's ready. Should I bring it here?" The lady chef says and I nod.

Me:"Yes and please dish up for my friends too." I say and she walks away.

Nandi:"So girl, how was last night?"

Pearl:"And why was Nkosi carrying you around?" They both ask curiously and Zena gasps.

Zena:"Oh my god, he sexed you until you couldn't walk!" She exclaims and the twos go crazy.

Nandi:"I should buy Nkosi a Bell's! He

deserves it!"

Pearl: "Give that man a Bell's!" She says mimicking the man on the Bell's advert and I can't help but laugh at them. The chef gives us food and we eat after then, gives me my pills. I drink them and ask for the helper to get my phone for me in my bedroom.

Zena: "So when are you going back to work?"

Me: "Yima kancane ngami. Where are Nkosi's sisters?"

Nandi: "They slept in Nkosi's apartment together with his brothers."

Me: "And mine?"

Zena: "Zulu said they booked in a hotel."

Me: "And how do you know that?"

Zena: "We talk to each other, your brother is

such a jerk!"

Pearl:" And ugly."

Nandi:"I agree that his twin is handsome more than him but Zulu is not ugly."

Zena:"I'm glad that they're not identical, just resemblance here and there or otherwise, I would be in trouble."

Me:"How?" She shifts uncomfortably in her seat.

Zena:"Well-" She trails off with a shrug and quickly changes the subject. "We should call the other girls. We have found a cake! It's the venue that is hard to find. Any progress Pearl? "

Pearl:"It's a surprise darling!" She replies grinning.

Zena:"The girls are coming." I nod then take my phone from the helper then thank her. I see a text from Nkosi, he asks for Nandi's numbers and I give him. Immediately, Nandi gets a call.

Nandi:"Hello?" She looks at me and nods then walks away.

Pearl:"Why is she going away for a call?"

Me:"Maybe it's her boyfriend." She comes back grinning.

Nandi:"Come, let's get you changed. We're going for a lunch." I nod and slowly remove my legs from the couch. I stand up and walk slowly - parting my legs, it starts to burn up again. Feels like I'm not going to heal.

Zena:"Ah, she walks so painfully. Guys let's help her."

Nandi:"Haaa! Who will carry her? Phela Hulk is not here moghal."

Pearl:"She walks like a duck" She says giggling, holding her laugh and I just laugh and finally she laughs.

Zena:"But guys, how will she walk up the stairs? Phela they're very very-" She gets disturbed by Nandi's phone.

Nandi:"She's struggling to walk." She listens for a while. "Okay." She takes her headwrap and walks behind me.

Me:"Nandi what are you doing?" She blinds my eyes with it. The girls scream and seems like they're running outside. Nandi is holding my hands tight.

"You can let her hands go now, I'll take it from here." I know that that's Nkosi's voice,

I know it even in my sleep. "MamKhize." He says and pecks my lips.

Me:"Nkosi what's going on?" He lifts me up and walks away. "Where are you taking me?"

Nkosi:"Calm down Baby, I'm not going to hell with you." I chuckle and I feel fresh air caressing my skin. He puts me down carefully then unties the headwrap. "Close your eyes." I closed them and he takes it off. "You can open your eyes then." I open them then quickly close them and slowly open them again to adjust from the sun. When I fully open them, I get the surprise. It's a car! I freeze with the girls screaming non stop and camera sounds making noise.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

62

Natasha

A Range Rover Evogue, I told Nkosi that I would like a Range Rover also since he owns a lot of them. I said that when I saw him driving a Range Rover Vogue. I blink rapidly and look at him, he's smiling nervously at me. I don't know how to react, it's, it's so sudden.

Nandi:"Tash reach geez! The poor guy here is nervous!" She says excitedly pushing my body and I stumble aside hurting my self in the process.

Nkosi:"Sorry Baby." He says holding me, preventing me from stumbling. I giggle and hug him.

Me:"I love it, thank you." He grins freely and we kiss.

Pearl:"Girl! Your pussy got to be fire haa! For him to buy you a whole Evougue 2020!" She exclaims and the friends laugh. I pull out and we walk to the door slowly and he gives me the car keys. Can't wait to heal in order to drive it. He hops me in the car and puts me in the driver's seat then closes the door. I start the engine and it roars softly, like a lady! I love it's colour, it's pinkish red or maroon. I love it nonetheless. I open the door and Nkosi carries me inside the house.

Nkosi:"Did you eat? Are you full?"

Me:"I did, I would like to lie down a little."

Nkosi:"Are you tired?"

Me:"A little, plus I want to take a break from the heat I'm feeling down there." He nods and we walk up the stairs.

Nkosi:"I just can't get over your self right now. You're so different when you're in pain. I don't know whether it's the pregnancy or what but, I just don't like this self. I miss the old you and I promise, I'll try to control my self from now on. Do you think you'll be better thou?"

Me:"Yes, let's just remove this sweater. I should wear a skirt or a dress."

Nkosi:"You'll wear a dress tonight, for now, let's free you." He says taking off the sweater and covers my body with a throw.

"Shouldn't I get you something to eat thou?"

Me:"No, I'm fine."

Nkosi:"Is my son also good?"

Me:"Yes, she is good."

Nkosi:"I see you wish for a daughter, we'll have her maybe next year, just after you'll give birth to my son."

Me:"Hawu cha Nkosi."

Nkosi : "Alright then baby, let's sleep." He says joining me in bed, is he going to sleep? He's not a person to sleep during the day."

Me:"Will you also sleep?"

Nkosi:"I'll wait for you to sleep." I nod and snuggle close to him.

Me:"You smell really good." I feel him smiling,

he kisses my head and squeeze me. I feel my eyes closing. "I'm sleeping." I mumble and try to tighten my hold on his body but I can't.

Nkosiyomuzi

After a few minutes, she slept and I stayed with her for few more minutes before the gents said they need me downstairs. I slowly removed her body from me and covered her body then went downstairs. I got there and the guys were busy drinking beers. I sat down and grabbed my own and gulped it down.

Me:"What needed me here?"

Lwazi:"We were talking here dude, since Sibulele is your lawyer, we tried digging information about you on him but he couldn't give so, we are going to ask you. Will you marry Natasha in community of property or

she'll sign a prenuptial?" I sigh and look at them, didn't think about that.

Me:"No, I didn't think about any of that but, I'll talk about it with her." They nod. "Why were you asking?"

Ayabonga:"Well I was wondering, judging by the car you brought her, I mean that car costs a million dude. I wonder how much you'll spend for the wedding. She really has a fire pussy, just like Pearl said."

Me:"I wanted to spend my money on her dude, I mean she doesn't want to spend it, it's been months since we are together but, she never asked money from me not even a card."

Bongani:"Well, you are married to an independent woman, it's clear."

Me:"All I'm grateful for is that she didn't

fight me when I said she shouldn't go back to the hospital since she's pregnant, I don't want her to stress and work hard."

"She's pregnant?" They all ask in unison and that's when I realised that I blabbered that out.

Me:"Please keep it to your selves gents. She doesn't want people knowing about it and no questions please."

Ayabonga:"Since you said 'please' twice,i won't talk."

Me:"Bongz,your brother has quite a big mouth, he talks a lot." We laugh and Ayabonga throws a middle finger at us.

Sibulele:"It's true when it's said that in twins, there's the talkative one and the quiet one."

Lwazi:"And Bongz is the quiet one."

Ayabonga:"Gents, let's talk about Natasha's friends, those girls are fire! All have big booties."

Nkosi:"Just keep my wife out of that chat."

Sibulele:"Let's leave their hot bodies, do they look beautiful?"

Bongani:"They're beautiful, all of them but each person has her own beauty. For instance, Pearl, she is a beautiful darkie, beautiful body and a beautiful face with not all the sophisticated make up woman have. I agree that she does weaves but, I can say she loves those things with fibre."

Nkosi:"I have to agree with you about that, Thando also likes these things made with fibre."

Ayabonga:"But then again guys, Lilithaa! That girl is fire fire fire with beauty!" I quickly stand up and hold him by the neck of his T-shirt.

Lwazi:"Whoa whoa whoa, stop Nkosi, just let him go. He's drunk and not his self, he's joking, don't let get to your head dude."

Me:"Don't shut on me Ayabonga, don't! I swear if I see you flirting with my sisters, I'll castrate you! D-" Sibulele disturbs me and removes my hands from Ayabonga's T-shirt.

Ayabonga:"Dude, I won't, i-" I give him a quick slap and throw him back to his chair and walk out, nx! I get into Thando's car and park it in the garage then get off before it automatically locks it self. I get to them and take a sit and continue with my drink.

Bongani:"But Nkosi that was uncalled for and -" He always has Ayabonga's back, no what.

Me:"Awungiyeye mfo ka Biyela. Hlukana nami." I say and unlock my phone and check Instagram, just because I'm bored.

"And then? Kwenzakalani nge mood?" I look up and it's Khwezilomso who's asking, walking in with his brothers.

Lizwi:"Sbari." I look at him at and tilt my head up, knowledge his greeting."

Me:"Sho." They take beers and drink.

Zulu:"I see, you brought Natasha a Range Rover Evogue." I just look at him and log out on Instagram and look at the pictures of my wife. There's no bond between me and him, we just stay out of each others ways ,we're civil in short words. A knock disturbs us and

the door opens. I look at it waiting for the door to open, what the fuck is she doing here? Oh no! Not when things are going smooth for me.

**Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com**

Chapter

63

Nkosiyomuzi

"Baby! I'm home!" Her always high spirited voice says with a different accent. Soon, we hear heels clicking and wheels wheeling, she gets in the lounge and I quickly stand up to take her to a private place and walks towards

her. She laughs blissfully as I walk to her and she hurries to me and hugs me. I'm sure as hell that Zulu will cause a chaos, I pull away from her hug but she's hugging me tightly. I put my hand on her back and wait for her to pull out but she surprises me with a kiss which I quickly pull away. Zulu jumps up to his feet and walks to us.

"We mbem, Kwenzakalani la?" He asks and just as I'm about to explain, she jumps to the opportunity and introduces her self. I've always loved her uncontrollable, untamed self.

"I'm Nandipha Ngoma, you can call me Nandi or Andy! Your choice, well I'm Zee's girlfriend. Oh, I mean, Muzi's girlfriend. I assume you're also his friend but a new face

I see." She says cheerfully. "Heeeey guys!" She greets my friends enthusiastically but they don't return the enthusiasm, I guess because they're curious of what will happen.

Zulu:"Nkosiyomuzi ngilalele, khuluma." I gulp down my saliva, never have I ever thought, even in my wildest dream that a day like this would come.

Me:"Zulu, as she introduced herself, she's Nandipha Ngoma."

Zulu:"I heard her blabbering with her fake accent. What I want to hear is why is she calling you 'baby' why is SHE saying that she's your girlfriend." He asks pissed off.

Andy:"Well what should I have called him huh? Doesn't a couple call each other with pet names or you call yours 'Mamas' huh? What

should I have said because I'm his girlfriend!" She asks more life being sarcastic. She comes to me and pecks my cheek with her Yellow lipstick on her lips with her not so dark complexion.

Me:"Awume kahle Nandipha. Zulu-"

Zulu:"Why are you stringing my sister along when you know that you have a girlfriend?"

Andy:"What do you mean stringing your sister? Zee! Are you cheating on me?!" She shouts just like Zulu. I look at Lwazi and Sibulele wishing that they calm the situation down but they shrug.

Zulu:"NKOSIYOMUZI I'M TALKING TO YOU! WHY ARE YOU MARRYING MY SISTER KNOWING VERY WELL THAT YOU'RE DATING ON THE OTHER SIDE?!"

He never really liked me, even today he still doesn't.

Andy:"WHAT DOES HE MEAN WHEN HE SAYS YOU'RE MARRYING HIS SISTER?! MUZI ARE YOU FUCKING KIDDING ME!" She yells, too loud for my liking.

Me:"Can the both of you calm down?" I ask them as they're breathing heavily.

Zulu:"CALM DOWN? YOU'RE TELLING ME TO CALM DOWN WHEN YOU'RE PLAYING MY SISTER? YOU KNOW I SHOULD KICKING YOUR ASS RIGHT NOW!" He shouts angry and his twin calm between us.

Me:"You might be angry Lizwilezulu but you'll never ever lay your hand on me!" There's nothing that I hate than someone insulting me, who throws curses on me.

Zulu:"YOU THINK I'M SCARED OF YOU?!"

He says charging to me and his brother pushes him away.

Lizwi:"ZULU AWUKAHLE MAN! YOU'RE ALWAYS UP FOR A FIGHT! BREATHING HEAVILY FOR A NONSENSE YOU DON'T KNOW!"

Andy:"WHAT'S GOING ON HERE? WHY WOULD YOU MARRY ANOTHER WOMAN WHILE WITH ME?" I'm not even with her! I just look at her blankly.

Andy:"DON'T GIVE ME A STRAIGHT FACE WHEN I'M ASKING QUESTIONS MUZI!" She yells totally pissed and here I am, confused of what to say.

"What's going on here? Why are you all making? I could hear you in my sleep."

Natasha's calm soothing voice makes me turn around, she's in the middle of the stairs, looking at us with confusion on her face.

Andy: "Who're you? Wearing MY MAN'S clothes?" She seemed to be taken back by Nandipha's emphasis. She yawns and wipes her eyes and looks at me.

Thando: "Nkosi, what's going on?" She never calls me with pet names when her family is around. I walk to her ready to explain.

Andy: "Where are you going Zee?" She says heatedly. I really don't energy for her.

Me: "Baby, can we go up stairs and talk about what happened here?" I say, being careful with my words.

Zulu: "There's no need for that, Natasha, go and pack your bags and go. Your husband is

cheating on you." She looks at me still confused.

Thando:"Nkosi what is this?" She asks wiping my cheek with the palm of her hand and looks at it and looks at Nandipha.

Me:"Baby let me explain." I beg as she moves me to the side and walks down the stairs slowly. She reaches the floor and walks to Nandipha. "Thando whoa!" I try to stop her as I hurry to her.

Thando:"I'm Natasha. May I ask who are you?" I get defeated immediate as she asks calmly. I choose crazy girlfriends than calm women because they're very unpredictable. Thando for instance.

Nandipha:"Nandipha, Nkosi's girlfriend." She says surprised, Thando blinks rapidly and

nods then sits on the couch.

Thando: "You may take a sit." Nandipha sits opposite her and I'm shaking in my boots. I look at Zulu and he clicks his tongue and takes a sit. "Thuli!" She calls out for the helper and she comes to her aid. "Please get Sis Nandipha a juice." Nandipha is 32 years and taller than Natasha. Thuli nods and walks away. "How are you?"

Nandipha: "I'm good." Thando nods.

Thando: "How long have you been together with Nkosi?" I wish I was the one who explained everything to her.

Nandipha : "We've been together since forever, we're high school sweethearts and we have a very bumpy road since I work at a modelling company and it requires a lot of

traveling so yeah. We recently got back together last year since I came back and now, I'm here to stay. We're settling down hence why I asked you why are you wearing his clothes." She says enthusiastically.

Thando:"I understand, I'm sorry." She says taking off my hoodie revealing her vest.

Nandipha:"What's your relation with Zee?"

Thando looks at her confused. "Muzi."

Thando:"He is my fiance." She says humbly.

"We dated this year and he proposed to me last month." Nandipha looks at her taken back by her statement. Her expression quickly turns into hurt and anger. She looks at Thando's hands.

Nandipha:"Can you please give me the ring, I want to see it." She says suppressing her

anger. Thuli gives her a juice and she gulps it down.

Thando:"I'm sorry, I can't. Nkosi said I shouldn't take it out." She turns and Looks at me angry.

Nandipha:"How old are you? You seem too young to be with a old man like Muzi." She asks furiously.

Thando:"I'm 27 years."

Nkosi:"Nandipha, may you please give us space? I'll book you into a hotel." She stands up and walks to me.

Nandipha:"You have the gut! Muzi! You have the gut! To cheat on me with a young kid! You marry her more than anything! Zee! I trusted you! You'll take that rock on her finger and insert it in mine!"She yells. Thando walks

upstairs.

Me:"Nandipha please calm down."

Nandipha : "Don't tell me to calm down Muzi!
Don't tell me to calm down when you cheated
on me and wanted to marry that girl!"

Me:"Nandipha I broke things off with you!
Understand that!" I say raising my voice.

Nandipha : "That was because of the distance!
I'm back now! We'll finish off where we
started!"

Me:"Nandipha we won't, I'm with the woman
that I love now please understand that."

Nandipha : "You won't tell me that SHIT Muzi!
Not when I've been with you in stormy and
rainy days! Not when I have invested so much
in our relationship! In you!" She yells on the

verge of tears slapping my chest. I hold her hands and look at her, tears stream down her cheeks.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

64

Nkosiyomuzi

"Nandipha, please." I plead softly. She looks on top of me. I turn to look where she's looking and I see Thando walking down with a sport's bag on her arm, I quickly rush to her.

Me: "Thando where are you going? Baby please don't leave me, I love you, I'll tell

Nandipha to leave, please don't leave." I beg holding her hand, she looks at me and looks at her brother.

Thando:"I'm not leaving, I'm just giving you time and space to deal with Nandipha."

Thando just confuses me. One minute she's a baby, the next, she's a matured person. Now I think I understand her, she gets to be a Baby in my presence and her brothers presence. She loves being treated like it, now I understand but when she's exposed to other people, she's another person. She gets matured and behaves like an adult that she is, especially when tough situation occur.

Me:"Can I drive you to where you're going then? Please." She nods and I go to our bedroom and take her car keys.

Natasha.

"Where are you going to stay?" Zulu asks and I look at him.

Me:"I'll stay with Pearl in my apartment." He nods. Nkosi comes down and takes my bag.

Nkosi:"Let's go." I stand up and we walk to the garage. "Baby, I didn't cheat on you. Nandipha is an ex." We get in the car and drive off.

Me:"Nkosi you assured me countless times that you haven't cheated on me." He looks at me briefly and looks back at the road.

Nkosi:"I just don't want you to think that I did as Nandipha addressed herself as a girlfriend. What me and her had is over, I promise you. Her coming back won't affect our relationship."

Me:"Okay." I'm lost of words, don't know what to say. "Do your parents know her?"

Nkosi : "No, they don't. It's my siblings that know her." I nod and play with my ring, hope the wedding goes on very well. "You won't take it out right? The wedding will continue." He asks nervously but I don't know whether his last sentence is a question or statement.

Me:"Yeah, I won't take it out and the wedding will continue." He takes my left hand and kisses it.

Nkosi:"Thank you, uMamkhize omncane uselaphekile? Ngibona uhamba kahle.(Is the virgina healed? I see you walking better.)"

Me:"Yes, I think so."

Nkosi:"Alright, uyophinda ahlange nini noMkhize manje? (When will she meet with

my manhood)" I laugh and look at him unbelievably.

Me:"Nkosi, there's a situation at hand that needs our attention and you're busy thinking about sex?" He laughs lightly and brushes my thigh, can't still get over the fact that he can drive with one hand.

Nkosi:"Well Sthandwa sami, it was Mkhize who was asking, I'm just a messenger."

Me:"Oh well, uMamkhize omncane says, they'll meet next of next week." I decide to play along and Nkosi gasps.

Nkosi:"Mkhize can't wait for that long, even now, he wants to go home. Bheka." I look at his groin area and his pants are moving, uMkhize is fighting for freedom.

Me:"Nkosi your sex drive is not normal thou,

it's too high." I say after laughing at him
'Mkhize'

Nkosi:"It's normal Baby, just that, can't get over your MamKhize omncane." I think of massaging his manhood, Nandi's advice. I snake my right-hand to his groin area and he quickly turns to look at me shocked and I look down, I debate on my mind to whether continue or just stop. Let me just continue. I reach my destination and squeeze it making Nkosi to hiss, it immediately moves around. "Baby what are you doing?" I look at him and quickly turn his head to the road. "We'll get an accident Thando!" I rub it and massage it while squeezing it here and there. "Fuck!" He curses and unbutton his pair of jean and I pull the zip down.

Me:"Why aren't you wearing an underwear Nkosi?" I ask as I see it springing out free.

Nkosi:"I didn't get enough when we made love, so I chose to not wear an underwear since I wanted it to lie down." I look at him unbelievably and chuckle, I put again in his jean and zip it then button it. "Baby why are you stopping?"

Me:"Because I'm defeated. " He parks below the yellow line.

Nkosi:"You'll finish what you have started Baby, I can't drive like this, woza." He says lowering the driver's seat until it lies on the backseat. He turns his head and looks at me. "Thando woza."

Me:"We can't have sex in my new car Nkosi and besides, we had sex in the morning." I

don't want to even look at him. "Nkosi get up and drive."

Nkosi:"Thando! Come." I shake my head.

"Then I won't drive." I know exactly what to do. I go to the driver's seat and seat on top of him and start the car. "Thando what are you doing?!"

Me:"I'm driving since you didn't want to." I get in the road and Nkosi lifts my dress.

"Stop what you're doing Nkosiyomuzi." I tell him and increase the speed. I finally get to my apartment with Nkosi whining. I get off from the seat and take the passengers then look at him. His eyes are closed with a little sweat on the forehead. His manhood is still dancing, it hasn't stopped. Poor Baby. Wait, why don't I give him sex, I mean if he gets

home still in this situation, Nandipha might take advantage of it and, I quickly get back on top of him, he quickly opens his eyes.

Nkosi:"Whoa wait, what's wrong?"

Me:"No, it's nothing. I'm just giving you what you wanted.

Nkosi:"Come here." I lay on his chest and he brushes my back. "What changed your mind, be honest."

Me:"Well I thought of Nandipha taking advantage of the situation you're in and, I didn't want you to be tempted so I -" I shrug. He understands what I'm trying to say anyway.

Nkosi:"So, you want to hurt your self again?"

Me:"Well that's better than having you to

sleep with her."

Nkosi:"What makes you think that I'll sleep with her? "

Me:"Well you also know the reason, you don't think straight when you're like this and I'm sure she also knows it and she can sense it from a distance when you're aroused."

Nkosi:"I understand." We stay for a while in silence.

Me:"I forgot to give you a present that I got for you months ago." I tell him as I remember it. I sit up and take it from the bag. "Here." He takes the box and looks at me in wonder. I smile and peck his lips. He opens it and when his eyes land on the watch his mouth opens. "I know that this watch costs half of the watches you wear but, I

wanted it for you. You can wear it privately, "
Nkosi:"There's nothing that I'll wear private
here." He replies wearing his watch. "I love it.
Thanks." I hug him. "I'm going to miss you."

Nkosiyomuzi.

"Hey, I've cooked dinner. I'll dish up for us
so you can sit in the meantime." Nandipha
says just as I get in.

Me:"Thank you, my wife has already fed me."
I say and walk to the staircase.

Nandipha:"I'm sure you're thirsty, I'll get
you something strong."

Me:"Ever since I've been with my wife, I've
changed Nandipha. I no longer drink alcohol
everyday." She nods and looks at me.

Nandipha:"A massage maybe?" She says

seductively and I chuckle, if we were still together, I would have been turned on. I shake my head and walk upstairs to my bedroom. I hear her footsteps following me.

Me: "Where are you going?"

Nandipha: "To sleep, we're going to sleep."

Me: "I'm no longer used to sleeping while my home has it's lights on. Please switch the lights off." I say and walk to my bedroom and lock the door. I turn around and I see her suitcase next to the bed, together with a small lingerie. I'm no longer even used to see such small underwears, I'm used to Thando's size. I chuckle and open the door then take her clothes together with the suitcase to the passage and leave them there then lock my door and strip naked then sleep.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

65

Nkosiyomuzi.

I tried to sleep but I couldn't, I miss Thando, I miss cuddling with her thick self. The bed is so cold but outside it's warm. Tomorrow I'm going to take her, I can't sleep alone, not when I have a wife. I take my phone and dial her number, she answers after few ring, I guess she's sleeping.

Thando:"Yes?"

Me:"Baby?"

Thando:"Nkosi, what do you want so late?"

Me:"Baby I miss you, I hope you didn't unpack your bag because I'm going to take you, first thing tomorrow in the morning, before I have breakfast."

Thando:"Did you talk with Nandipha? "

Me:"I'll talk to her while you're with me. I can't miss you while you're my wife. I can't. Even now, I wish to sleep with you and I can't wish while you're still alive. I wouldn't have let you go if I knew it's like this to sleep without you."

Thando:"But Baby why did you wake me up then?"

Me:"Baby I miss you and I can't sleep ." She giggles.

Thando:"Nkosi you can't be sulking and whining when you're at your age. What would Lolwethu think of you?" I chuckle softly.

Me:"I don't care, I'm your Baby right? So take care of me."

Thando:"Says an old man with beard and a child." She says after a soft chuckle.

"Goodnight Baby." She says with a soothing voice. She's supposed to sing very beautifully.

Me:"Sing a lullaby for your Baby then." She giggles and starts singing, she sings softly and low, gentle and slowly. I can feel my self drifting to sleep.

Natasha.

"Baby?" I call out Nkosi but he's not answering. I listen a little and I hear his soft

snore, I guess he's sleeping. "I love you." I drop the call and sleep. I wake up around 8 o'clock and take a shower then wear my long yellow polka dot dress and brush my weave then wear sandals and go to the kitchen to make breakfast for me. Pearl didn't sleep here, I don't know where she slept. I cook maize porridge and put butter and milk in it, Nkosi's mother was telling the truth. Nkosi makes the best maize porridge. It has a different taste even though the ingredients are the same. When it's ready, I eat it and wash the bowl then make English breakfast with lots of fries. I check for a sausage in the refrigerator, I'm craving for it and luckily, it's there. I dish out the breakfast and put a cloth over the food then make the sausage that I'm craving and uPhuthu. I sit down and

eat the fries together with russians then drink apple juice. I stir my pap and turn off the stove for sausage because it's ready then go to the bathroom and take my phone. I see no missed calls from Nkosi. Oh, well, I shrug and go to eat my the tomatoes and cucumbers, I love them. I add a little salt in the tomatoes and eat. I hear a knock and get up, I open the door and find Nkosi. I move my head to the back surprised. He pulls me to him and we kiss gentle. "I really missed you." He says and pulls out. "Umm, the aroma! What are you cooking?" He gets in and closes the door then walks to the kitchen and sits down. I dish up English breakfast for him and sit next to him.

Me:"Didn't you eat at home?"

Nkosi:"Which home? My home is where my wife is and who would have cooked when my wife slept where she wanted and didn't think of what I'll do in the morning."

Me:"Well since Nandipha is available, I thought she'll cook." He chuckles and looks at me.

Nkosi:"You know Sthandwa sami I fail to understand you. One time I say I understand you the next I don't. Why would you want me to eat food prepared by another woman? I mean these days, a wife gets angry when the husband eats a food prepared by an ex." I shrug.

Me:"Well, depends on the level of maturity and how much you trust your husband and I trust mine."

Nkosi:"What happens then to your maturity? One minute you're matured and the next, you're childish." I turn around and glare at him. "Didn't mean it the bad way Sthandwa sami."

Me:"It's because you treat me like a baby so I let you be and enjoy being pampered. Just like my brothers."

Nkosi:"So it's us who are at fault of your childishness?" I click my tongue and stir the pap again then take out the sausage and dish it on a plate then eat it. "Baby where's mine?" I ignore him. "Ha Sthandwa sami, what did I do? I guess the hormones are starting to kick in." He mumbles the last sentence.

Me:"I heard you Nkosiyomuzi!" I warn and he

cleans his plate clean then put it aside and takes the plate with sausage and puts it between us. "What are you trying to do?"

Nkosi:"But Sthandwa sami you can't finish this sausage on your own, it's too much."

Me:"Oh then, watch me as I finish it."

Nkosi:"I can't because I know you can finish it." He says and dishes up uPhuthu with the sausage gravy then eats.

Me:"Did you sleep hungry yesterday?"

Nkosi:"No I didn't, I ate here remember." I nod and cut a big piece for him then put it in his plate. "Baby, I was thinking of us going to the doctor today. And maybe buy clothes for the little one."

Me:"It's fine, we can go." He hold my hand.

Nkosi:"How has he been treating you thou?"

Me:"Fair enough. No crazy or unusual things had happened."

Nkosi:"But you should have morning sickness in the first month Thando. Or maybe they're still coming."

Me:"So you want me to be sick?"

Nkosi:"No Baby, I was just worried since it's the usual thing that happens to pregnant women." I nod and shrug. "But I would like for us to cuddle. I missed having you in my arms." I laugh and finish the sausage then put the dishes in the sink.

Me:"We can't cuddle, we've just woke up Nkosi."

Nkosi:"Well we can. It's our choice in our

time right?" I shrug. "Let me clean up." He suggests and cleans up his plate then washes the dishes and put the leftovers in a refrigerator. We walk to the lounge and lay down on the L-shaped couch. "So I've been thinking Baby, about the baby names." I sign and brush his stomach.

Me:"Baby don't you think that we shouldn't be too invested on the Baby, since I could miscarry. That could help us to quickly move on when I've miscarried it."

Nkosi:"You know Thando, I don't know how your mind works really. I don't. So all the time, what you're thinking about is the chance of you miscarrying my son. If you believe so much in miscarrying him then, don't you think it would be fair to him to go

knowing that he was loved? You want me to ignore my son's presence because of your made up theory?" He replies angrily making his deep voice sound scary. I swallow my own saliva and keep quiet. A part of me really believes that I can miscarry because there's a huge possibility that I can. I remove myself from him and walk out of the house and go to the back of it and lay down on the grass and face the sun. It immediately warms up my skin and I cover my face with my hands and quickly remove them and play with my ring then I end up removing it and taking a look at it. I wonder how marriage will be if a relationship is this hard. I don't feel ready for this marriage anymore. With this baby and Nandipha around, anything can happen. I can miscarry when I'm already married and

Nkosi can go back to her high school sweetheart then we divorce. Now I'm starting to think that I Nkosi might be with me because of the baby. No, that's ridiculous. He loves me. I sigh and put the ring on the grass and cover my face with my hands again then close my eyes. "Where's your ring Milisuthando? Why did you take it off? Didn't I say that you shouldn't take it out?" Nkosi's deep voice startles me and I open my eyes and look where the voice is coming from. He walks to me and takes the rings then takes my hand and forcefully insert it. "Should you take it out again, you'll see what I'm made of I'm telling you. Come let's go." He says and gives me his hand, I get up on my own and leave him there. He sighs and follows behind me.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

66

Natasha.

I walk in my bedroom and pack my toiletries in my bag and yesterday's clothes. Nkosi comes in as I'm packing. "Sthandwa sami I'm sorry. I didn't mean to get angry at you, it's just that." He sighs and stands behind me and hugs me with his arms around my shoulders because he's tall. "I want us to love our son without thinking about the negativity of the pregnancy. I want you to

enjoy this pregnancy while it lasts,I want us to make memories of it. Maybe we'll never get another chance to be parents. Just try to understand Sthandwa sami,I know you're scared and I understand why you're but don't think too much about your fear, enjoy the pregnancy and be stress free. I don't want you to stress, if you're too scared, then leave a little room for disappointment but love my son okay?" He says softly and I nod. "MamKhize?"

Me:"Yebo Mumbomhlophe." I reply and he kisses my head.

Nkosi:"Good,let's go then. We have a lot to do. You also know it. "

Me:"Aren't you going to work?"

Nkosi:"I'm-" He gets disturbed by a call and

he takes out his phone. "It's work, have to take it Baby." I nod and finish packing. "Pick up a time where I'll be free." He replies to his caller and brushes my arm. "Isn't there another time for the meeting, I'm kind of busy right now with someone important." He says and sits on the bed. I take the bag and walk out, he follows behind me and takes the bag. "Okay, I'll be there but a little late." He hangs up and I lock the door. "I have a meeting Baby, meaning I'm going to work."

Me: "You're still full thou?"

Nkosi: "Yes, I'm fine baby. I'll just change clothes and go to work." We get in his car and drive off, not too fast thou. "We'll shop another time right?"

Me: "Yes, we will." He holds my hand and

kisses it then drive in silence. I look at him wrist and he has the wristwatch I brought. I also kiss his hand and he looks at me for a brief moment and smiles then squeeze it. We finally arrive at home and he parks in front of the house. He gets my bag and we get inside hand by hand. We get in and find Nandipha in a towel and sleepers.

Nkosi: "Nandipha, take your bags and leave. When I come back from upstairs I must not find you in my home, I hope I'm clear." He tells her blankly and blunt. Not authoritative or shouting voice, just a calm blank voice. He walks upstairs and I follow him like a lost puppy. I find him in the closet changing into a suit.

Me: "I thought you had already told her to go

when I gave you some space." I say and he wears his shirt fast.

Nkosi: "Didn't have time for her Sithandwa sami. I left late in your apartment and went early to you so there was no time for her."

Me: "So I left my home for free, you didn't do anything about her. You're only telling her to leave now." He cuffs his cufflinks and wears a blazer.

Nkosi: "I'm sorry Sthandwa sami, I'm sure she's leaving now thou." He pecks my lips and puffs his cologne. "I'm forgiven right?" I shake my head and walk downstairs. I find her sipping a coffee. Nkosi comes downstairs with his laptop bag. "Nandipha, you're still here?" He asks unpleased.

Nandipha: "Muzi I'm not going anywhere. I'm

here to stay and fight for our love. We'll overcome this obstacle too." I guess I'm the obstacle.

Nkosi: "There's no obstacle here Nandipha, I'm already late for work and you're making me late. Please go." The way Nkosi is so calm with her, it's the first time seeing him like that. Nandipha looks at me for a long time. "Don't be stubborn, just leave in peace." She looks at Nkosi and walk upstairs. I won't even ask Nkosi why he's calm about her. He looks at me and looks down. Nandipha comes down with her bag and we looks at Nkosi. "You'll request uber, I can't take you to a hotel. I'm late." He walks to me and wraps his one arm around my waist and I look up at him. He kisses me and whispers in my ear. "Wait for me when going to the checkup." I nod and

peck his lips. Nandipha chuckles.

Nandiph:"You're so short, not even his type to start with." I ignore her and she walks out with Nkosi.

Nkosiyomuzi.

"Muzi what's wrong with you?" She asks heatedly as I close the door and walk towards the car.

Me:"Bye Nandipha." I close the door and heat the engine then drive to work.

Nandipha tends to be trouble sometimes,sometimes she listens sometimes she becomes disrespectful, let me just say it depends on her mood. I get to my office and call my PA in.

Busi:"I'll get them Sir." She walks out and I take out my laptop. Within a minute, the

marketing team gets in together with the event planner. What is she doing here?

Me:"What is the event planner doing here?"
I ask confused and my PA sits down.

Busi:"She's a part of this meeting Sir." I look at them and nod then close my laptop.

Liso:"Sir, the reason beyond this meeting is to make a company event."

Luyolo:"The company will benefit from this event because we are looking for new clients. It will be an event for business tycoons or moguls to mingle about business and to give young businessman the opportunity to be like you, to be successful. The company will benefit from it as we will be-" I cut him.

Me:"I understand, I get it so when will you plan it?"

Liso:"It's already planned. We knew that you wouldn't say no to it. It's going to be tomorrow. Everything is planned and the invites are already sent to the clients." I look at them unbelievably.

Me:"Then what did you want from me since everything is planned? "

Luyolo:"We wanted you to know." I nod and dismiss them.

"Baby get ready,we're going to the doctor." I yell at the staircase and go to the kitchen, I find lunch ready and I eat. She hugs me from behind and smells my back. "Stop being weird and come to eat." I say and continue to eat.

Thando:"I missed you. We missed you." I smile and she seats down.

Me:"How did you kiss me?" She smiles and

dishes up for herself.

Thando:"In many ways except for you being between my legs." Oh wow,just as I thought that I'm getting some today,she disappoints me

Me:"But Baby I thought I'm getting some you know." I say not meaning to sound disappointed.

Thando:"Sorry to disappoint you." I nod.

Me:"It's fine. We're having an event tomorrow and you're coming with me." She looks at me and nods. I watch her as she eats,she eats so much these days and she's getting more and more thick. Especially the bums.

Thando:"Did you make things clear with Nandipha?" I clear my throat and shake my

head.

Me:"I had not, I was busy with meetings and I thought that I should have a lunch with you. I'll meet with her after the event." She nods and keeps quiet. She's too quiet these days, ever since this pregnancy, she has changed a lot. She no longer cries, she just keeps quiet, she's not the 'baby' I'm used to. "You changing a lot, while you're pregnant." She looks at me and stands up then takes the bag. I take the car keys and we walked out.

Thando:"Changed to good or bad?"

Me:"To good and I don't like this Thando. She's too matured and quiet, I just miss the Thando I used to baby, that's all." She chuckles and we get in.

Thando:"Didn't you want me to grow up?"

Me: "I did but not like this. If it was the Thando I'm used to, she would have cried when she heard that I have a girlfriend and I would have been better because she's crying meaning that she's hurt and angry, now this new Thando. Cha, she just confuses me. She's too unpredictable, you'll never know how she feels or what she's thinking. She's just too much." She laughs as I drive out.

Thando: "So you enjoyed seeing me cry and stuff."

Me: "I didn't but at least I knew how she felt. She was an open book now, -" I sigh heavily. I've been avoiding Thando's changes but now, I just get defeated.

Thando: "Don't worry, I'm still the Thando you knew. She's just growing up now, all

thanks to your son." She says holding my hand.

Me:"I shouldn't be worried?"

Thando:"Not at all. I still love you. "

Me:"Then why did you take off the ring yesterday?"

Thando:"Do you still want to get married? Don't you think that this wedd-" I nearly lose control of the car,all thanks to the low speed.

Me:"Thando please don't tell me that you don't want to get married anymore, Thando, please don't doubt my love for you. Please don't doubt our marriage." I would die if she wants to stop the weeding.

Thando:"Nkosi it's just the way you're

dealing with Nandipha, you're soft to her. I think that you love each other and the feelings are still there." I stop at the robots as a red light flashes. I turn to look at her and hold her hands.

Me:"Thando look at me." She turns and looks at me, we look at each other straight and deep in the eye. "I no longer love Nandipha Sithandwa sami, my feelings for her are long gone. When I fell for your love, she wasn't in my mind. I've never even once thought of Nandipha when I was with you. I forgot her, I forgot everything about her, you captured my heart, mind, body and soul. Even know, it's still captured by you and it loves being captured by you, it will never escape." The light flashes green and I hold her right hand.

Thando: "She said I'm not your type Nkosi, is she your type?"

Me: "She's no longer my type, you're my type. I used to have girls like her, physique and personality. But I fell for you, not another type. You're the only type of woman I'm satisfied with. I can assure you with that. You can change from being a baby to matured, I'll still love you. You can change from being thick to more thick than thin, I'll still love you. It's your persona that captured everything in me. I hope you'll never be insecure and doubt your self again." She nods and we arrive at the hospital.

Thando: "Thank you for being understanding and soft."

Me: "There's nothing I wouldn't do for you."

I assure her.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

67

Natasha.

"The baby is still fine, I see nothing wrong with it." The doctor says.

Me:"Uhm Dr, there's this one time I bled. Wasn't there anything wrong with the baby?"

Dr:"Which month?"

Me:"This month, before I knew that I was

pregnant. "

Dr: "There was absolutely nothing wrong, the baby was growing but it doesn't usually cause woman to bleed, they just experience back pain that's all. I guess that's one of your first complications. A pregnant woman shouldn't bleed, too much since the baby needs blood so if you're bleeding, contact me or come to me. You shouldn't stress, that's very bad for the baby. You'll come back again for a checkup on the 20 of November and start with the supplements. That will be all." I nod and we get up and go.

Nkosi: "I'll call my PA to check if I have any important meetings." I nod and I walk to the car and leave him making a call. My phone rings and I take it out, it's Pearl.

Me:"Hello?"

Pearl:"Hey! Please meet us at our restaurant, we have found everything you need for your wedding. We just need your opinion. Meet us by 2 o'clock! Ciao!" She hangs up afterwards. So quick? I guess they also found a wedding planner. I put my phone in my bag and Nkosi gets in.

Me:"By 2 o'clock, we should be done with shopping. I'm having lunch with the ladies.'

Nkosi: "Okay. My diary is clear, no important meetings, I guess I'll drive to work after this." I nod and we drive off. "You should also buy a dress for the event."

Me:"Okay."

Today is the day of the event, everything with me is good, infact beautiful. Nkosi is

waiting for me downstairs, I'm just making final touch ups with the makeup. Everything with the wedding is going well, I met my wedding planner but I cancelled some of the things they made for my wedding, I just didn't like them. With the dress, they said they'll just give me a name of a boutique and I will chose, I was fine with that. "Baby aren't you done yet?" Nkosi asks as I hear his footsteps approaching. He opens the door and I turn to look at him smiling. "Fuck! I could bend you right on that table and fuck you." I giggle and shake my head.

Me: "Come, let's go." I take my YvesSaintLaurant red bag and stand up. I'm wearing all red and my husband right there is wearing his black suit and tie with a red pocket chaffey.

Nkosi: "You won't leave my side, I'm tell you." He says closing the bedroom door, following me. "Fuck!" He curses again and we go to his Land Rover Velar, it's black. We get in and drive to the hotel that's hosting the event. He brushes my thigh since the dress is revealing it. He stopped complaining about short clothes, I guess he needed me to him that I don't like his habit of telling me what to wear. "Sithandwa sami?" I look at him and smile.

Me: "Yes Baby?"

Nkosi: "You'll give me some when we get back from the event right?" I laugh lightly as he's smiling. We haven't been intimate since the day he brought me a car and, I'm glad. I healed fully and peacefully, now I'm scared

that he'll paralyse me again.

Me: "Only if you'll not paralyse me then." He grins and nods repeatedly.

Nkosi: "We will stay for few minutes and after that, we'll drive back home." I look at him unbelievably.

Me: "You can't leave since you hosted the event Baby, hawu."

Nkosi: "Okay, well we'll have a quicky in one of the rooms." He says with a shrug.

Me: "Nkosi you have to lure some clients for your company. You'll still have me, I'm not going anywhere. Just take this moment to more clients okay?" He nods.

Nkosi: "Okay." He kisses my left hand and brushes my legs again. We park near the red

carpet and journalists start taking pictures. I look at him and he smiles. "You can give me some kiss you know that right?" I laugh and shake my head.

Me:"You know that uMkhize omncane uyophaphama angith?(Your manhood will rise, right?) So behave." He shrugs and opens his door. The noise starts with the flashing cameras,the security stop the journalists from going to Nkosi. He walks to my side and opens the door. He helps me out then close the door and gives the car keys to some guy. He holds my waist and I look at him, he has a very serious expression, he's very intimidating! Eh,wasn't this guy smiling a while back? I guess he means business, he looks down at me and smiles.

Nkosi:"Don't be too friendly in there. You're beautiful." I smile back and nod then look forward. We walk to the porch and I feel Nkosi's eyes on my butt, I want to turn and look at him but I decide to not, I step in the porch then walk to the entrance, he holds my waist close to his body then we get in, heads turn as we walk to the front, a lady walks to us.

Lady:"I'll guide you to your seats." She walks in front of us until we get to the front and sit in a round table,it's so full in here.

Nkosi:"Aren't you hungry? I can get you something to eat?" I shake my head and a waitress puts a drink in front of us. As I'm about to drink the champaign, Nkosi takes it and looks at the waitress. "Alcoholic or non?"

He asks and I totally forgot about it.

W/R : "Alcoholic Sir. "

Nkosi: "Bring two juices, Mango and Apple."

He says dismissively and holds his ear and murmurs something. Huh? Who is he talking to. I look around the table and I see gentlemen and ladies, I didn't notice.

Me: "Evening." I decide to greet and they greet back. The waitress comes back with the juices and Nkosi holds his juice, his watch lights green. Wow! I look at it and it's not the one I brought it for him, he hardly wears this one. Well it's the second time he does.

Nkosi: "Mango or Apple?"

Me: "Apple." He holds my juice and his watch lights red.

Nkosi: "Drink Mango for now. I'm coming, I have to deal with something important." He whispers in my ear and stands up with the Apple juice. I drink the juice and look around, he's talking to some tall guy as him, who's wearing a black suit. They talk for some time and I take out my phone, I think I'll get bored here. The time is 19:12, I don't think I'll stay long here. He comes back with Lungelo and my brothers who have my friend and Nkosi's sister on their rights. I smile as I finally get to see someone familiar. Then Nkosi's friend also gets here with my friend! I couldn't be more happier!

Me: "Zenande? Nandi? Lilitha?" They giggle and sit down next to me.

Nkosi: "Lilitha what are you doing here?" She

looks at Lizwilenkosi who's looking at her. Nkosi follows Lilitha's eyes. "If you think of dating my sister Lizwilenkosi, you will have to deal with me. And you, you'll deal with me." He says looking at Lilitha.

Lilitha: "But Bhut' Muzi I'm old enough now." Nkosi gives her a deadly look and she quickly apologizes. The gentleman sit down while Bongani and Zulu want to laugh.

Me: "Where's my drink Nkosi?"

Nkosi: "It's coming." He brushes my thigh again. The event starts. She welcomes everyone and talks a lot of things until she calls Nkosi to the stage. He kisses my cheek and I look aside, avoiding my brothers. He walks to the podium. "Evening ladies and gentlemen. I hope you're enjoying the night

as I am, together with my wife." There are cheering as he's looking at me. "Sithandwa sami, woza." I gulp down and stand up to fix my dress, I'm nervous because of the stares. I walk to the podium and he meets me halfway. "Ladies and gentlemen, this is my beautiful wife and she's taken. I'm also taken. Thank you." He keeps quiet for a brief moment and looks at me then smiles. "I am not a man of many words and I won't take the credit about this event because I had nothing to do with it. My team worked and saw it important to have this event as it will give growing businesses an opportunity to rupture and be welcomed to the industry. Thank you all for coming. I hope you will all get out of that door with many clients." The audience claps and he holds my waist and we

walk to our table.

"Look at how hard Mr Mkhize is?" I hear some lady talking to another woman while giggling as we pass by their table. I look at Nkosi and he has one hand in his pocket as the other is holding my waist. I look at his groin area and it's true, he's very disappointing.

Me: "Couldn't you at least control yourself Nkosi?" I say and lightly pat his manhood.

Nkosi: "How could I when you have a big butt that's out there and yellow thighs looking at my manhood?" I shake my head and we sit down.

Nandi: "Girl, go to the ladies and help your man. We can't stare at his thing." I giggle lightly and look at Nkosi. He brushes my

thigh and smiles.

Nkosi: "Can't we go home Baby?" He whispers in my ear and I shake my head. I hold his manhood and he blinks rapidly and grabs his lower lip and bits it.

Lilitha: "Bhuti did you see Mom and Dad?"

Nkosi looks at her and nods.

Nkosi: "Yes I did. No I didn't." They all look at him confused, I've his manhood right in my hand. I'm rubbing it and moving my hand up and down while I give it a squeeze. He clears his throat and drinks a juice. "No I didn't Lilitha."

Lilitha: "Are you fine?" Bongani looks at me and chuckles lightly and drinks his juice. I think he knows what I'm doing, I drop Nkosi's manhood and say I'm hungry. Nkosi

looks at me confused, well I've been caught, sorry baby.

Nkosi: "I'm fine. Let me get you something to eat." He raises his hand, everybody is chatting and drinking right now. The guy who was standing with Nkosi comes. I don't know what to order. I look at Nkosi who chuckles. "4 pieces of chicken with a Greek salad and more juice, I'll have a tenderized steak and salad." Everyone places their order but the guy ignores them and walks away. "I need a bathroom." He stands up with hands on his pocket then walks away.

Lilitha: "What's going on with Nkosi?"

Zena: "I didn't know that you call him by his name when he's not present."

Nandi: "Well I don't blame her, nigga is

intimidating."

Me: "So Bhut'Zulu, why did you take Zenande as your date? Because I know that you're not dating her."

Zulu: "Do I need to date her for having her as my date? I mean, there's no possibility of having her as my woman. She's just -" He shakes his head and drinks. Nkosi comes back with the food, I hold his hand and it's cold. I take my food and eat. "When did you start eating this much?" He asks confused and Zena looks at me suspiciously.

Me: "Today, I didn't eat as we were in hurry." I say and continue to eat. I'm not full thou, I hold Nkosi's hand and he looks at me. "Are fries available? I want them." I whisper and he nods. He raises his hands and the guy

comes to his assistant and by then, he's followed by waitresses who have orders.

Lizwi:"Since when do you eat this much Tasha? No wonder you're this big. Nkosi can't say no when you want food. "

Me:"So I'm big? Couldn't you find another cute word?"

Nkosi:"So you would let my sister go thin when she wants food. You would not give it to her? Sithandwa sami, I think we should leave now." Nandi giggle besides me as Bongani also chuckles.

Bongani:"Hope she won't be like last time Nkosi." As if Bongani pressed a button on Nandi, she bursts out and laughs, if Bongani hopes that I won't get paralysed, I guess I will be. Nkosi's guy cokes with a packet of

fries and they stand up.

Nkosi: "Asambe Thando.(Let's leave Thando.)" I stand up and take my bag, we walk in front of the guy, I wave my hand and Nkosi looks at the guy as we are standing at the porch. He takes out car keys and give them to Nkosi. "Find who put the poison in that drink." He nods and we walk to the car and drive off.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

68

Natasha.

I take the fries from the dashboard and eat.

"I hope you won't sleep after you're full because you have to take care of something."

I look at him and chuckle lightly.

Me:"Well I'll sleep if I feel like it, your manhood won't stop it."

Nkosi: "But Thando it's your fault that it's like this."

Me:"No, it's not, it's always like that."

Nkosi:"That's because of you Thando." I look outside the window and chuckle. His cold hand lands on my thigh, he really loves them.

Me:"You pretend like you don't like me to wear revealing clothes while you do."

Nkosi:"Well, I don't want other people

looking at what's mine."

Me: "Why didn't you wait for your parents?"

Nkosi: "I'll see them when I want to Baby, right now I want to focus on you." He squeezes my thigh and brushes it. "You're so warm, I wonder how you're inside." I look at him and give a throat laugh.

Me: "You're always thinking about sex, no wonder your manhood is always ready." He laughs freely and I turn my head and look at him. He's so handsome when he laughs revealing his teeth. "My husband is so handsome." He stops laughing and quickly turn his head to me and looking shocked. I can't help but laugh.

Nkosi: "Stop being weird!" He says cringing and I laugh more, he looks back at the road.

"You should stop laughing or else you'll get choked by those fries."

Me:"You didn't even get a juice for me. You're not romantic."

Nkosi: "I'm the most romantic Zulu man Baby, you also know it. First of all, I proposed you with a ring -" I quickly cut him before he can continue.

Me:"You're horrible Baby, you're not even close to romantic. First of all, you didn't ask me out as a gentleman, you told me. Secondly, you didn't kneel down when you proposed, thirdly you didn't ask me-" He also cuts me off chuckling.

Nkosi:"Let's leave it Sithandwa sami but you know that I'm romantic." I chuckle lightly.

Me:"Keep telling yourself that my love." We

get in and park at the garage. He takes the fries and opens the door of the driver's seat and gets off.

Nkosi: "Asambe.(Let's go.)" I sit over his seat and open my arms wide.

Me:"Pick me up Baby." He looks at me and chuckles. He comes close to me to pick me up. "Put me on the side of your hip Baby." I say grinning.

Nkosi: "I see you think you're a baby."

Me: "Well I am, your baby isn't it?" He looks at me and puts me on his hip then close the door of the car and we get in the kitchen door. I lay my head on his shoulder and he puts the fries on the kitchen counter then takes the stairs. Oh, I'm not ready for what's going to happen now. "Nkosi can we

sleep?" I ask as he closes the door of the bedroom and sits on the bed.

Nkosi: "Well we won't because we have something important to do." He puts me on his thighs then kiss my lips, I don't respond to the kiss. "Usho uma ufuna ngenze lokhu ngingafuni ukwenza. (Say it if you want me to do something that I don't want to.)" He says softly yet warningly. I peck his lips and we kiss again.

He wakes me up in the morning with kisses, I won't and say that I didn't enjoy yesterday because I did. I wake up and look at him, he is suited - grey. I guess he's going to work. "Morning Baby." He greets and I sit up and nod.

Me: "Morning. You're going to work?"

Nkosi: "Yes I am. Let's go and make breakfast, have a bath, I don't want you to slip in the shower and fall. I nod and get ready. When I get back to the bedroom, I find the bed neatly made. I walk to the kitchen and he's on the call because he's talking to someone. "Sure. I'll deal with her accordingly, sharp." He answers and puts the phone on his pocket then turns around. "Oh. You're ready, sit down. Your porridge is halfway. I nod and take yesterday's fries and warm them.

Me:" What will you eat?" He turns and looks at me.

Nkosi: "I'll make a sandwich." I nod and make grease breakfast for him then dish it up.

Me: "Your breakfast is ready, sit down and

eat. What time will you leave?"

Nkosi: "Around 08:00." I nod and he dishes up my porridge. We sit down and eat, once I'm done. I continue with my fries then eat with Nkosi. "Baby why do you eat my breakfast? You had yours mos."

Me: "I'm not really full Baby."

Nkosi: "I'll call the chef in today, she'll serve you as much food you'll want." I nod and eat his russians but he takes it from me. "You can't make breakfast and eat mine love, I'm sorry. It's too nice to be shared." He says eating it while smirking.

Me: "It wasn't needed by me, it's needed by your son!" I say raising my voice and getting off the chair angrily. I take out 6 russian's and warm them.

Nkosi: "I'm sorry Baby, but you should have said it."

Me: "Ohh, so you want me to starve yet you want your son to eat. Fine Nkosiyomuzi!" I say and leave the kitchen. He runs after me.

Nkosi: "Baby I'm sorry, come and eat them." He says trying to catch up with me. I run up the stairs. "Thando don't run! You'll fall!" He says shouting me. I turn and look at him.

Me: "Futsek Nkosiyomuzi! Leave my house!" I shout at him and walk to our bedroom.

Nkosi: "Baby don't shout, your stress levels will be high."

Me: "Fuck you!" I say and bang the door then lock it.

Nkosiyomuzi.

If these are the hormones I'll deal with, then her and I won't get along. I walk to the kitchen and take her russians and walk to our bedroom.

Me:"Baby, here are your russians." I say and wait but instead, I hear soft cries.

"MamKhize open the door and eat." I knock on the door. "Sithandwa sami?" I wait for response but I get none, I look at my watch and it will soon be 8 o'clock. I put the plate down on the floor next to the door and leave for work. "I'm going to work, goodbye." I say and leave with my briefcase and car keys.

"Busi, get the marketing manager here, right now. I also want you." I say to my PA as I pass on his desk. I get in and take out my laptop and cellphone. I call Thando but it rings unanswered, I guess she's mad.

Busi: "Good morning Sir." I look up and they get in.

Me: "How many clients did we score?"

Luyolo: "We scored 9 clients Sir. Only one that wanted us to build a house for him." I nod.

Busi: "You'll be meeting them in a hour Sir, they requested meetings with you."

Me: "All right. I have no more questions to ask, if there's nothing else. You may go."

They nod and get up. I get back to back meetings until it's lunch time. I get up and pack my stuff, I'll pass by KFC and get

Thando her lunchbox. A knock comes through and I welcome the person. I look up and I see Nandipha. This woman will make me die early.

She closes the door and comes to me, I stand

straight and put my hands on my pockets. She takes off the coat she's wearing revealing the black lingerie she's wearing. She catwalks to me slowly and there's nothing I hate more than a woman who sells herself to a man who isn't interested in her. She tries to hold my neck but I remove her hands from me. "What do you want Nandipha? You know that I found out about what you tried to do yet you are here, trying to win me back. Nandipha, get out of my office." I say warningly and authoritative.

Nandipha: "I miss that voice when we have sex, making love, fucking each other." She puts her hands on my chest which I quickly remove.

Me: "Nandipha, out. I'm telling you for the

last time." She looks at me, I don't know how fast she got to my lips but she's busy with them holding my head tight. I pull her off but she bites my lip causing me to groan.

"Fuck you man! Get off me!" I shout and throw her on the couch. "You're stepping over your boundaries Nandipha! I told you that I don't want you! I don't know when did you get sick so much that you'd want to kill my wife but that was the last straw! Get out of my house Nandipha before I do something that I don't want to do to you." She stands up and walks to me.

Nandipha: "What is it that you don't want to do because you have done everything to me! I know you Nkosiyomuzi! I know you in and out! I'm going to ruin things between you and that girl you protect so much! I know things

she doesn't know about you that could make her leave you and you know it! Don't try me Zee!"

Me:"You won't threaten me Nandipha! You're not going to come close to Natasha and tell her everything! I'll ruin you Nandipha!"

Nandipha: "How? I don't have anything to lose Nkosiyomuzi! And I'm not going to lose you over that child! You're are mine and only mine! What you'll do is to cancel that stupid wedding she's planning and marry ke or else I'll tell you about what you do on the side and how you treated me!" She says shouting on top of her lungs, I saw my self slapping her and she flew on the couch and fall onto it.

Me:"I said you won't threaten me. You won't

get close to me or Natasha anymore. Once you pull another stunt, you'll see what I'm capable of. Futsek! Get out!" I say slowly and meaningfully then raise my voice on the last words. She gets up from the couch terrified as always and wears her coat and walk to the door. "Get lost after today. I don't want you in this province." She turns and looks at me then nods and walks out. Fuck! How will I explain getting bitten on my lip to Thando now?

I park on the garage and make my way to the kitchen door with a bag of Thando's food in my hand. I get in and I find her in the kitchen, making lunch. I sigh and sit on the kitchen chair's. "Baby?" She turn and looks at me surprised.

Thando: "Oh, I didn't expect you. Hi." She says looking at her pot which she's steering. "I made chicken stew with dumplings. Go and take a shower and come back."

Me: "I brought you KFC." I say trying to get her attention.

Thando: "Put it on the cupboard. I no longer like it now, but I'll eat it." She says taking out plates. I sigh and get up to take a shower.

Me: "Baby can we talk?" I say as I sit down, I've just taken a shower. I'm not getting back to work.

Thando: "We'll talk after I've eaten." She's been giving me a cold shoulder since I've arrived. She puts a bowl of gravy, 4 slices of dumplings and 4 pieces of chicken in front of

me. I would be squealing if it was another day because it's been months since I haven't ate dumplings. She's not even looking at me when she's talking. I could just say she's tolerating my presence. She gives me warm wet dishcloth to wipe my hands because I've just showered. I take the slice of dumpling and dip it in the gravy. I close my eyes and moan as I'm enjoying it. It's very good, excellent, just the way I like it. Before I know it, I've finished eating. A nice thing gets repeated so, I'm repeating these.

Me:"Baby can I have more?" I ask as I finished drinking the gravy and put the bowl down. She gives me more 2 slices and gravy and I eat. She's also eating,in silence. We finish eating at the sane time and I take the dishes to the sink. I wash them and she dries

and puts them in their places. "Can we talk now?" She nods. Still not looking at me.

"MamKhize, Nandipha came to the office and kissed me." She puts the spoons in the drawers and chuckles. Now I'm left to see her reaction but I get none except for the chuckle. That's what I hate about calm woman. I don't know what she thinks now, maybe she can take the knife and stab me since she's close to it but she doesn't. Calm woman are very dangerous! "Thando?" She looks at me and smiles. Now kill me, why is she smiling?

Thando: "I'm going to take a nap, you can join me." She says and walks out, what was she waiting for then? Why didn't she reply early? No. I won't go to sleep. What if she kills me in my sleep? I'm not ready to die, I still want

to meet my son.

Daily new African novels download here

www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

69

Nkosiyomuzi.

I was busy doing work when Thando came to the lounge, yawning. I didn't join her when she went to sleep, I was scared. "Afternoon, did you eat after lunch?" I shake my head.

Me:"I just ate another pieces of meat."

Thando:"Okay." She walks to the kitchen and I close my laptop and wait for her. She

comes back with the her KFC lunchbox. "I boiled water." She says and keeps quiet for a while as she opens the paperbag. Did she boil the water for me? "I'll make Amasi. Are you good with it?" I sigh in relief, I thought she'll say that she'll burn me with it.

Me:"Yeah. I am, it's been a while since I haven't ate it." She nods and eats the twister.

Thando:"So, tell me about Nandipha. What happened?" She says looking at me, she begins to smile again.

Me:"Thando why are you smiling?" She giggles and points the twister. I've never thought about this but, I regret pregnating Thando a little. The way she behaves now, it's just unusual. "I was about to go out of

the office when she got in and took off her coat revealing her lingerie. She tried to hold me but I'd remove her hands until she got tired and kissed me, that's when I-" I clear my throat and decide to not tell her that I slapped her. "I told her to stay away from us and she must leave the province."

Thando:"So, if she didn't kiss you. What would you have done? Giving the truth that you told her to leave the province as she kissed you."

Me:"I was going to deal with her, nonetheless."
"

Thando: "How did you feel then, seeing your type of woman you like? I mean, the small hips and all. Didn't you get a boner? As always." I shift from the couch

uncomfortable. I look at her and gulp down. "Ngiphendule Nkosiyomuzi. (Answer me.)" I stretch my head.

Me: "Thando I honestly don't know how to answer that." She chuckles and reveals a knife on the paper bag. I quickly get up and rush to the door.

Thando: "Nkosi? Where are you going? What's up?" She says shrugging her shoulders as she cuts the piece of chicken, it's the back piece. "Mi. (Here.)" She says giving me the piece of meat she cutted. "Oho, suit yourself then if you don't want fried meat." She says eating the piece of chicken she was giving me as she saw that I'm not moving from the door to take it. "Oh, the water is boiling, let me take care of it." She

says standing up going to the kitchen, swaying her hips. That's when I notice that she's wearing very short pyjama pants, which are below her butt cheeks. I suddenly feel shiver as she vanishes from the kitchen. I decide to follow her to the kitchen, just want to touch even thou I'm scared. She stirs the meal meal on the pot and turns around. She sees me and smiles, then walk to me, in so nervous. This is so unlike me and I'm sure that she's enjoying this. She takes my hand and walks to the lounge then leads me to the couch. She pushes me on it, if I die today, my ancestors would have never loved me from the start. She gets on top of the me and looks at my bulge over this sweatpant I'm wearing. She takes it out and I quickly look at the table. Oh, the knife is still there, I'd

cry if she'd castrate me. She strokes it and lubes it with her saliva. I want to close my eyes as it feels good but I'm scared, what she she does something crazy. She looks at me and smiles, I just roll my eyes to the back and moan softly yet audible as the pleasure kicks in. She licks my neck and stops, I quickly look at her. She removed the pyjama and sits on top of me, taking me in, fuck! She's hot! Tight! Even thou she's too tight. My eyes close involuntarily and she moves her waist, up and down, slowly. I sink in the couch and hold her hips, she's soft! She ups her pace and the pleasure I'm feeling! You get too much pleasure than intended when you're below and getting worked, right now, she's working me. I put my hands on my head as I don't know what to do with them. She

humps fast and I feel my self getting deep in heat, I move my waist below her and meet her halfway with the strokes, fuck! She's shout to cum, her virginal heat gets too much and her walks tighten around me. She moves more fast and I help her by moving my waist, I'm also building up. Her moans get loud and loud and loud as she's about to come. Can't help my self but moan as she feels soo hot! She cums and humps twice before she gets up. I open my eyes and I see her wearing her pyjama. What? She walks to the kitchen and I also stand up with my manhood dangling over my sweatpants.

Me: "Thando let's go and finish what we started."

Thando:"I finished what I started, go and

start yours too. Mi. (Here.)" She says giving me pack of ice. "Put it over your length to cool down, the pap is about to be ready." This woman is unbelievable! "You want me to out it on my own?" She says walking to me, she puts the ice on my manhood and I quickly push them as it feels cold on it. "See? It's sleeping again now. It won't bother you again. Come, let's go and dish up." I look at her unbelievably. She takes my manhood and puts it in the sweatpants. "Done!" I married a psycho here. She giggles and washes her hands then dishes up. "Come and eat, I'm already full. I'm going back to sleep since it's at night now, the time is already 7 o'clock."

Me: "Thando didn't your parents tell you to not starve me?"

Thando:"Well I am not. See? I cooked and the food is ready. Goodnight. "

Me:"Milisuthando. Why did you deprive me climax?" She walks to me smiling. She massages my manhood and it wakes up again.

Thando:"If you say I'm depriving you climax, then give yourself a climax." She says and walks away. I'm so stunned! Left in awe and horny more than anything! I put the food in the fridge, I'll eat when I've reached my climax. I can't , Thando must not shit on me. I walk to our bedroom and I find her naked on bed, with her butt out there. I also get naked and I slip in after her then up her butt so I can penetrate. "You won't do what you're thinking of doing Nkosiyomuzi, not while you have Nandipha to deal with. Leave

my butt alone and sleep." What?!

Me:"How will I sleep when it's like this Thando?"

Thando:"You'll put ice over it Baby, it will heal."

Me:"Thando you do know that you'll give me a drop. You can't let me penetrate in you then you deprive me the right to cum."

Thando: "Then use your hands. They work right?"

Me: "Uyasangana! Not nginomfazi engambhadalela inkomo ezingamashumi amabini anesikhombisa. (You're crazy. Not when I have a wife that I paid 27 cows for.)" I say and hold her butt again, ready to penetrate.

Thando:"Nkosiyomuzi! Leave what you're doing!" She says raising her voice. I click my tounge and get off the bed and wear my underwear, blue faded jean, navy t-shirt and half boot. I puff my cologne and Thando gets up, I'm very frustrated and mad. Thando can't deprive me the right to have sex with her just because she wants me to deal with Nandipha whom I've already dealt with.

"Nkosiyomuzi where do you think you're going?"

Me:"To get what you deprive me." I say and take my Range Rover Velar car keys.

Thando:"If you dare to cheat Nkosiyomuzi! You'll find me out of here. I'm telling you!"

Me:"What do you want me to do then because I already dealt with Nandipha! I

even regret pregnating you right now because you were'nt like this before! " I reply and leave the room.

Natasha.

He bangs the door and soon enough, I hear his car roaring outside and it drives off. I exhale and sleep, I'm done with Nkosi and Nandipha's saga right now. In the wee hours of the night, I feel his presence in the room, he's coming from a club judging by the smoke and alcohol I inhale. I get back to sleep.

Early in the morning, I wake up and and take a bath then wear my flawless dress and sandals then request a uber and go to Zenande's house.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

70

Nkosiyomuzi.

I wake up around 11 o'clock, I look besides me and I don't see Thando. I sigh and take a shower then go downstairs, I think I'll find breakfast displayed on the kitchen counter but by the look of things, nothing has been touched here. I make breakfast for my self and eat while trying to call Milisuthando but it doesn't ring. I sigh and wash the dish. Now I do know what to do, I go to her closet and I find her clothes, that's a relief. I guess I'll go to work then.

I get back from work around 6 and find the chef cooking while talking with the helper.

"Is my wife home?" I ask them but they shake their heads. I walk upstairs and change then try to call her again, still it doesn't ring. I decide to call Nandi to see if she's with her.

Nandi:"Hey hulk."

Me:"Is Thando with you?"

Nandi:"No, she's not." I hear Bongani's voice in the background. I guess she didn't visit her, I hang up and go downstairs then eat. I wait for her up until 10 o'clock but still, she doesn't arrive. I take my keys and drive to her apartment. The lights are off, I knock and wait for a while. Pearl opens.

Pearl:"Hi, come in. "

Me:"No, I'm not staying. Is Thando with you?"

Pearl:"No, she's not. Check Nandi or Zenande."
"

Me:"Can you please give me her address?"

She gets inside and gives me a paper with the address. "Sure." I walk to my car and drive to Zenande's. I hoot and the gate opens, I knock on the door and Thando opens wearing an underwear only. "Go and wear your clothes. We're going." She looks at me and closes the door. I open it and get in, the house is warm and I find them sitting on the floor, on top of pillows, feasting on a cake and junk food. Restaurant paperbags on the table. Zenande looks at me.

Zenande: "Oh, hey Nkosi."

Me:"Hi. Thando let's leave."

Thando: "I'm not going anywhere Nkosiyomuzi." She says and takes Steer's and eats.

Zenande: "Just go with him Thando, you'll sleepover on another day." She looks at her and continues to eat then watches the movie.

Me:"Zenande please go and get her clothes." She doesn't hesitate, she stands up and leave. "Thando." I call out her name but she doesn't mind me, Zenande comes with her dress and sandals and gives them to Thando. She just look at them and continues to eat.

Zenande:"Please stop being stubborn and go with him Tash." She says giving her the clothes. She takes the dress and wears it.

"You can go with your food, take care of my

son please." Oh, I guess she told her about her pregnancy. Thando smiles and takes Steer's and 2 slices of pizza.

Thando:"Bye." Zenande smiles and we go out.

Me:"Why did you leave all day? Without telling me where you're going?" She opens the back door and gets in. "Since when do you sit on the backseat?" She eats and ignores me. I sigh and drive off. She's the first to get off when I park in the garage. This is going to be a long night, I get in our bedroom but I don't see her. I check her closet and bathroom but still, she's not there. I go to the far end of the passage and try to open the guestroom but it's locked. "Thando!" I knock but she doesn't answer.

Natasha.

Four days passed without talking to Nkosi or anything, I stayed in the guestroom all the time. I'd eat when he knocks on the door and say that he has food then I'd wait for 30 minutes, estimating that he's really gone. He would beg me to open up when he comes to give me the food or say that I should go out, he wants to bond with his son but I wouldn't because I knew that he actually wanted to see me. "Baby, I've come with your food. Open up." I keep quiet but he knock again. "Thando please open up Sithandwa sami, I dealt with Nandipha now, I promise you, she'll never bother us again. She'll never come after me, she even left the province. I made sure of that." I keep quiet and get up and walk to the window. I open it and the warm fresh air caresses my face. I inhale it

and I feel my self calming down. It stays quiet for a short period of time until he calls me again. "MamKhize vula is' capha.

Ngiyakukhumbula. (Open the door. I miss you.)" I open the curtain and go to the bathroom to take a shower. It's very hot today, I might as well get naked all day. I use the toiletries that stay here and lotion then make up the bed, it's been over a hour now, I might as well open the door. I walk to it and unlock then open it, I find Nkosi sitting on the floor, looking at the door with a hopeful expression. He looks up and quickly gets up then hug me. "Oh Baby, I missed you so much." He says squeezing my body, around my shoulders. He kisses my head and hugs me tight. "Kodwa Sithandwa sami ungenzani?(But My love what are you doing to me?) You want

to send me to my grave early?" I mentally roll my eyes. He's really hugging me tight, like I'd escape or something. He finally pulls away from the hug and looks at me. He takes off his t-shirt and cloths me then looks at me worriedly. "Weren't you cold since you don't have clothes to wear? I'm sure you're hungry. Come let's go and eat." He picks up the food and holds my hand and we walk to the kitchen. He puts the food down and feeds me, I let him be. "Are you full? Let me get you a yogurt." He takes out a yogurt and feeds me until I finish it. "Baby?" I look at him.

Me: "Yes?"

Nkosi: "I'm sorry Sithandwa sami. I know that I should have dealt with Nandipha the

moment she stepped in our home. She shouldn't have slept over or even talked to you. I'm sorry that you had to avoid me until I dealt with her. From now on, she'll never be a part of our lives. I'm sorry that you had to do the hard thing for us which is staying away from me until I had to deal with her. I'm also sorry for the day that I went out at night to a club and got angry instead of talking to you like an adult. I promise you, I didn't do anything promiscuous that night. I'm sorry MamKhize. Ngiyaxolisa, ngicela ungixolele." He's so nervous, you could tell by his voice and his expression. He's counting his words.

Me:"You better not do something like that Nkosiyomuzi or else I'll do something worse than staying in that room for 4 days. You'll

see."

Nkosi: "I won't Baby, I won't. I promise." He says grateful, kissing my hands and my ring.

"May I kiss you?" He asks hopefully yet nervous. I must say I love this nervous Nkosi.

I want to play hard to get but truthfully, I miss his lips. I look at him and nod. He grin and holds my waist then kiss me, I really missed his soft and passionate kiss. I hold the back of his head and pull him close.

"Let's do an outdoor activity." He says after pulling out.

Me: "Which activity?"

Nkosi: "I'll teach you how to play golf. Let's go and change first." He says picking me up from the chair, putting me on his hip. I grin as I enjoy this treatment. "You better enjoy

it while it lasts." He says causing me to laugh. I really should enjoy it while I can because he's not always like this. I had never imagined him as a soft guy that he is right now. He puts the down and I take off his t-shirt. He pulls me to him by my waist and brushes my rummy. "He's growing." He really is, my tummy might show in 3 weeks. Have to buy flawless dresses which will hide my stomach. I can't wear hoodies to cover it up as it's still summer. I'll be five months in January, hopefully by then, it won't be big. "When will he start to kick or move?"

Me:"He moved last night. It wasn't something big, just a small and short movement then after, he didn't move. I don't know then she he will start to kick."

Nkosi: "Any morning sickness?" I shake my head.

Me:"Nope, still the same old Thando. No vomiting or nausea."

Nkosi: "Alright. I guess he's treating you good." He rubs it and gives me a peck. "Do you think he'll take after me?" I giggle and shake my head.

Me:"I doubt, he might look like your father since his children look a lot like him. I also think I'll have a thin son, since your siblings are thin, well except for you."

Nkosi: "But I want him to look like me, take after me."

Me:"Well I wish for a daughter, I could do with a mini me, thick and all."

Nkosi: "Ha! You want my daughter to be thick so that she'll grow fast? No I don't want that because she'll have a big bum like yours which will attract boys and I don't want my daughter to date. At all, I want her to be single until she dies." I laugh at him and just as I'm about to reply, my phone rings. Nkosi takes it and looks at the ID caller. "Ma?" He gives me the phone.

Me: "Hello Ma?"

Ma: "Hello Sisi, how are you? I've been meaning to call you but I didn't have time."

Me: "I'm fine Ma, we all are."

Ma: "I was asking about you and my grandson not that small headed boy."

Me: "Grandson Ma?"

Ma: "You don't know yet? Oh, I'm sorry." I look at Nkosi confused. He shrug and mouths a 'what?'

Me: "Um Ma." I clear my throat and put the phone in loudspeaker.

Ma: "I didn't know that you haven't found out yet. Oh, I have to go." She hangs up and I open my mouth and close it again. I'm speechless.

Nkosi: "What's wrong Baby?"

Me: "Why do you always assume that something is wrong? Ma knows that I'm pregnant. Did you tell her Nkosi?"

Nkosi: "What? No I don't and I guess that I'll also tell my best friend since you already told yours about our baby."

Me: "Then how did she find out? Nkosi I didn't want our parents to know about my pregnancy yet."

Nkosi: "I'll tell her to not tell anyone okay?"
I nod and look at my ring.

Me: "Do you think that by my wedding, my tummy will show?"

Nkosi: "It will Baby, since you had a small waist people will suspect pregnancy."

Me: "This is not how I planned my wedding thou!" I whine and close my eyes, I feel the urge to cry. I sniff away my tears and stand up. "I'll go and change into a legging."

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

71

Natasha.

Nkosi finds me in the closet wearing the legging, he takes my takkies and makes me them. He ties the shoelaces and ties my weave. "You're fine?" I look at him and nod.

Me: "Yeah I am. Let's go." He looks worried, he pulls me to his side and holds my shoulder as we go downstairs. "Where is the helper and chef?"

Nkosi: "Day off."

Me: "You give them many day offs."

Nkosi: "I could let them witness our fight."

Okay. We walk to the golf course. He

teaches me how to play it but honestly, I find nothing fun here.

Me:"Nkosi this thing is boring." He chuckles and looks at me.

Nkosi: "It's because you're uninterested Thando. Okay, what do you want us to do then?"

Me:"A picnic in the garden would be fine. And besides, it's sunny here outside." Just as he's about to reply, his phone beeps. He takes it out and I sigh tiredly and look at him.

Nkosi:"Sorry Baby." He reads his message and looks at me. "We have to go to KZN Baby, we'll drive. Ma says it's Olo's and Baba's birthday party. Tomorrow." I'm so lazy! How will I be when I'm there? I won't even get to

sleep. I whine inwardly.

Me: "Okay."

Nkosi: "You'll still get your sleep Baby. Don't worry, let's go." I look at him, I wish to cry. "Come here." He hugs me tightly and I hug him back. He kisses my forehead. "Let's go so we'll arrive early." We walk back to the house.

Me: "So, I'll sleep back to your house right?"

Nkosi: "Of course, you're my wife now isn't it? So we'll sleep together and Baby I'm horny now, I've been trying to control myself but I'm sorry Baby I can't. Especially with this legging holding you so tight and right, look at you butt, your thighs, your waist. I've been trying so hard to not bend you down and have my self inside you." I look at him and

laugh, is he actually whining? I look at his groin area and there's a bulge. I look back at him and continue to laugh and walk away.

"Baby?" I look at him, he gives me puppy eyes. I can't help but laugh at him because as the serious person he gets to be, he shouldn't be like this. It's so unlike him.

Me: "We'll get late love. Let's go, we have to pack remember. "

Nkosi: "I don't have to pack because I have clothes there. Sithandwa sami we'll have a quicky." I laugh and look at him.

Me: "You mean a 30 minutes quicky right?"

Nkosi: "It's not my fault that I take time to building up thou Sithandwa sami." I giggle and walk away, I open the door and walk upstairs.

"Baby?" I bend on the stairs and look at him,

he grins and hurries to me while unbuckling his chino pant, I get up laughing and run to our bedroom, I love teasing him around. I get to the room and take off my top as he comes. "Kodwa MamKhize?" I smile and take off my legging and walk to the closet to pack clothes. He follows soon, naked.

Me:"You will change? Okay, let me take out clothes for you."

Nkosi:"But I thought that we'll have sex here." I look at his manhood as it dances pointing upwards, it's banana like positioned. I take out his short tight brief and jean with t-shirt.

Me:"Here, I'll also wear." I say wearing my long yellow polka dot dress that he brought for me. I take out a suitcase. "How long will

we stay?" He looks at me sulking, my poor husband. "Baba?" I say softening him. He blushes and clicks his tongue.

Nkosi: "Lapho ngikuthole khona Sithandwa sami, uyomemeza kabuhlungu ngiyakutshela. (When I got you my love, you'll cry painfully I'm telling you.) While panting." He says softly warning. I look at him, I know he'll do it but I was teasing him.

Me:"But Baby I was teasing you, I would have let you." He chuckles and shakes his head.

Nkosi:"No, I'll heal." He stands up and wears his clothes. "We might stay for a long time, the suitcase is fine." I no longer find this funny anymore. I walk to him and put my hands on his face, standing with my toes. His body reacts to my touch, his skin gets

goosebumps but he looks at me blankly.

Me:"Baba." His eyes soften but he looks away and turns to look at me again, with a straight face and blank eyes. This might be hard, I slowly get close to his lips, looking him straight in the eye. I reach them and plant a kiss, looking at him. Still nothing. I kiss him again but he doesn't respond, his eyes slowly close but he opens them, my plan is working. I trail my hand on his back and deepen the kiss then massage his manhood. His eyes close and he kisses me back and grabs my butt roughly and hard, ouch. He kisses me hungrily and leads the kiss, he pins me on the wall while carrying me, with my legs tightly wrapped around his waist. He moves the dress up and I gasp as I feel his manhood thrusting in. I push his abdomen but he pins

my hands on the wall with his huge hand.

Nkosi: "What should I pack for you?" He asks as he's packing clothes for us. I'm lying on the long ottoman that's in the middle of the closet, I'm glad I managed to get Nkosi to have sex with me today or else, I don't want to think about it.

Me:"Anything that will cover my body, don't forget the white dress that's decent." I sit up and look at him, he's happy with his self and I know that we're late. We might arrive in KZN at night. I standup and wear my fluffy sleepers then help him pack.

Nkosi: "Hurry up with the toiletries Thando. You know that we're late." He shouts as I pack toiletries in the bathroom.

Me:"Whose fault is it?"

Nkosi: "It's yours, I didn't say that you should have a hot pot." I sigh and walk to the bedroom and put the toiletries in the suitcase. He wheels it downstairs. "What should I make for you?"

Me: "I'll just pack fruit and snacks so that we don't stop all the time." I take a coolbox and pack a juice, snacks, yoghurt and lot's of fruit. I make a quick sandwich and put it in a big container then go to the car. I give him the box and get in then we drive off. I could sleep right now. "I'm gonna sleep, I'm tired."

Nkosi: "You always get tired after our sessions."

Me: "That's because you get a lot of energy when we get to our sessions and I think it's because of your workouts. You should stop

attending the gym now."

Nkosi: "Maybe if we work out together you might also be hyperactive during the sessions."

Me: "Me and gym? Sorry Baby." I make the seat to lie and I roll my self on it and turn to look at Nkosi.

Nkosi: "Are you really sleeping Sthandwa sami?" I nod.

Me: "I'm drained love, I'm sorry." I close my eyes.

I wake up due to a gentle shake, I open my eyes and they land on Nkosi. I yawn and sit up then look around, we're still on the road. "Where are we and why did you wake me up?"

Nkosi: "Your stomach is grumbling meaning

my son is hungry so get up and eat." He opens the door and locks it then walks to the boot. It's in the afternoon and by look of things, I can say that we're in Durban. He comes back with the cooler box and I take a t the sandwiches and give him his. We eat and I drink the juice then give it to him when I'm done, I forgot tumblers. I burp and lye on my back. "I heard that a pregnant woman has sleeping positions and laying with the back is not good so Baby, lye with your side." He says after drinking the juice. I take grapes and eat then he puts the box in the backseat.

Me: "Well I don't think we'll get along if I don't get to do what I like."

Nkosi: "It's not about that Baby, it's about my son so lye right or seat up." He says

patting my thigh and turns on the ignition. We talk about a lot of things until we get there by 19:49 which is the time he drives in at his home. He parks near his house and turns off the ignition. "And we're finally home my love." I sigh and look up, I'm not ready and I hope that there's no one new who came here. It's starting to be dark but not too much, we get off and walk to the main house, hand in hand. Nkosi gets in without knocking and his mother gets up from the couch she was seating on.

Ma:"I thought about calling you and asking where you're now but I decided to not since you don't like being called when driving a long distance. She first hugs me tightly and squeeze. "I hope my grandson is fine." She whispers in my ear then passes to Nkosi who

gladly accepts the hug even though it started from me. A high spirited Lolwethu comes down the staircase and looks at us. She screams and runs to us.

Olo: "Mami!" She says excitedly and hugs me. "I thought that you'll be in Jo'burg during my birthday, I'm happy that you're here. Now I'll have the happiest birthday of them all."

Nkosi: "And you'll get it if you hug me too." He says and Olo giggles and hugs Nkosi.

Olo: "Sawubona Baba." She greets hugging Nkosi tight, it's always a good sight to see. My eyes travel around the living room and they land on Nkosi's father, I walk to him and how slightly bow before him.

Me: "Sawubona Baba." I greet him humbly

looking down, avoiding eye contact. I'm glad that Nkosi didn't forget my headwraps when he was packing for me.

Baba:"Sawubona MaZulu."

Me:"Ukahle Baba?"

Baba:"Ngikahle MaZulu, ngiyabonga. Akukho sidingo sokuthi ngikubuze ngoba ngiyabona ukuthi ukahle futhi ukhuluphele kunakuqala.

(I'm well MaZulu, thank you. There's no need for me to ask you because I see that you're well and gained more weight.) I see you and Nkosi are treating each other good because he's also good, very good." He says and to say that I'm surprised by his behavior would be a lie.

Me:"Ngiyabonga kakhulu Baba." I turn and look at Nkosi who's smiling widely.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

72

Natasha.

Ma: "Sit down, we've just ate dinner but I'll dish up for you." I'm tired, I'm lazy but I won't sit down. I'm a daughter in law here and what kind if wife would I be? She walks to the kitchen and I follow her.

Nkosi: "Baby." He says softly and I turn back to him and smile. I help Ma to dish up.

Me: "Does Baba know about?" I say with a shrug.

Ma:"No, he doesn't. He knows nothing, nobody knows it except for us and Nkosi."

Me:"Then what about the sudden change?"
She shrugs and give me a plate.

Ma:"It's Nkosi's plate." I look at the amount of chicken and look back at her. "He loves chicken, he never gets tired of it, especially poultry chicken." No wonder he ate all the chicken when I cooked his favourite meal. I chuckle and take the plate to him. I put it near him and hurry to the kitchen and take a dish together with a dishcloth then walk to him. He washes his hands and takes the dishcloth then I give him his food. I walk back to the kitchen and also wash my hands then walk to the living room and eat.

Baba:"Is MaZulu doing this back at him?"

Because my wife doesn't, he last did it back in my home when she stayed there for a month. "

Nkosi: "Yes she still does Baba, will she also stay here for a month?"

Baba:"It's all up to my wife."

Me: "Olo, are you happy about your birthday?"

Olo:"I'm very happy! I hope I have presents for tomorrow!" She says excitedly and I look at Nkosi. I didn't have time to buy presents for her. Nkosi smiles and squeezes my hand.

Nkosi:"Yes Baby, you have them." He says and smiles, Lolwethu smiles and nods happily then looks at me.

Olo:"What do you have for me Mami?"

Ma:"Cha Olo, Nkosi and his wife should rest, they had a long journey. You can go to sleep." She says looking at me and I nod.

Nkosi:"Where are the others? "

Ma:"You know youngsters, they're busy grooving." I chuckle and nod, it's Friday after all. I take Nkosi's plate and wash it in the kitchen. When I'm done, I say my goodbyes and go to Nkosi's house. I take a quick shower as I want to prepare a surprise for Nkosi. I wear my sleepers and walk to the room to lotion and Nkosi walks in. What a bummer! I wanted to wear a sexy lingerie and have a goodnight with him since I don't think that he'll get sex tomorrow. He grins when he looks at my body and closes the door then walks to me. I don't even have a towel

wrapped around my body, my body is even wet.

Nkosi: "So Baby-" He says seductively walking to me. He stands in front of me and touches my body, I shiver a little and look at him, he's so tall, it's better when I'm wearing heels. He holds my waist and pulls me close to him and kisses my body. "We are going to have sessions right?" I smile and stand on my toes then pull his face to me, he bends a little then picks me up. I scream a little, shocked. I kiss him passionately and he grips on my butt and walks, he responds and caresses my back, he stops walking and my back collides with the wall and I gasp as it is cold, I arc my back forward and grip on his big strong shoulders as. "Sorry Baby." He says in between the kiss and kisses me

hungrily, lustfully and deep. I moan and he stops caressing my back, I suddenly feel a push in my womanhood, I gasp as he pushes in again strong, my walls expands and welcome him. When he's fully in, they contract and milk him. He moans softly and traces his kisses to my neck, I tilt it to the side, giving him more access. He gladly kisses it and licks it, I squeeze my thighs as I feel wet. He starts thrusting in and out and I hang my legs as I feel pleasure in his movement, I moan softly and he holds my thighs in place. "Uhhhha!" He groans deep in his thick bold voice as he thrusts deep, sucking my neck.

Me:"Ah, ouch." I whimper as it pains and push his abdomen back

Nkosi:"Fuck! You're so hot!" He says groaning

while thrusting in too deep and slow.

Me: "Not too deep!" I whisper pushing his abdomen back as it pains but feeling a little pleasure.

Nkosi: "The mo- Ah!" He groans deep and bites my neck gently. "The more I go deep Baby is the more I feel this kind of warmness, the one that I'm looking for." He digs in deep again, biting my neck and shaking his head and I jump up as I feel him trying to enter my womb

Me: "Don't go too deep!" I say more audible while pushing his abdomen back. I think this position gives him more access to dig in deep. He spreads my wide open and thrusts in, slowly but increasing his pace a little. I bite my lip hard as he moves his waist to the left

and starts hitting it in a different wall, I feel my toes curling , I know I'll cum anytime when he's doing it like this. I arch my back forward to his chest and push his butt in. He picks up his pace and thrusts in fast and less deep and twists his small waist to hit another wall. "Yheah, yes Baby. Yes! Yes! Just like that! Yeah!" I moan loud, oh my god! I'm going to cum! I'm going to cum! I feel the urge to push! "Nkosi!" I scream and push but nothing comes out! I get frustrated! So frustrated! I also move my waist and meet his thrusts, I feel him smiling on my shoulder, he walks to the bed and throws his self on in and goes deeper! He moves my waist up and holds my butt and moves it up and down, I also help him and Uhm! "Yes! Yes yes!" I moan and I feel the urge to pee, I put my feet on

his thighs and hands on his chest and arch my back then move my waist. "Yes!"

Nkosi:"Pace up Baby!" I sit on him with legs on the bed and hands back on his thighs with my back arched forward. I move my waist fast and he also helps me, I feel his hand on my womanhood, rubbing my clitoris vigorously, I'm about to cum! I can feel it! It's heavy! I groan and move more faster as Nkosi also moves faster, he taps the spot! Oh my god I'm about to cum! I close my eyes tightly and soon enough my thighs clap together and before I know it, I squirt on Nkosi.

Me:"Ahhhhh! Yees! Oh my God!" I exclaim as I feel it cumming more hard, I move away from Nkosi and lay on my back, squirting, breathing heavily and panting. I feel Nkosi's

hand back to my clitoris, rubbing it vigorously!
"Oh no no no no ! Nkosi stop!" I cry loudly! I
can't bear this pleasure anymore! I move
from the bed and fall down on the floor,
Nkosi makes me lye with my back and thrusts
in again, I'm defeated! "Nkosi please! Please
stop!" I say trying to run away from him but
I can't, again he taps on the spot! Oh God,
Nkosi is going to be the death of me. I hold
my tummy tightly and Nkosi quickly removes
them and pins them on the floor, this time, I
cum. "AHHHHHHH!" I scream hard trying to
up when the orgasm hits me. Nkosi pants on
top of me while breathing heavily, I open my
eyes and look at him, he's sweating, he rolls
his small eyes to the back and arcs his back
forward before growling loud with veins on
his body. He holds my shoulders and shifts

me to him, digging in too deep, he then gives me long deep strokes when he cums for about minutes. He stops and opens his eyes and collapses on top of me. I've never had something like this, I've never felt this way. Even on the first 9 rounds we had on our first intercourse, even on today's 4 rounds, I didn't feel this. I close my eyes and let my body relax, my walls are milking him dry.

Nkosi: "This was-" he says still breathing heavily on my neck, "Ecstatic. More than words could ever describe." I'm so sweaty, we both are. "Our baby will come out strong and healthy if we keep on doing like this." We both laugh and he gets up and picks me up, the room immediately smells dirty and stuffy. I look at the floor and I'm speechless, I look at Nkosi and he laughs. "Let's open the

windows while we go and take a shower."

Me:"An innocent shower please." He laughs again and opens the windows while I go and take a shower, he joins me in few seconds and we wash each others bodies. "I remember when I couldn't look at your manhood." I say muffling a laugh. He looks at me and bursts, I join him .

Nkosi: "You were so dramatic and I'm glad that I was patient with you." He says still laughing.

Me:"If you were me, you'd also be afraid, especially with the type of manhood you have." He quickly pulls me to him and holds my waist.

Nkosi: "What type of manhood do I have?"

Me:"The delicious and marvelous manhood

Baby, don't worry but the way it's shaped!" I say and laugh again.

Nkosi: "If you'll make fun and laugh at my manhood, then you won't get it again."

Me: "Even if you'd be absent, I won't suffer because there would be a banana in the house." He laughs and spanks my butt and it immediately stings. "Ouch!"

Nkosi: "Let's get out of here." He powers off the shower and we drive our bodies and lotion then get into bed after removing all the blankets and taking a bedsheet on the closer. "Let me go and close the windows before I forget." He says jumping up to close the window and get into bed. He shifts my body to his and kisses my cheek. "Goodnight my love. I love you." It's been few hours

since I heard that, everyday when I locked myself in the guestroom he'd always say "I love you MamKhize." And go away.

Me:"I love you too Mumbomhlophe."

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

73

Natasha.

Early in the morning, I wake up get take a shower, I lotion my body and when I lotion my butt, I notice Nkosi's five fingers, the

spank he gave me last night. I chuckle and finish up, I look myself in the mirror and notice love bites all over my neck and to my shoulder then down to my breast but on top of it. I look for clothes that will cover the bites on my neck but I get none, I take Nkosi's t-shirt and wear it with a pleated skirt then wear the sleepers. I clean the floor and take the wet duvet to the laundry room and shove it in a washing machine then walk to the main house. I quickly make an English breakfast, well a buffet and just as I'm about to set up the table, Nkosi's mother comes downstairs.

Ma: "Good morning Milisa, you shouldn't have made breakfast this early. It's close to 8 o'clock now, what time did you wake up?" She asks helping me.

Me:"I don't know Ma, I just woke up and made everyone breakfast." I walk to the kitchen and dish everything in serving bowls then put them in the dining room with the help of Nkosi's mother.

Ma:"What's this?" She says touching my neck, I quickly hide it and walk to the kitchen. She follows me. "You don't have to be shy, I wondered why are you wearing Nkosi's shirt. Don't worry, I gave a dress that will cover your neck."

Me:"But Ma, it won't fit, you're slim."

Ma:"It stretches dear, don't worry." I nod and continue with what I'm doing. "Let me go and wake everyone up." She says walking away and I take out the juice and walk to the dining room. Everyone comes downstairs and

Ma calls me up. I walk to her room and she gives me a navy dress, I wear it with struggle, it stretches but the size is too small. I pull it down and it's knee length to me, it's tight around my waist and if someone would stare my tummy, she would say that I'm pregnant. We walk downstairs and Nkosi comes in the dining room.

Nkosi: "I wake up early in the morning hoping to find my wife next to me but no I don't, she's here, making breakfast." I sit down and Nkosi sits next to me, everyone is quiet.

"What time did you woke up Thando? Because by this time you would have been in bed, sleeping." I hold Nkosi hand and look at him, his family will be suspicious if he behaves like this.

Me:"I couldn't find sleep so I decided to come and make breakfast." He looks at me and keeps quiet. "Good morning everyone, Happy birthday Baba. Happy birthday Olo." I say avoiding Nkosi.

Family: "Good morning."

Olo:"Well my birthday has long passed, even my dad's but Mom said we should combine them since I was writing in October so, say Happy belated." I look at Nkosi who looks down, I guess he forgot it.

Me:"Sorry Baby, I didn't know."

Olo:"Nope, it's cool. I understand that Baba is now married and you got all of his attention so, don't worry." She says freely. I'm about to reply when her mother talks.

Ma:"Oh Elethu, first week of December I'll

leave for Uthukela. To prepare for the wedding." She announces looking around the table, I guess it's the time for her to leave for Drakensberg. Maybe I'll also leave, next of next week but when everything for the wedding is done. I haven't found a wedding dress, venue or anything and the wedding is around the corner. I have to pull my socks up when I get to Jo'burg. Nkosi's siblings are very quiet, they're all nursing hangovers, you could see that they don't want to be here.

Nkosi: "Olo, go and take my wallet in my room. If there's anything that you need Dear, don't hesitate" He commands, chewing his food then takes a sip on a juice.

Ma:"After you're done eating my daughter. Trust me I wouldn't, it's your wedding after

all." She says daring at Nkosi who chuckles and dishes up another plate. I take a bite on my croissant, chew then swallow and I immediately get a terrible heartburn and feel a something happening at the pit of my stomach. I quickly take a juice and gulp it, then feel Nkosi's eyes on me.

Nkosi:"Hey baby, are you alright?" I frown suddenly feeling nauseous and he gives me a glass of water, I feel something strong trying to come out and I immediately run towards the bathroom which is luckily near. Nkosi runs after me and I fall on my knees in front of the toilet seat and vomit. "I'm sorry Baby, I'm sorry." He says brushing my back, I burp and the whole food from yesterday just comes out again. It hurts to vomit, it really does. After what feels like forever, I

stop and Nkosi gives me a glass of water. I clear my mouth with it and drink the rest then stand up, with the help of him. "I think that you should stay in bed." I wipe my lips and shake my head.

Me: "It won't be necessary. I guess the morning sickness is starting to kick in." I say and bend my back, balancing my hands on my knees. I've got no energy left in me.

Nkosi: "But you're powerless, let me carry you to bed." He says already by my side, he puts me on top of his bed, I ran to his bedroom after all. He feels my temperature, I know that I'm not hot. "Aren't you hungry? Maybe I should make you a fruit salad." I shake my head.

Me: "I don't think that I can stomach

anything, I should also go and clean up the table, I'm sure that everyone is done." I say trying to get up but he pulls me back to bed.

Nkosi: "Thando you're not well, you're tired and you should be asleep by now, you tend to forget that you shouldn't work your self hard."

Me: "But Nkosi your father doesn't know that I'm pregnant, your family doesn't so they'll see me as if I'm lazy. "

Nkosi: "I don't care about what they think of you Milisuthando! You're my wife and you'll listen to me because that is my child that you're carrying. I can't take risks when it comes to him." He says sternly, no commands to me and I keep quiet and look at him. He puts his hand down as it's finger was pointing

me. "Stop being stubborn, please. Think about my son."

Me: "But Nkosi it's just a morning sickness."

Nkosi: "A sickness meaning it's serious." He points out, I'm not going to back down, he might as well forget.

Me: "A temporary "Morning" Nkosi, "Morning" sickness meaning it will fade away." I reply and quickly stand up then walk away.

Nkosi: "Milisuthando!" He shouts behind me but I'm already on my way to the dining room.

Me: "I'm sorry, I had a heartburn." I say and pack the plates.

Nkosi: "Hayi cha, ngiyahluleka! Ukushada umuntu onekhanda eliqinile! Athi ngiyobhema.

(No, I fail. Marrying someone hard headed! Let me go and smoke.)" He says walking away and his father laughs.

Baba:"You were right about Milisa. He's good for Nkosi." I walk away and leave them talking then Lolwethu follows me with the dishes.

Olo:"Dad is asking for you." I put them in a sink and walk back to them.

Baba:"Please go and call Nkosiyomuzi for me." I nod and walk away, I find Nkosi smoking in his office, those big cigarettes.

Me:" Your father is calling you." He looks at me and continues, I once said that Nkosi's lips look like he's smoking and I said that I'll ask him but I forgot. He pressures the cigarette in something that looks like a bow

but it's small then stands up.

Nkosi: "Let's go." I walk in front of him and when we reach the lounge, near the couches, he suddenly bends my waist and pulls up my dress, well his mother's dress.

Me: "Nkosi what are you doing?!" I asks raising my voice but it's too late because I feel him trying to insert his self in. "Nkosi your father is calling you! This is just a waste of time!" He finally inserts his self in and groans.

Nkosi: "I'll be quick!" He says panting, already thrusting in and out. He bends my waist more further, making my chest lye flat on the couch.

Me: "Nkosi ou!" I exclaim trying to get up when he gets in deep. "Not deep!" He holds

my hands and pin them on my back with his hand then pressures me to get down while the other is spanking my butt and pulling it to him. He groans deeply and loudly, too loud while thrusting in fast. The door suddenly gets opened and Olo gets in, her eyes widen and she quickly screams while tightly closing her eyes and when I try to get up, Nkosi pins me down again.

Nkosi: "Hamba wena lana! Uvale is'capha! Uyangiphazamisa! (Get out of here! Close the door! You're disturbing me!)" He growls while thrusting in more fast, cursing. The poor baby runs out leaving the door open. "You're so hot Baby!" My body is enjoying what Nkosi is doing but my mind! It's not here, I'm busy thinking about Olo and what his father thinks as it's been long since I have been here.

Nkosi parts my legs and oh my!

Me:"Uhmhm!" I moan biting my lips from moaning loud, I roll my eyes to the back

Nkosiyomuzi.

"Nkosi! Quickly finish up!" Thando yells at me as I'm wiping us.

Me:"I'm done Baby." I say and walk back to the bathroom and throw the towel then walk back.

Thando:"What were you seriously thinking Nkosi! Of having sex in front of your daughter! She's probably traumatized! Oh my god! How will I even look at her!" She's busy yelling at me as if she wasn't enjoying her self. I buckle my belt as I watch her pulling her dress down. "The way you love going in too deep Nkosiyomuzi! You'll end up

being the cause of pregnancy complications!
I'm telling you!"

Me:"Baby,what are you shouting me for? Why are you yelling?" She looks at me with anger all over her face.

Thando:"Fuck you!" She shouts and walks away, rushing to the door. "You better follow me Nkosiyomuzi! And stop starrng my butt! Your father is calling you!"

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

74

Nkosiyomuzi.

I walk behind her, her dress is very tight around her butt and hips, they are too huge on that dress so much that I couldn't help but bend her down. Damn! I missed a lot on thick women by running after slim women. I hold her waist and she slaps my hands. "Leave me alone! You better have an explanation to your father on why we stayed for long in your house." She says after removing my hands. I sigh and hold hers making her to stop walking. I stand in front of her and she looks at me, pretty annoyed.

Me:"I love you in this dress, we can still go back to our house and finish what we started." She goes me a death stare and I laugh at her, she pushes me aside and rushes me the main house. "I'm joking Baby, although you look irresistible." We get inside

the house and my parents descend down the staircase.

Baba:"Yhini le beniyenza phambi kwengane yami Nkosi? (What were you doing in front of my child?)" I look at Thando who sneaks in close to me and holds my hand, looking down. Oh, so she wants to get close to me now.

Ma:" What did you say to her Nkosiyomuzi! Because she doesn't want me to get in her bedroom right now!" She asks shouting at me.

Me:"Hawu Ma! She saw elderly stuff, that's all. Let me go and talk to her."

Baba:"Nenza amanyala phambi kwengane yami Nkosiyomuzi!?(You're having sex in front of my child!?)" He asks horrified if I can say.

Me: "I didn't know that she'd get in, or anyone for that matter Baba. She'll be

alright, I'll talk to her." I say and attempt to walk away but Thando holds me still.

Baba:"Hayi cha! Ucansi lwenu belushisa bhe! De uMakoti angafuni ahlukana nawe!(Your sex was on fire! To make my daughter in law to not want to leave you!)" I laugh and look at Thando, she's so embarrassed, she's even red! Well pink. I kiss her forehead and walk away to Olo's room but I stop at Lilly's bedroom as I hear giggles from it.

"No Babe, stop it okay!" She says flirty, who's she talking to? "Okay, I love you too." Love? Is she seeing someone else? "I guess I'll see you in the afternoon and Lizwi, I want something nice." Lizwi? As is Thando's brother!? This girl is seriously shitting on me. I barge in her bedroom and she startles,

dropping her phone on the bed. "Bhuti?" She asks shocked and scared.

Me: "Who was on the phone? Who were you talking to?"

Lilitha: "It's no one Bhuti." She replies, nervously scared.

Me: "So I'm hearing my things?"

Usuyathandana Lilitha!? " I ask raising my voice.

Lilitha: "Cha Bhuti!"

Me: "Pho wenzani! Huh? If you're not dating, what are you doing?" I asks as I already have a belt in my hand.

Lilitha: "Bhuti ngiyacolisa!" She yells as she sees me walking towards her. I hit her thighs unexpectedly and she screams. "Bhuti

ngiyacolisa! Baba! Baba!"

Me:"Hu Baba lo okutshele ukuthi qoma amanye amadoda?(Is it my father who said you should date men?)"

Lilitha: "Cha Bhuti!" She replies running away and I follow her.

Me:"Woza la Lilitha!" I shout running after her, downstairs.

Lilitha: "Baba! Baba! Baba!" She cries as I hit her again on her hips. Our parents come out of the kitchen with Thando and she quickly hides after our father.

Baba: "Nkosiyomuzi why are you hitting my child?!"

Me:"Isn't she the one that thinks she's now old enough to date men?! Woza la wena!" I

reply breathing heavily walking towards her.

Lilitha: "Mana!" She cries for my mother, running to her.

Me:"Nzokushaya! Uze uphinde! (I'll hit you! Should you repeat!)" I yell to her, pointing her with a belt.

Natasha.

I watch as Nkosi is running down the stairs with a belt in his hand, running after Lilitha who's crying for her father. He's breathing fire, he's angry, very angry.

Nkosi:"Awunamahloni! Ubusy uthi "I love you, I love you" kwenye indoda! Emagcekeni wakwa Mkhize! Emzini kaBaba! Awunanhlonipho Lilitha?(You're not ashamed! On another man! In Mkhize homestead! In my father's household! Aren't you ashamed?)" He asks

walking towards her whilst the poor Lilitha holds on to her mother tight. Both his parents are watching him, silent.

Lilitha: "Ngiyacolisa Bhuti." She apologizes, sadly, still crying.

Baba: "Lilitha, usuqomile? (Are you dating?)" Her father asks, sternly and hard, Lilitha looks down and wipes her tears.

Lilitha: "Ngiyacolisa Baba."

Baba: "Ngibuze umbuzo, ngilindele impendulo. (I asked a question, I'm expecting an answer.)" He says hard. I don't wish to be Lilitha right now, I know how this feels but my brothers didn't hit me.

Nkosi: "Phendula umbuzo ka Baba wena! S'lima ndini! (Answer my father's question! You fool!)" He shouts walking towards her as

he hits her again on her thighs.

Lilitha: "Ma!" She screams trying to protect herself with her mother.

Ma: "Nkosi yomuzi, stop."

Nkosi: "Phendula wena!" Lilitha looks at her father and nods. "Yhini! Kubuhlungu ikhanda? Awukwazi ukhuluma? Kodwa ububusy ukhuluma nesoka lakho! (What? Is your head hurting? You can't talk? Whilst you were busy talking with your boyfriend!)" I can't really describe Nkosi's anger, I fail.

Baba: "Where does this boy stay?"

Lilitha: "Here in KZN, he's staying with his parents."

Baba: "Uyakwazi kubo? Wakhe wamvakashela? (Do you know his home? Have

you visited him?)"

Lilitha: "Cha Baba."

Nkosi: "Go and take your gadgets, I'm keeping them."

Lilitha: "Ha Bhuti!" She exclaims horrified.

Nkosi: "Uyala?(You're disobeying me?)"

Lilitha: "Cha Bhuti." She says and runs upstairs. Wow! Her brothers and sisters are standing in the staircase, watching the drama.

Nkosi: "Zenikhe nani niqome Lelethu! Ngiyokubulala wena Lolwethu! (Should you date Lelethu! I'll kill you Lolwethu!)" He warns them and Lelethu gasps.

Lelethu: "But Bhuti mina ngingenaphi? (Where do I fit?)"

Nkosi: "Ngiyanikhuza!(I'm warning you!)"
They nod and walk away, Lilitha comes and give Nkosi her gadgets, scared. Nkosi looks at them and looks back at her. "Go and put them in your father's office." Lilitha looks at her father, who nods and she walks away.

Ma:"Why are you hitting my children Nkosiyomuzi? Did I give birth to them so that you could hit them?" Nkosi looks at her mother angrily.

Baba: "Ungambheki njalo uMa wakho. (Don't look at your mother like that.)" He warns and Nkosi clicks his tongue and walks away.

"Nkosiyomuzi!" He walks to the door, avoiding his father. "NKOSIYOMUZI!" His father growls, causing me to startle. Nkosi turns back and looks at his father. "Xolisa ku Ma

wakho.(Apologize to your mother.)" He says, sternly. Nkosi looks at them and walks away. "NKOSIYOMUZI!" He growls again, loudly but he doesn't listen, he just continues. I look at his father who's now red, with anger.

Me:"Lathi!" I don't know why I'm calling him, I just blurted out his name, unaware. He turns and looks at me, I swallow as his state feels intense. "Colisa Ku Ma Lathi." I say softly, but audible enough for him to hear. He looks at me for a long time before he breaks the stare and looks at her mother, who's shocked.

Nkosi: "Ngiyaxolisa." He says meaningful at least then walks away, leaving an uncomfortable silence in the house. Soon, we hear a car driving out. I walk to the kitchen

to finish washing the dishes. Ma walks in.

Me:"I'm sorry Ma." I apologize, on Nkosi's behalf.

Ma:"No, don't worry. He tends to be too overprotective over his siblings, especially his sisters. It's just that he shocked me today, I guess it's because I was trying to defend Lilitha who in his eyes have wronged."
"

Me:"Why didn't Baba do anything to Lilitha, instead of Nkosi taking over his duty?"

Ma:"As I have said dear, Nkosi is like that. His father does nothing because it's Nkosi who always disciplines his siblings, it's always been like that. He's not just playing a brother role in their lives, but also he plays a fatherly role. Even his father is proud of him

because he says that, even if he would die, he would die knowing that his children are safe, they have a father in their lives who will still love them and protect them."

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

75

Natasha.

Me:"But Ma, don't you think that you're giving Nkosi too much credit? I mean, my brothers are also protective when it comes to us but no like Nkosi. They have never laid

their hands on us, not even my father. They just shout at us and punish us, that's all."

Ma:"No, we're not giving him too much credit. He doesn't know that his father is proud of also being a father to them and he doesn't beat them up more often. I think this is the second time to Lilitha, he once hit her because of dating in high school. Lelethu, well she's hardly beaten, her and Olo."

Me:"But Ma, why doesn't he allow them to date? I mean Lilitha is 29 or 30 years now, older than me but she doesn't date. Why?"

"Because there's abuse out there." Nkosi replies and i quickly turn to him, when did he get here? "There is rape. People get raped and get beaten by their boyfriends, people get raped by their male friends, people get

raped in parties! That's why I'm too strict when it comes to my sisters, that is why I don't allow them to date and party! You would never know what looks like a good man would do behind closed doors, I don't want any of my sisters to be victims of abuse, to hide behind make up, to be scared to come out and say that they are being abused.

There is human trafficking out side! There is kidnapping! There is everything that is evil happening out there! I don't want that to my sisters. I don't want them to be victims!

Women get killed out there, by their boyfriends and I don't want to lose my sisters like that. That's why I am protecting my sisters." He finishes up, with his siblings now standing behind him, all of them. "I'm here to take you, we're going to town, get

ready." He says lastly and walks out. Wow, what a speech. I wipe my hands and put the dishes in their places.

Ma:"Don't worry Dear, I'll finish up and the catering company and event company will be here in any minute. I'll be fine without you and I don't want you to work too hard." She says brushing my back. I nod and walk out after kissing Olo's cheek, she's so tall thou. I walk to the car and I find Nkosi already there. I get in and just as I'm about to strap the safety belt he stops me.

Nkosi:"Won't it be too tight for the baby?" I shake my head and strap it.

Me:"It's not tight, and besides, I'm not showing. I'll show maybe in the next 3 weeks when I'm on the third month."

Nkosi:"Okay." He says and holds my hand, while he drives away. "What are we going to buy for Olo?"

Me:"Well, I don't know. Maybe, buy a matriculant dress? And a new cellphone? Yeah."

Nkosi:"And a Teddy bear, she loves them. Her bed is full of small teddy bears."

Me:"Really? Then we should buy her the human sized Teddy bear, like the one you brought for me when I was hospital and a make up kit then shoes."

Nkosi:"Is the teddy bear still there? I mean, I don't know what your parents did on your hospital presents."

Me:"Oh well, they're at home. When I got there after coming from the villages, I found

my bedroom full of balloons, flowers and your teddy bear and also chocolates! It was really pink, the room was full of pink."

Nkosi:"I still don't understand on why you still love pink at this age. I mean even on our first date, you wore a pink skirt and vest." I laugh and look at him. He glances at the review mirror.

Me:"It wasn't pink pink, it was a baby pink and dusty pink Nkosi."

Nkosi: "Well it's pink. Whether its dusty pink? Dirty pink? Baby pink or pink pink even thou I know it's not called pink pink, original pink or just pink only."

Me:"Whatever! But it wasn't pink! The strong pink geez."

Nkosi:"Don't be Noluntu on me. Do you still

remember Noluntu from the old Generations? Mawande's daughter? She would say 'geez Mama!' And you sound like you'll be her.

Me:"OMG! I still remember her! I even had a crush on MJ! Mawande's son and Senzo! Oh I loved those two!"

Nkosi: "You're supposed to have a crush only on me, not those stupid fools and let's stop chatting about them."

Me:"Are you really jealous on actors? People I'd never see."

Nkosi:"Well you'd see MJ, he's in the music industry, I'm not ready for you to leave me for a man who's in your age." I laugh at how jealous and serious he is while looking at him, he glance again in the mirror.

Me:"Oh I almost forgot that you're too old

for me."

Nkosi: "Too old? Don't say that to me! I'll show you that I'm not old."

Me:" We have a very huge gap between us. 8 year gap isn't a joke."

Nkosi:"Now that you're counting years, you really make me-" He stops talking halfway and I look at him, he's staring at the review mirror. I look behind us and I see a black small car, driving behind us. It doesn't have a registration number. I look back at Nkosi who's hand is beneath his seat, looking like he's looking for something. He comes out with a box, he puts it between his thighs and glances forward on the road before he open it, revealing two guns. Oh my god!

Me:"Nkosi! What are you doing with a gun!" I

hold my mouth, as if it will drop. He takes out his phone and dials a number.

Nkosi: "Organise security for my family." He orders before dropping it and dumping it on the dashboard then takes out the gun, inserting bullets in something that he took out from the gun. It's making so much noise as he's doing this fast. He holds the steering wheel, continuing to drive. "Lye down your seat and turn to look at me." He commands and I ask no questions, I lye it down, we're now in the main road, well it's been a while now. He takes out another gun and loads bullets in it before tucking it behind his waist, while the other one is in his hands. "We're arriving in the mall now, take the jacket that's in the back." I take it and he withdraws something underneath my seat,

it's a vest. "Wear it then wear the jacket." I sit up and he's in the parking lot , looking for a space. I wear them then he parks before tucking the gun on his waist, again. He takes his phone on the dashboard then opens his door. We're driving with his black tinted windows Range Rover Vogue.

We're now walking hand in hand, inside the mall with shopping bags which belong to Olo in our hands.

Me: "Baby I forgot to give Lilitha my apartment keys, the one in Scottburgh. I think we should have a little party for Olo."

Nkosi: "Will that party include alcohol?" He asks looking down at me.

Me:"What's a party without alcohol Nkosi?"

Nkosi: "Well you won't drink it. Forget about

that. Aren't you hungry?"

Me: "I am. Let's go to Rocco Mamas." We walk there while conversing then place our order. "I'm honestly tired Nkosi, and we haven't even brought Olo's teddy bear!"

Nkosi: "Maybe we should leave it, I mean she didn't know that we would get her a teddy bear so." He trails off with a shrug and looks at the door, our order arrives and we eat.

"Are you full? Here is mine. I'm still full anyway." He asks as I'm watching him eating, I'm already done eating. I take his food and eat then I down it all with my juice.

Me: "Woo! I'm so full!" I say and burp. "Ops, sorry. This dress is now tight in my tummy."

Nkosi: "Let's go and buy you another dress, a flowing one." We stand up and go to a

boutique then buy the dress. "Let's go and wear it in the fitting room." We walk together and I change, still wearing the best that Nkosi insists on. We walk out to the parking lot, it's so full in here, I think it's because it's the month end.

Me: "Do you think by the next two months I would have gained weight?" He looks at me, up and down then smiles.

Nkosi: "But you're already thick with the weight gain."

Me: "Well then I should gym with you."

Nkosi: "Really? Oh I'll fuck you soo good when you're bending down, doing warm ups. I already have an idea. We should gym naked." He says with a stupid grin on his face. We both laugh and load the bags in the car then

get in. "I already think that we should get naked right now. In our honeymoon, we'll walk around the house, naked all day so that I'd have easy access to you anytime!"

Me: "You're probably crazy! "

Nkosi: "Crazy in love I know, when are you getting horny? I heard that pregnant women demand lots of sex but you don't, why?"

Me: "Maybe that hormone is on you since you're already horny, well always horny. I mean, maybe it sensed your sexual appetite. "

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

76

Natasha.

Nkosi: "Organize security merchandise for me. I'll come and fetch it." He orders to his call receiver and hangs up. The gate opens and a guy in suits walks to Nkosi's door.

"Please step out Sir, will go and park it." The guy says.

Nkosi: "Let's go Baby, it's for security purposes." We step out and the guy drives the car away to where god knows. We walk to the main house hand in hand. "BAFO!" Nkosi shouts, Yho! What a loud deep voice. His brothers all come downstairs to him. "Have to go Baby, I'll be back before the party okay." I and his mother comes to us.

Ma: "Why are you calling your brothers? And what's with the security Nkosiyomuzi?"

Nkosi: "Not now Ma, I'll explain later, I have to go. Please look after my wife, I see the planners are already here working so I know there's nothing that will tire her. Please be careful." He warns and kisses his mother's head with his big strong arms around her small body. He comes to me and hugs me tight. "I love you and also be careful." He kisses my forehead and lets go then turns to his father who's now also standing with us. "Is the jet ready?"

Baba: "Yes it is. Take care." He says tapping Nkosi's shoulder. He walks out with his brothers following him, what's going on? I walk out following them and Nkosi throws his

keys to Lwandile then walks to our house, I follow him. We bump into each other at the end of the staircase.

Me:"Nkosi where are you going? What's going on?" I ask worried.

Nkosi:"To Jo'burg, I'll be back before you know it. Lock the house on your way out after making sure that every window is closed." He seals his words with a peck then he runs out.

Nkosiyomuzi.

Lwandile: "Bhuti where are we going?"

Me:"Andile drive to the airport." I say and get in the front before keeping my self busy with the laptop. Before I know it, we're in the airport. That's why I asked Andile to drive because I know he drives faster and careful than my brothers, I guess this thing

of him of fantasizing owning a club makes him want everything perfect should he spin a car. We get off and walk to the jet the buckle up before it takes off.

Lungelo:"Bro, you can't take us at home and give us silent treatment all the way here. Why are we here? Where are we going?"

Me:"To the quarters, I'm being followed now let me focus and keep your selves busy." They all keep quiet while I work.

"Boss! The King of all Kings! Nkalankatha!" Fix says the minute he sees us making everyone stand up.

Me:"You should all get used to keep on working when seeing me. I've told you this countless times." I say while walking towards the corridor that leads to the shooting range.

"Get the merchandise for me." I tell Fix and continue walking with my brothers wondering around.

Lungelo: "Dude, do you own this place?" I wish I could roll my eyes like Thando, I decide to not answer him. I open the door and Lwandile gasps.

Lwandile: "Oh shit!" I quickly turn back and hold his hand, leading him in. I know that he can run away. There's nothing he hates more than gyming and shooting or let me say he's scared of guns. Fix gets in with a briefcase then closes the doors and locks them.

Luyanda: "Bro, where's the signal here?"

Me: "You won't find it. We have less than 2 hours to wrap things up. Give me the case." I take it and put it on the table and open it. I

take out all the guns and give them. "Here, you'll use them. Firstly where are your guns right now?"

Lungelo: "You can't honestly think that we'd go around with guns."

Me: "Well that's what will happen. Go around with this gun while the old one stay under your car seat, loaded! This device is for checking plantings. You touch your car with it in your hand, if it beeps, don't get in the car. I repeat, don't get in the car. Siyezwana Lwandile?" I ask him because I know that he loves cars.

Lwandile: "Yebo Bhuti."

Me: "Good. Lift up your shirts." I say taking out the syringes.

Lungelo: "What the fuck is that for?"

Me:"Lungelo, I don't have time to explain everything to you okay? Give me your back."
He turns back and I inject him, he grunts.

Lungelo: "Fuck! When did I last get injected?" I inject the rest then check the time.

Me:"We have half an hour. Fix where's the stuff for my wife?"

Fix:"Here." He says taking a jewelry box out of his pocket. "I figured out that I should get a ring that's similar to her engagement ring and a simple necklace so that it can suit any outfit."

Me:"Good. Any for my sisters?"

Fix: "Here."

Me:"Get Smart to deliver them to Thando's

apartment in Scottburgh with a make up artist." I take out the black overalls with bullet vests then throw them to them. "Wear this so that we can start working." I set a timer for 13 minutes. "By 13 minutes, 100 push ups should be done. Start." I say already on the ground, getting ready.

Lwandile: "100 push ups Bro? Like really? I didn't even have time to eat.

Me:" Now Lwandile! Stop complaining! We still have to do 50 sit ups in 7 minutes, do 30 weights in 5 minutes! Then we'll start shooting! Start!" After a long time with struggling Lwandile we get done with warming up.

"I'm never doing this again." Lwandile complains as we drive to the airport. He has

been complaining all along.

Me: "If your shooting is on point, then you won't but if it's like this. You'll still go back there." I still can't believe that he cried when I said that he must practise shooting on me. He was hell bent that he won't and he's scared that he'll harm me and that's the reason that I decided to stop the training since his mind wasn't in the right place.

Luyanda: "Did you really have to cry thou?"

Lwandile: "Just leave me alone and it's not like I cried out loud." He replies and plugs in his headphones.

Natasha.

I did everything Nkosi ordered me to do even thou I didn't know why but I still did it.

So now, I'm offering a hand to help to the decors and I'm helping. They're very friendly and neat.

Me:"So where can I get hold of you? I really love how you're turning this garden into." I ask Cindy, the manager.

Sindy:"Well I'll give you our business card before we leave. What do you want us to help you with?"

Me:"Well I need your help with decorating my wedding and being our caters so?" I asks with a small smile and a shrug.

Sindy:"We would be very thrilled to decorate your wedding Mrs Mkhize. We would really be. I'll also speak to the catering team and you'll be surprised. I even have an idea of how your wedding will look like and it's

colour."

Me:"I've already suggested the colours but if you think you can make the best then do it, and please do print the invites for me. I haven't done anything for the wedding plans but the wedding is in the next two weeks."

Sindy:"Well worry not, I'll tackle everything for you. Do you have a dress?"

Me:"No."

Sindy:"I suggest that you search on Pinterest the wedding you desire and you'll get it. Your husband is also connected, he might also get it for you. Oh speaking of the devil." I turn back and I see him walking towards me.

Nkosi:"Thando what are you busy doing here whilst I told you to not work?"

Me:"I could just sit there and do nothing Nkosi." He sighs and takes my hand then we walk to the direction of our house.

Nkosi:"Baby I told you to be careful. Meaning that I told you to relax your self and to be careful to not be busy with stuff that could make you fall Thando!" He says the last part raising his voice. "I don't want anything happening to my child Thando and I also do not want anything happening to You! Just stop being stubborn for once man!" And then, why is he shouting at me? I stare at him and keep quiet. He sighs and pulls me to him. "I'm sorry Baby, I'm sorry." I unlock the house and walk to our bedroom and sit on the bed. He walks in after few minutes and takes the ottoman and takes a seat in front of me. He holds my hands and kisses them then takes

out a jewellery box from his pocket then opens it. I'm met by mesmerizing jewelry. He takes out a simple yet elegant ring then slips it in my ring finger and it fits perfectly. "I don't ever want you to remove this ring okay? No matter what, just don't okay?"

Me:"Okay."

Nkosi:"You promise?"

Me:"Yes, I do." He takes out another beautiful simple necklace, I could sleep with it around my neck.

Nkosi:"You'll also not take this out okay? Even if you shower or bath nor swim, it should always be around your neck. I love you." He kisses my fingers then sits on the bed. "Let's lye down." We lay down and he puts his head on my breasts then brushes my

tummy. It's the first time he lays on me while brushing my tummy. "Have you thought about our son's name?"

Me: "Nope, I'll name him after birth."

Nkosi: "So you want to first experience labour pain? In order to name him." I nod. "How do you feel about being pregnant? I'm sorry for telling you how to feel and not asking you." He says then looks at me, straight into my eyes. "You have beautiful eyes." I blush and he pecks my lips.

Me: "I'm happy. I'm happy that I get to experience how being pregnant feels like. I'm grateful that I also get to experience morning sickness and that slight movement I felt. I can't believe that I'm now 3 months and the baby is showing. I love this feeling

that I'm feeling inside. Thank you for making me experience and feel how it feels to be pregnant. Thank you for making me a wife, to you." I say and also look deep into his black shiny eyes.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter

77

Natasha

The birthday party is happening and everything is going well as planned. The catering company is done with food and the

decoration is done and dusted. The presents are wrapped up and ready! Now we are all going to Scottsburg for a little party and make up, we all want to look beautiful. We buckle up in the car and the driver drives off.

Lilitha:"You know I didn't think that Nkosi would allows us to party. All thanks to you Madam." I giggle and look at her in the review mirror.

Me:"There's nothing he could have done, it's a birthday party and we want to look beautiful." I reply and take my cellphone, trying to reach for him but it goes straight to voicemail. I try it until I hear it speaking in the car.

Nkosi:"Turn the car and drive to my house in

Durban! Drop the plan of going to Scott." He commands and I quickly shout for him.

Me:"Nkosiyomuzi answer your phone!"

Nkosi:"I'm sorry but I can't. I'm busy." And the line drops dead, why is he changing the venue now? Or is it because my house is far. I try calling him again but it goes straight to voicemail, I just don't understand why he doesn't answer his phone. We drive chatting and laughing until we get to Nkosi's house and find the make-up artist there. We change and get ready and beautiful. We drive back and there are few cars, maybe family friends. We walk to the house and Nkosi walks towards me with his family following him.

At Mkhize Homestead.

He stares at Thando, looking at her yellow thick legs, fuck! He gets an erection immediately.

Nkosi: "You dont know how much I missed you." He states giving her a bone crushing hug and bringing her close to him by her waist, feeling his bulge against her stomach.

Thando:"You can't have an erection Nkosi in front of people."

Nkosi:"You look very beautiful in this dress Thando, especially your thighs. I love them." Thando giggles and pulls out of the hug and looks up at Nkosi.

Thando:"Thanks." Just as she is about to walk away, a car drives in and stops, it's her family. She grins and walks towards it and her family gets off and meets her halfway.

"Daddy!" She squeals in happiness and throws herself in his father's arms, hugging him tight. Her father laughs, hugging her back.

Nkosenye:"It's funny how you are declaring how much you've missed me yet you don't even call us."

Thando:"I'm sorry Daddy." He nods before saying it's fine. They pull out and Zulu family greets the Mkhize's. Nkosi walks to Lizwilenkosi and throws a punch on his face. Lizwi curses and looks at Nkosi who's about to hit him again but stops as Lizwilezulu stands in front of him.

Zulu:"Why are you hitting my brother?" He asks starring at Nkosi. Nkosi being taller than him and old doesn't intimidate him at all, in fact, he challenges him as he's also the

eldest in his siblings. Thando quickly intervenes and pulls Nkosi away who doesn't more.

Thando: "Nkosi help me with the presents."
She says hoping that Nkosi listens to her.

Nkosi: Looking at Lizwilezulu. "Tell your brother to back off, he must play far away from my sister." He walks to the car and takes out the presents as Thando asked for help. Uthandiwe and Luyanda look at each other, asking themselves how will their family react if they find out that they're in a relationship. Nkosi's parents greet Thando's family and walk to the tent prepared in the garden. Nkosi's siblings and Thando's help each other with the presents and walk to the tent. Nkosi helps Thando

with the presents as he doesn't want her to bend down. "Let's go and take our presents and put them here." He says taking Thando's hand, leading the way to their house. He sits on the bed and pulls Thando by her waist to him. "I need you." He states looking at Thando with weak eyes.

Thando: "What do you need in me?" She asks worriedly looking at Nkosi's sudden weak eyes. These eyes were burning with anger few minutes ago , now they're weak. How?

Nkosi: "Please hold me." Thando doesn't waste more time. She wraps her arms around Nkosi and puts his head on her chest then brushes his head. Nkosi sighs shakily and holds on to Thando's waist tight. They stay in that position for a while until Nkosi controls

his emotions. "We can leave." Thando looks at Nkosi's eyes.

Thando: "Are you sure you're fine now." He nods before replying verbally that he's fine. They take the presents and walk to the tent, finding everyone there. Nkosi's friends, Thando's friends and family friends. They mingle firstly before the program director starts with the party. The program starts with prayer and Ndoniyamanzi, Thando's mother prays, a welcoming by Nobuhle, Nkosi's mother and speeches and advices are given by family friends, Mr Ngema as Kumkani's friend and Mr Zulu as a family member and then lastly presents before they eat the main course. Nandipha, Nkosi's ex girlfriend who's friends with Lilitha will appear at the tent entrance and Lilitha will

be the first to jump up and greet her then usher her to the family table. The stretch tent is decorated very beautifully, with green, white and gold. There is only one table, a very long big table that accommodates the whole family and friends then a table with Lolwethu and his father, with a huge cake in front of them. Presents are by at the corner, lined up there. Nkosi's stares at Nandipha, asking his self as to what is she doing here after he told her to stay away from his family and Jo'burg if she knows what's good for her. They dine in the table without friction, there's laughter everywhere and everyone is happy. There is a closing of the party and everyone retires to their houses, even Nandipha without causing problems. Thando cleans up the table and Lungelo

offers to help her after a long time of staring at her thighs when she was sitting down. They walk to the kitchen chatting with Lungelo a bit behind her, staring at her butt. He has a thing for thick women, he loves them, more especially their butt, hips and thighs which are thick. He's the first and last to like thick women except for Luyanda who doesn't have types and Lwandile. Well Lwandile doesn't care about women, he's all about cars, music and clubs for fun. Luyanda is after women's hearts and personalities, not their physique. To him, that is just a bonus if they're well built, more especially the thick ones.

Lungelo: "You know, you're my brothers wife yet we never chat. You're always busy and focus to my sisters only." Thando smiles

before answering.

Thando: "I'm sorry, it's just that you and your brothers always chat to each other so.."
" She trails off with a shrug. Lungelo chuckles and nods.

Lungelo: "I see." He puts the dishes on the sink and Thando also puts hers next to it and prepares to wash them. Thando bend down and puts the plates in the dishwasher while Lungelo is a little bit behind her. She doesn't mind him, she just gets busy until he takes a glass and stands behind her, close enough to make Thando feel his bulge in her butt while pouring water tap on his glass. Thando tenses and immediately feels uncomfortable, she moves to the side but stop when she realises that she is grinding on him. She closes her

eyes tightly, praying for Lungelo to move away from her. Nkosi enters with plates on his hands and finds them in that position, he can tell that Lungelo is pressed behind Thando as her hips are huge, who's heart is beating fastly as if it will stop. Nkosi puts the plates on the kitchen island, still staring at them. Causing Thando to jump up a little and Lungelo to swiftly move to side, hiding his hard on and walk upstairs. Nkosi asks Thando as to what is going on but doesn't reply, she doesn't want the brothers fighting over her. She turns and look at Nkosi and relief will wash away the panic that was in her eyes. He looks at Thando, noticing her tensed body and the bit nervousness. He looks up at the staircase and back at her, with a straight face, not giving any emotion.

She turns her back against him and wash the glasses and Nkosi holds her from behind, and notice that her body is truly tense. She relaxes and puts her head on his chest, holding on to the sink tight. She wonders as to what would have happened if Nkosi didn't get in the kitchen. He holds her tightly and kisses her head and whispers that it's fine. He waits for Thando to relax back to normal and she does. She turns around and hugs Nkosi very tight. She no longer feels safe around Nkosi's brother's anymore.

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com

Chapter 78

At The Mkhize Homestead

He kisses Thando slowly and passionately when he sees that she is fine and she responds. He picks her up and pins her against the refrigerator, kissing her deeply. He moves her dress up and finds Thando without an underwear. He curses and takes out his manhood on the chino pants he's wearing and slowly pushes in with struggle. When he's finally in, he whimpers lowly and curses again.

Thando: "Nkosi we shouldn't be doing this here." She states pulling away from the kiss.

Nkosi: "I'll be quick." He says already thrusting in and out and claims her lips again. She let's him be and she cums. He takes her

from behind, pressed against the sink with her holding onto it for dear life. "Ohhw fuck!" He cries when he feels like he's going to cum. "Ow shit! Thando." He exclaims lowly, crying then he bites Thando's shoulder as she grips tightly on his manhood. They both cum and Thando's legs become weak instantly, almost falling down on the floor but Nkosi catches her before she reaches the ground and they both calm down from their orgasm, holding onto each other for a while. "You're okay?" She nods and moves away from him. Cum trails down her legs and Nkosi takes a handkerchief on his pocket and wipes her before wiping his self.

Thando:"Yes, I'm fine. I'm okay." He nods and dresses up before kissing her again.

Nkosi: "I love you." He claims and she blushes.

Thando: "Me too." Nkosi tilts his head to the side and stares at her. She laughs blushing before pecking his lips. "I love you too." He smiles and walks upstairs to Lungelo's room and finds him on his bed, with his phone in his hands. He looks at him angrily, fuming with anger. He rushes to him and pushes him on the bed, making him lie on it with his back before throwing punches on his face. As much as Lungelo also attends gym but he can't overpower Nkosi. He tries with his all to push him away but Nkosi's weight on his stomach and the punches he throws across his face defeats him.

Nkosi: "What do you want in my wife huh?! Why were you watching us making love huh?"

What were you doing to her?! What are you hoping to achieve Lungelo!?" He shouts at him, talking fast as if he might bite his tongue.

"What were you doing with my wife Lungelo!?" He asks him shouting. Lungelo stammers earning a punch on his eye making him growl loud and curse.

Thando hears the shouting and groans coming from upstairs, she decides to walk up, to find what's going on. She walks in Lungelo's room and the sight before her is not appeasing.

"Nkosiyoumuzi!" She screams and runs to Nkosi trying to remove him but he doesn't move, instead he keeps on punching Lungelo's bloody face. She runs out of the room to the tent and calls Nkosi's father. "Baba, Nkosi is beating Lungelo to death." He quickly gets up and they hurry to the house. Kumkani pushes

Nkosi away from Lungelo and succeeds.

Kumkani:"Muzi what are you doing?! Are you trying to kill your brother?!" He shouts, also breathing heavily.

Nkosi:"I'll kill him if he touches my wife Babar . I'll not care whether he is my brother or not, I'll kill him." Thando rushes to the bathroom and takes out a medical kit for Lungelo. "Put that bag down Milisuthando! You'll not clean that bastard up!" He roars at Thando who quickly puts it down and looks at Lungelo pitiful. She thought that Nkosi didn't see him, he thought that he didn't know what Lungelo did and tried to do.

Kumkani:"Nkosiyomuzi. Sit down and tell me what is going on. Why are you beating your brother?" He asks trying to remain calm.

Nkosi looks at Lungelo who has a busted bleeding lips and mouth, a busted already purple eye meaning he bled internal.

Nkosi: "Your son tried to get into my woman's skirt." He says getting up from the bed.

"Thando let's go. We are leaving." He says already walking to the door.

Kumkani: "Where are you going?" He turns and looks at his father.

Nkosi: "To Jo'burg. Tonight." Thando looks at him shocked and Nkosi's mother shouts for Kumkani downstairs until she reaches Lungelo's room. She gets in and looks around. She opens her eyes widely in shock when they land on Lungelo.

Nobuhle: "Lulu!" She exclaims and runs to him, holds his face tenderly. "What happened to

you Lulu?" She asks worriedly. Thando gives her the medical kit and she cleans him up.

Kumkani: "He tried to get into.." He clears his throat and looks at Nkosi who clicks his tongue walking away. Nobuhle looks at him confused. "He seduced Thando." Nobuhle turns to look at Lungelo disappointedly.

Lungelo: "I'm sorry Ma. It was just lust."

Nobuhle: "Lust Lungelo! Lust? Lust over your brother's wife? What were you hoping to achieve huh? You know how much Nkosiyomuzi loves his wife so tell me. And you're apologising to a wrong person Lungelo!" He looks down embarrassed. "Now what do you think will happened to your brotherhood huh?"

Lungelo: "I'm sorry."

"Let's leave Milisuthando"- Nkosi voices out and everyone looks at him. He has bags on his hands, Thando looks at him confused. "We're leaving, I already told you."

Nobuhle: "Dear please stay for the night, you can't fly this late. Please Elethu. You'll leave in the morning."

Nkosi: "Let's leave Milisuthando." He says sternly and she walks to him quietly. He holds her hands and walks out.

Thando:"Nkosi." She calls out for him softly and calmly. They stop and he looks at her.

"May we leave in the morning? I can't fly, not when I'm this tired. Ngiyakucela Sithandwa sami." She pleads softly and Nkosi nods.

Nkosi: "It's fine. Let me put these in the car first."

Outside the stretch

Luyanda: "Hey." He says, greeting her with a kiss. They both pull out and smile at each other. "How are you?"

Uthandiwe: "Hey. I'm fine and how are you?"

Luyanda: "I'm good. I missed you."

Uthandiwe: "I missed you too." She says shyly. She's very shy when she's with Luyanda, she's not the Uthandiwe everyone knows, the bubbly loud Tinashe. Luyanda looks at her and chuckles.

Luyanda: "What did you call me for here then?" She looks down all of a sudden and nervous.

Uthandiwe: She breaths out loudly and heavily. "I'm pregnant Luyanda. I'm 4 months

pregnant." His eyes go wide and looks at her stomach. She's wearing a long flowing dress, it's mustard. He stares at her stomach and puts his hands over his head.

Luyanda: "Holy shit!" He turns around and looks back at her tummy, he wipes his face with his hands and leaves them on his lips, rolled up in a fist.

**Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com**

Chapter 79

At The Mkhize Homestead

Luyanda: "You're serious?" Uthandiwe nods, still not getting any emotion from him.

"You're four months pregnant?" He asks,

himself then chuckles until it turns to a full blown laughter and spins her around, making her giggle relieved. He stops and smooches her small lips then kiss her all over the face. "You're going to be spoiled rotten. You and my baby. Now I'll have someone to spend my money to." He says when he stops kissing her and looks deep in her eyes. "I love you Uthandiwe. Thank you. Thank you for making me a father and mothering our baby."

Utha: "You don't have to thank me Babe." They continue to kiss again. "It's a boy, I went to the doctor today. The photographs are in my bag." He grins and hovers over her tummy, calling his clan names and thanking his ancestors.

Outside, the garage...

Thando: "Nkosi, can I sleepover at my parents house?" Nkosi looks at her confused and not knowing what to say. "You'll fetch me there when it's time to leave."

Nkosi: Keeps quiet for a moment then nods. "It's fine but we have to ask Baba for permission."

Thando: "Okay, let me go and ask." Nkosi is quick to answer.

Nkosi: "Cha! We'll go together there." He says already pulling her close to him and holding her hand. She nods and they walk inside the house. "Let's go and check to their bedroom." Thando's eyes widen and she quickly shakes her head.

Thando: "We can't go inside their room Nkosi. I can't, you'll go and I'll wait here."

Nkosi: "No." He replies immediately. "I won't leave you here alone. We'll go there together and knock then ask for them only. We'll not get inside if that's what you're scared of." He says already pulling her hand up the stairs. He knocks on the door. "Baba, Thando asks for a sleepover at her parents house." He says still knocking. The door opens and her father comes out, wearing a robe.

Kumkani: "Kulungile. Uhambe kahle Makoti futhi ngiyaxolisa ngesenzo sika Lungelo. Ngiyakwethembisa ukuthi lokhu akusoze kwaphinde kwenzeka. (It's alright. Go well and I apologise for Lungelo's deed. I promise that it will never happen again.)" Thando nods.

Thando: "Ngiyabonga Baba." Kumkani nods and

looks at Nkosi.

Nkosi: "Nisale kahle." He says and leads Thando downstairs. They walk to their house in silence.

Thando: "I should check if you didn't leave anything behind." She says walking on the doorstep.

Nkosi: "I took what I thought was important." He unlocks the door and they walk upstairs.

Thando: "That is so like you. To take what you think is important to you." Nkosi shrugs and sits on the bed of his bedroom and watches Thando as she looks around. They stay in silence until he remembers that he didn't ask how she is.

Nkosi: "Thando come here." She looks at him

confused and she walks to him. "Sit on my lap." She sits and looks at Nkosi who wraps his arms around her body and exhales. "Are you okay?"

Thando: "Yes I am."

Nkosi: "No Thando. Emotionally." She exhales deeply and shakes her head. "Tell me."

Thando: "I was scared. I was scared of him raping me whilst no is there to save me. It triggered everything that happened when I was kidnapped and almost got raped." Nkosi exhales sharply and shakily then they lie on the bed, holding her closely to him and tightly. He feels somehow conflicted with his emotions when he realizes that they never got to talk about the kidnapping, that they were both dealing with being away from each

other as Thando's parents took her away. "It scared me to death that I'll be a victim of rape while I escaped from being a victim. A victim of rape in a house that I'm supposed to feel safe, to feel free." She sniffs and Nkosi lays on his side and looks at Thando. He wipes her tears and kisses her lips short then looks at her.

Nkosi: "When I thought that we were over the kidnapping, that we forgot about it as we didn't talk about it, Lungelo triggers it back. I swear I'm going to ki-" He is quickly stopped by Thando.

Thando: "No you won't. You won't do that. You won't kill your brother for a woman. That's what I was scared of when I tried hiding this from you."

Nkosi: "No Thando! You're not just any woman! You're my wife Thando, my life! If I didn't get there in time you would have been raped and kept quiet about it! That's what I hate Thando! That you would have suffered in silence whilst I thought that everything is fine. You would have kept quiet. That's what I don't like. You keeping quiet and hiding it from me." Thando looks at him as he shouts.

Thando: "Don't shout at me." She says with tears blurring her vision. She abruptly stands up and takes her bag and runs out. Nkosi sighs when he realizes that he shouldn't have shouted at her, but he couldn't control it. He was meant to talk to her and console her but anger just got in the way. He is taken out of thoughts by a scream coming downstairs. He quickly runs to check what's happened,

screaming Thando's name. Just as he looks at the staircase, he sees Thando's bag flying up and her trying to catch balance.

Nkosi:"Thando!" He shouts her name as horror invaded his mind. Thando wraps her arms around her tummy, trying to protect her baby as she realizes that she's about to fall. Nkosi dives in front of her, grabbing her waist to him as he falls on his back at the staircase. He's about to roll over Thando when he puts his arm on the stair, trying to not roll over her. "Don't roll over Thando." He says panicking as he realizes that she's about to, he can't let anything happen to his son and her wife. He looks ahead when he sees a steel of the staircase, about to hit his head, he pulls it up but it still hits him, luckily on the back of his head. Thando lands

safely at the end of the staircase while Nkosi puts his throbbing head down on the floor, wrapping his arm around her waist not too tightly. He exhales, relieved with his eyes closed. "Are you okay?" Thando nods.

Thando: "I'm fine. We're fine. Are you?"

Nkosi: "I'll be." He says rolling Thando over safely and picking her up. He lays her on the couch and rolls her dress to her breasts and checks her tummy for bruises. "Are you sure you're not hurt?" He says when he doesn't find them and opens her legs,he's a bit relieved when he doesn't find blood between her legs,he dips his finger in her virgina.

Thando:"I'm sure." He touches her virginal walls and pulls it out then looks at it.

Nkosi:"You're not bleeding. We should take

you to the hospital thou."

Daily new African novels download here
www.Allnovelworld.com